THREE HUNDRED COPIES OF THIS EDITION HAVE BEEN PRINTED, OF WHICH THIS IS

NO. 66.
THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S

ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, KNT.

THE ORIGINAL QUARTO EDITION (1590) IN PHOTOGRAPHIC FACSIMILE, WITH A BIBLIOGRAPHICAL INTRODUCTION

EDITED

BY H. OSKAR SOMMER, PH.D.

LONDON

KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRUBNER AND CO., LTD.

1891
TO

Elizabeth Margaret, Lady Wllbanke

OF EARTHAM, CHICHESTER,

IN EARNEST APPRECIATION OF HER

MANY RARE QUALITIES.
PREFACE.

At Wilton, the seat of his brother-in-law, the Earl of Pembroke, in rural seclusion, Sir Philip Sidney conceived the plan of writing his "Arcadia." It is contrary to his wish that we now possess his work; he did not intend it for the world at large, having only designed it to express his tender affection for his sister, Mary, Countess of Pembroke. How modestly Sir Philip Sidney thought of his work is plainly shown in the dedicatory epistle to his sister: "Now it is done onlie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friends, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the father's sake it will be pardoned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinglie handled." The author's contemporaries and posterity have judged the "Arcadia" differently, for soon after its publication it was widely read—a fact which is sufficiently proved by the great number of editions it has passed through, and by the references to it by Shakespeare, Milton, Waller, Fuller, Cowper, and others. Even the unhappy King Charles I. is said to have adopted Pamela's prayer ["Arcadia," Book III.,
chap. vi., page 263] as his favourite, and it formed part of the collection which he handed to Archbishop Juxon at their parting on the scaffold. Milton in his "Iconoclastes," blames the king severely for "having stolen a prayer word for word from the mouth of a heathen woman praying to a heathen god."

After her brother's premature and lamented death in the battle of Zutphen, Lady Pembroke was advised that she would serve his memory better by disobeying his wish than by abandoning this noble work to oblivion. And, indeed, if it were not for his literary legacy, Sir Philip Sidney's blameless life, his valour, and noble character would perhaps long since have been forgotten. Thus in 1590—now three hundred years ago—was ushered into the world under the title of "The Covntesse of Pembroke's Arcadia," the quarto volume of which the following sheets are a faithful reproduction by photolithography. Sir Philip Sidney had written the book on loose sheets, partly in his sister's presence, partly sent to her immediately after their composition; this very likely is the reason that the original edition is not quite perfect.

The obligation of English literature to Sir Philip Sidney, perhaps more as defender and patron of poetry than a poet, would be in itself sufficient to justify the present issue of his work in its original shape, if there were no other reason to be adduced. But the editio princeps of the "Arcadia" has become very scarce; it is a fine specimen of quaint old typography, and it is different, though not in the sense generally asserted, from all later editions—a fact which attaches a peculiar value to it. I am inclined to believe that the text as the quarto gives it is more likely the original one of the author than that of the folio,
Preface.

When asked to supply an Introduction to the present volume, I first thought of treating of the "Arcadia" as a specimen of the English pastoral novel, and of thus realizing a plan I conceived several years ago. The limited space, however, at my disposal, no less than the consideration that I might detract by my humble addition from the value of the work itself, induced me to abandon this plan, and to give instead a bibliographical account of the book during the past three centuries.¹

It is with great pleasure I express my gratitude to E. Maunde Thompson, Esq., the Principal Librarian of the British Museum, for kindly permitting Mr. Charles Praetorius to photograph the copy of the edition of 1590 in the Grenville Collection. I am greatly obliged to Mr. R. E. Graves for valuable information respecting various copies of the "Arcadia" in the Britwell Library.

H. Oskar Sommer.

London, April, 1891.

¹ "Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia and its Sources" is the title of Mr. H. Frank Heath's dissertation, Strassburg, June, 1890, which is shortly to be published in "Quellen und Forschungen zur Sprach- und Culturgeschichte der germanischen Völker, herausgegeben von Bernhard ten Brink, Ernst Martin, E. Schmidt," Strassburg, C. Trübner, 1874, etc.
CONTENTS.

Bibliographical Introduction . . . . . . pp. 1-45
Photographic Facsimile of the Quarto Edition of
1590 . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 2 ff. and ff. 1-360
INTRODUCTION.

ONE of the writings of Sir Philip Sidney were printed during his lifetime, but they were known to many of his contemporaries and friends through MS. copies. Concerning the "Arcadia" we possess evidence to this effect in a letter of Lord Brooke to Sir Francis Walsingham, Sidney's father-in-law, preserved in the State Papers.1 It is endorsed 1586. On August 23rd, 1588, the "Arcadia," "written by Sir Philippe Sidnei," was entered under the name of

1 From the letter of Fulke Greville, Lord Brooke, I quote only the following lines:

"To the Right honorable S't francis Walsingham."

"S', this day, one ponsonby, a booke-bynder in poles church yard, came to me and told me that ther was one in hand to print S't Philip Sydney's old arcadia, asking me yeit it were done with your honors consent, or any other of his frendes? I told him, to my knowledge, no: then he advysed me to give warninge of it, either to the archbishope or doctor Cosen, who have, as he says, a copy to peruse to that end.

"S', I am loth to renew his memory unto you, but yeat in this I must presume; for I have sent my lady, your daughter, at her request, a correction of that old one, don 4 or 5 years sinse, which he left in trust with me; wherof there is no more copies, and fitter to be reprinte then the first, which is so common: notwithstanding, even that to how and why; so as in many respects, espetially the care of printing of it; so as to be don with more deliberation."
2

Introduction.

William Ponsonby, the same who published Spenser's "Faerie Queene," in the Registers of the Stationers' Company of London. It was published in a quarto volume of 764 pp. in 1590, the same year in which the first three books of the "Faerie Queene" saw light of day in print. But very few perfect copies of this original edition of the "Arcadia" are extant. The reproduction in photographic facsimile of the present edition is done from the copy in the Grenville Collection (No 10,440) in the British Museum. The typographical execution of the editio princeps is very satisfactory, in many respects even tasteful. The quarto volume (7 × 5¾ in.) is arranged in sheets from A to Z, and from Aa to Zz in eights; the folios are at the same time marked by numbers in the right-hand top corner of every recto. Folio A₁ is a blank. The title on A₂ recto runs thus:


2 Mr. Grenville, according to his habit, fixed a little slip in his copy, bearing the following note: "Sidney Arcadia 1\(^st\) edition 4º Ponsonbie 1590. I am assured that this is the only perfect copy of this very rare first edition. Mr. Heber's copy & Mr. Collier's are both very imperfect."—This statement is erroneous; there are several perfect copies extant, though perhaps not so well preserved. See "Catalogue of the Huth Library," vol. iv. p. 1355: "A, 3 leaves, title on A₂; B—ZZ in eights; Aiii is in facsimile. First edition. In the subsequent ones the text was much altered and improved, the MS. used for this 4\(^th\) being imperfect and otherwise faulty."—There are also perfect copies in the Britwell and Rowfant Libraries. There is no copy at the Bodleian Library, Oxford, which only contains copies of the editions of 1598, 1605, 1613, 1624-25, 1629, 1638, and 1725.

3 All the title-pages described in the Introduction are faithful reproductions of the originals, as far as modern type permits; they
THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.

Below this title follows the large coat-of-arms of the Sidneys, with the motto, "Quo fata vocant," and the lines:

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.

A₂ verso is a blank. On A₃ verso, below some ornamental design, follows the dedicatory epistle: "To My Deare Ladie and Sister, The Covntesse of Pembroke," which fills three pages. On A₄ verso is a notice by "the ouerseer of the print," telling the readers that the division of the chapters as well as the summaries preceding them are his additions, and not found in Sir Philip's copy. He further states that he distributed the eclogues at the end of the various books. The text of the "Arcadia" begins on B₁ recto. The summaries by are set up in type from tracings made by myself. Except those of the editions of 1599, 1628, 1655, 1662, and 1674, which, being too large in size for the present volume, are reduced, they are the exact size of the originals.
"the overseer of the print" are printed in italics. These summaries are omitted in the later editions.

The second edition of the "Arcadia," in folio, was published by William Ponsonbie in 1593. This edition is as rare as the editio princeps, if not more so; there is no copy of it at the British Museum. The following account of this edition is based upon the copy of the Britwell Library, which, through the kindness of Mr. Graves, I had the chance of examining. As concerns the text of the "Arcadia," this edition is the one on which all later editions are based, the text of the original edition having been slightly altered in the "Eclogues" adjoined to each book, and augmented by two books. The copy begins with a blank leaf. The second leaf contains on its recto the following title:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY Knight.

NOW SINCE THE FIRST EDITION augmented and ended.

LONDON Printed for William Ponsonbie. Anno Domini 1593.
Introduction.

This title is surrounded by an ornamental emblematic frame specially cut in wood for this edition of the "Arcadia" and used again for the editions of 1598, 1613, 1623, 1629, 1633, and 1638. The centre of the lower part of the frame is occupied by a picture representing in the background a hilly landscape with a castle or a church, in the foreground a pig and a rosemary shrub, with the motto "Non tibi spiro," evidently allegorically expressive of the idea that the "Arcadia" was not what everybody could appreciate. This picture is surrounded by a frame of scrollwork, from which on the right and left-hand sides, supported by arabesque designs, start two pedestals. These two pedestals are crowned with two Arcadian figures, a shepherd on the left and a huntress on the right. Both figures hold up an emblem forming the top part of the design, and consisting of the armorial bearings of the Sidney's—a bear and a lion on both sides of an ornamental shield, with the crest, a wild boar. The whole is surmounted by two cupids blowing horns.

The third leaf, marked $\Phi_3$, contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; $\Phi_4$ is occupied by the preface, "To the Reader." The first book of the "Arcadia" begins on leaf A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, and from Aa to Ss in sixes; the first four leaves of every signature are marked, the last two not. $I_2$ (leaf 50) is misprinted for $H_2$ (leaf 44), and leaf 46 for leaf 49. $Y_3$ appears to be inserted into the Britwell copy from another copy. Between $\Phi_4$ and A, the Britwell copy

---

1 This ornamental marginal design was used by W. Ponsonbie for the title-page of his edition of a translation of "Nicolo Macchiavelli's Florentine History," London, 1595, 4to.—Mr. A. W. Pollard, in his article on "The History of the Title-page" ("Universal Review," London, 4to., vol. for May to August, 1889), has reproduced this title in photographic facsimile.
contains on four leaves of MS. an Index and a Table to the "Arcadia" in the same handwriting as copious notes throughout the text, very likely that of a certain "John Wylde" whose name appears on the title-page as that of the former owner of the book. The volume has all in all 247 leaves, four of preliminary matter and 243 of text. The colophon on Ss, verso runs thus:

LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie, dwelling in Paules Church-yard neere vnto the great north dore of Paules.
Anno Domini. 1593.

The statements concerning the relationship of the quarto to the first and all other folio editions generally given by bibliographers and literary scholars are erroneous. There do not exist numberless variations between the two texts, and it is equally wrong to assert "that not a few original poems are found in the 4to which are not reprinted when the Countess of Pembroke revised the whole." Nobody seems to have ever compared the two texts, and the erroneous statements seem to be caused by the words in the preface in the folio edition "To the Reader:" "The disfigured face, gentle Reader, wherewith this worke not longe since appeared to common view . . . to take in hand the wiping away of those spots wherewith the beauties thereof were unworthely blemished." The main differences of the two texts are these:

1. The folio contains a part of the third book, and a fourth and fifth book, not to be found in the quarto.

2. The additions of "the overseer of the print" added in the quarto, such as the division of the books into chapters and the summaries of the contents preceding them, are omitted in the folio.
Introduction.

3. Some poems, but only such as are subjoined to the end of the books under the heading of "Eclogues," are differently placed or replaced by others. Thus it occurred that Sir John Harrington states in his "Ariosto," 1591, that the quarto does not contain the following poem:

"Who doth desire that chaste his wife should be,
First be he true, for truth doth truth deserue:
Then such be he, as she his worth may see,
And one man still credit with her preserue.

"Not toying kinde, nor causelesie vnkinde,
Not stirring thoughts, nor yet denying right,
Not spying faults, nor in plaine errors blind,
Neuer hard hand, nor euer raines too light.

"As farre from want, as farre from vaine expence
(The one doth force, the latter doth entice),
Allow good companie, but keepe from thence
All fift by mouthes that glory in their vice.
This done, thou hast no more, but leaue the rest
To vertue, fortune, time and womans brest."

On the other hand, the prose text of the quarto is with very insignificant orthographical differences reprinted in the folio, and all poems occurring in the text are to be found unaltered in the same places in the folio where they stand in the quarto.

The following account is the result of a comparison of the quarto with the folio of 1598 [which is a faithful reprint from the folio of 1593] at the British Museum. All textual variations are quoted; the beginnings of all poetical passages occurring in the text are referred to in both editions; some passages omitted in the quarto are
supplied from the folio, such as, *e.g.*, the epitaph of "Argalus and Parthenia."

1590. folio 1 r. Book I. page 1

f. 12 r. "What length of verse braue Mopsas good to show?"

[14 lines.]

f. 51 r. "Transformed in shew, but more transformed in minde."

[15 lines.]

f. 77 r. "Come shepheards weedes become your maisters minde."

[10 lines.]

f. 83 r. "Now thanked be the great God Pan."

[12 lines.]

f. 86 r. The first Eclogues. p. 73

The prose paragraph beginning "Basilius" and terminating "halfe saying;" the following eight lines of poetry with intercalated prose, as well as the next prose paragraph, agree in both texts. The then following dialogue varies a little in the last stanzas, and for "Lalas" in the quarto is written "Thyrisis" in the folio.

fol. 89 r. Lalus:

*But if my Kala this my suite denies,*

*Which so much reason beares,*

*Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:* *

*If still her minde be such,*

*If she still hate loues law,*

*My earthy moulde will melte in watrie teares.*

p. 77. Thyrisis:

*...*
Introduction.

f. 89v. Lalus:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolue,
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Love above poore Natures power.
ibid. Dorus:
Such force hath Love above poore Natures power.
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.
ibid. Lalus:
Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepheard's trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.
ibid. Dorus:
Of singing take to thee the reputation

p. 77. Thyris:
Thus . . . . .
That I grow like the beast,
Which bcares the bit a weaker force doth guide
Yet patient must abide
Such weight it hath, which once is full possest.
ibid. Dorus:
Such weight it hath which once is full possest.
That I become a vision,
Which hath in others head his only being
And liues in fancie seing.
O wretched state of man in selfe diuision!
ibid. Thyris:
O wretched state of man in selfe diuision!
O vvell thou sayest! a feeling declaration
Thy tongue hath made, of Cupids deepe incision,
But now . . . . . . .

p. 78. Dorus:
. . . thou hast got the . . . . . .
New friend of mine; I yield to thy habilitie
My soule doth seeke another estimation.
But ah my Muse I would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddesse so by thy inuention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.

Hereafter follow in the quarto a prose paragraph and a poem beginning: "As I my little flocke on Ister banke." This is inserted in the folio in the fourth book. The same takes place with the next prose paragraph and the dialogue between "Geron" and "Histor." pp. 384-88

The poem "Fortune, Nature, Loue long haue contended about me," etc., etc., in the folio, is not in the quarto; but the next poem, "If mine eyes can speke to do heartie errand," etc., is found in another place, but in the same book. The dialogue between "Strephon" pp. 78-79

ff. 95 r.-97 r. and "Klaius" in the quarto occurs in the folio in the second book. The dialogue between "Dorus" and "Zelmane," and the following poem beginning: "A Shepheards
Introduction.

*tale no height of stile desires,* etc., pp. 79-95
are not in the quarto.

- f. 98r. Book II. p. 96
- f. 99r. "In vaine mine eyes you labour to amend." p. 97
  [14 lines.]
- f. 101r. "Let not old age disgrace my high desire." pp. 98-99
  [14 lines.]
- f. 105v. "Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight." pp. 102-3
  [10 lines.]
- f. 111v. "My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serve." pp. 107-8
  [8 lines.]
- f. 117v. "You liuing powres enclosed in stately shrine." p. 113
  [18 lines.]
- f. 118r.&v. "My Words, in hope to blaze my steadfast minde." pp. 113-14
  [12 lines.]
- ff. 150-52 "What toong can her perfection tell." pp. 141-44
  [147 lines.]
- ff. 156-58 "Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last." pp. 146-50
  [180 lines.]
  [48 lines.]
- f. 174r. "Loued I am, and yet complaine of Loue." p. 164
  [14 lines.]
Introduction.

f. 176v. "Ouer these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes."

[18 lines.] p. 166

f. 196 v. "Me thought some slanes be mist: if so, not much amisse."

[6 lines.] p. 183

f. 214 r. "With two strange fires of equall heate possest."

[14 lines.] p. 197

f. 224 v. "A hatefull cure with hate to heale."

[12 lines.] pp. 206-7

f. 225 v. "Thy Elder care shall from thy carefull face."

[10 lines.] pp. 207-8

f. 226v. "Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light."

[16 lines.] pp. 208-9

f. 234 ff. 234-37 The second Eclogues. Both texts agree till "fortifie."

Hereafter follow in the quarto a prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Nico" and "Dorus," in the folio a prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Strephon" and "Klaius." Hereafter follow in the quarto another prose paragraph and a dialogue between "Strephon" and "Klaius." The prose paragraph is much shorter in the folio, but the dialogue is common to both. In the quarto the second Eclogues terminate then with another prose paragraph and some hexameters describing "Philisides'" words and an
Introduction.

echo. The folio also contains these hexameters, but besides dialogues between "Geron" and "Philisides," "Geron" and "Mastix," and several other poems, such as:

1. "My muse what ailes this ardour To blaze my onely secrets?" etc.

2. "Reason, tell me thy mind, if there be reason," etc.

3. "O sweet woods the delight of solitarinessse!" etc.

f. 244 Book III. p. 235

ff. 246v.,247 "Vnto a caitife wretch whom long pp. 237-39 affliction holdeth."

[86 lines.]

ff.272v.-275 "Now was our heau'nly vaulte de- pp. 260-63 priued of the light."

[86 lines.]

f. 306 "The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth." p. 289

[24 lines.]

f. 311v. Space left for an epitaph. The Epitaph: p. 294

His being was in her alone: And he not being, she was none.

They joy'd one joy, one grief they grieu'd, One love they lou'd, one life they liu'd.
Introduction.

The band was one, one was the sword
That did his death, her death afford.

As all the rest, so now the stone
That tombs the two is justly one.

Argalus & Parthenia.

ff.346v.-348 "Since to death is gone the shep- pp. 427-30
heard hie"

[This poem is in the folio in Book IV.]

The third book in the quarto ends on fol. 360 v. with the words, "Where at ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much before in his life)" and below three asterisks, to show that it was not complete. This passage in the same imperfect state occurs on p. 332 of the folio edition. There are 57 pp. of text added in the folio to the third book, viz., pp. 333-390; 40 pp. from 391 to 431 contain the fourth book, and 40 pp. from 431 to 471 the fifth book.

The third edition of the "Arcadia" was published by William Ponsonbie in 1598, together with the Sonnets, "Astrophel and Stella," and the "Defence of Poesie."

The British Museum copy, once belonging to John Payne Collier (C. 40. k. 5), is in a splendid state of preservation. It has eight pages of preliminary matter. ¶1 is a blank; ¶2 is occupied by the following title:
THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.
WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.
NOW THE THIRD TIME
published, with sundry new additions
of the same Author.

LONDON
Imprinted for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini 1598.

This title is surrounded by the same ornamental marginal design as noticed in the preceding edition. \( \text{\textit{f}}_3 \) is taken up by the epistle, “To My Deare Lady And Sister,” etc. On \( \text{\textit{f}}_4 \) is printed the preface, “To the Reader.” The text of the “Arcadia” begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, from Aa to Zz, and from Aaa to Bbb in sixes, and ends on the verso of Bbb, with the word “Finis.” Pages are marked throughout. The “Arcadia” ends on page 471, \( i.e., \) Rr, recto, “The end of the fifth and last booke of Arcadia.” On Rr, verso commence “CERTAINE SONETS WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY: Neuer before printed,” and finish on Ss, verso. Leaves Ss, recto to Xx, verso are occupied by “THE DEFENCE OF POESIE, by Sir PHILIP SIDNEY, Knight (\textit{\textit{e}}.\textit{\textit{t}})” and
Xx₂ recto to Bbb₃ recto by "Astrophel and Stella."

The last leaves of the book, i.e., from Bbb₃ verso to Bbb₆ verso, contain "HER MOST EXCELLENT MAIESTIE WALKING IN VVANSTEET GARDEN, AS SHE PASSED DOWNE INTO THE groue, there came suddenly among the traine one apparelled like an honest mans wife of the country, where crying out for justice, and desiring all the Lords and Gentlemen to speak a good word for her, she was brought to the presence of her Maiestie, to whom upon her knees she offered a supplication, and used this speech." This edition is, with very slight orthographical differences and the additions specified, a reprint of that of 1593.

The next and fourth edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1599. There is a copy of it at the British Museum (C. 40. 1. 21). Two leaves without the signatures open the book. The first has on its recto the title-page. Below an ornamental design of scrollwork bearing a shield with a rampant lion in the centre, the title runs thus:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES

ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR

PHILIP SIDNEY

Knight.

Now the third time published, with sundry new additions of the same Author.
Then follows another small ornamental design, and below:

**Edinburgh.**

**Printed by Robert Walde-graue, Printer to the Kings Majestie.**

*Cum privilegio Regio. 1599.*

The verso of this leaf is blank. The recto of the second leaf is occupied by the epistle, "To My Deare Ladie and Sister," etc., and the verso contains the preface, "To the Reader." The first book of the "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, Aa to Zz, and Aaa in sixes; it ends on Aaaș recto. The folios are marked by figures on the top of each recto. The "Arcadia" ends on Qqș verso, the remainder of the volume being occupied by "The Sonets, the Defence of Poesie, Astrophel and Stella, and Her Most Excellent Majestie Walking in Wansteed Garden."

For the fifth time the "Arcadia" was published in 1605, by Mathew Lownes.1 This edition is almost a facsimile reprint of the one of 1598. There are four pages of preliminary matter. 12, a blank, is missing; 13 recto contains the title:

---

1 From the following entry into the Registers of the Stationers' Company: "21 July 1601. John Harrison the younger, in a cause betweene him and Ponsonby, confessed he had Vii of the bookes of Arcadia, printed in Scotland or elsewhere by Waldegrave." It appears that Harrison imported copies of the Edinburgh edition of 1599, and was accused by Ponsonby. It is, however, impossible to say how the controversy was settled.
These lines are printed into two rectangular spaces left vacant in an ornamental design covering the whole page. The background of this design represents the clouds with many small stars and various allegorical figures. The centre of the lower part is taken up by Mercury surrounded by stars. On his right hand is "Gemini" and an allegorical figure of "Arithmetica;" on his left "Virgo" and "Musica." There are on the

1 The expense of printing the editions of 1605 and 1613 having been shared by Simon Waterson and Mathew Lownes, some copies of these editions have the name of the one, some that of the other publisher on the title-page.
same side three figures representing "Astronomia," a woman with a heavenly sphere in her hand; "Polibius," a man looking with a telescope towards a planet; "Strabo" designing a map of "Anglia." On the other side, above "Arithmetica," follows "Geometrica," a woman with a pair of compasses, a square, and a ruler; "Hipparchus," a man sitting down and fixing a sextant to the sun; and "Aratus," a man teaching in a sitting attitude. The centre of the upper part is taken up by a globe, with the motto, "VIRESCIT VULNERE VERITAS," "Ptolemeus" sitting on the one and "Marinus" on the other side. Above the globe "Time" is represented leading away a young man, an old one limping after him, and a boy with a toy in his hand preceding him. The design is crowned by two more allegorical figures: on the one side a king and child with a lion, on the other a man and woman with a crayfish.

On ℓ, is printed the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; on ℓ, "To the Reader." The text of the "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, from Aa to Zz, and from Aaa to Bbb in sixes, and contains 576 pages. The "Arcadia" ends on Rr, recto. The remainder of the volume is occupied exactly as in the ed. 1598 by "The Sonets," "Defence of Poesie," "Astrophel and Stella," and "Her Most Gracious Maiestie walking," etc.

For the sixth time the "Arcadia" was printed in 1613. This is the first edition to which a portrait of the author is prefixed. It bears the inscription: "The Right Honourable Sir PHILIP SIDNEY, Knt." and further: "From a curious Limning drawn by Isaac Oliver in the Collection of Dr Richard Mead." It represents Sir Philip Sidney in a sitting attitude under a tree, his sword in his hand. There are only two leaves preliminary matter. The recto
of the first has, surrounded by the above-described emblematic marginal design (p. 5) this title:

THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.

NOW THE FOURTH TIME
published, with some new
Additions.

LONDON
Imprinted by H. L. for Simon
Waterson 1613.¹

The next leaf contains the epistle, "To My Dear Lady and Sister," etc. The preface, "To The Reader," is omitted. The "Arcadia" begins on A₁. The volume is then exactly arranged as the preceding edition, save that in signature

¹ The Registers of the Stationers' Company (E. Arber's "Transcript," vol. iii. p. 133) contains the following entry:

"Edward Aldee Entred for his copy vnder the handes of master HARTWELL and Master feild warden / A booke Called, the Countesse of Bedfordes Arcadia / begynnynge where the Countesse of Pembrokes endes vj." The book announced here seems however to have never appeared. I have not been able to find any other reference to it.
"Thus far the worthy Author had revised or enlarged that first written Arcadia of his, which onely passed from hand to hand, and was neuer printed: hauing a purpose likewise to haue new ordered; augmented, and concluded the rest, had he not bene prevented by vntymely death. So that all which foloweth here of his Work, remayned as it was done and sent away in seuerall loose sheets (beeing neuer after reviewed, nor so much as seene all together by himself) without any certaine disposition or perfect order. Yet for that it was his, how soeuer depriued of the iust grace it should haue had, was held too good to be lost: & therefore with much labor were the best coherencies, that could be gathered out of those scattred papers, made, and afterwards printed as now it is, onely by hir Noble care to whose deare hand they were first committed, and for whose delight and intertaynement only vndertaken.

"What conclusion it should haue had, or how far the Work haue bene extended (had it had his last hand thereunto) was onely knowne to his owne spirit, where only those admirable Images were (and no where else) to bee cast.

"And here we are likewise utterly depriued of the relation how this combat ended, and how the Ladies by discovery of the approching forces were deliuered and restored to Basilius: how Dorus returned to his old master Dametas: all which vnfortunate mayme we must be content to suffer with the rest."

There is another leaf inserted in signature Ss after Ss, marked Ss, containing "A Dialogue betweene two Shepherds, vutterd in a pastorall shew, at Wilton.", which occurred for the first time in this edition. It consists of
Introduction.

forty-eight lines rhyming with one another. There is a copy of this so-called "fourth" edition in the Huth Library, the title of which differs in so far as the name "Simon Waterson" is replaced by "Mathew Lownes." From the description in the Huth Catalogue it appears that there are several more leaves inserted into that copy besides the two I have found in the British Museum copy:

"Title and dedication, 2 leaves; A—Ee₄ in sixes; ¶, 4 leaves; *, 5 leaves; Ee₅,₆, 2 leaves; Ff—Bbb in sixes, except that in Ss there is an extra leaf unpaged, marked Ss₁₁.

"The extra leaves marked ¶ and * in sig. Ee appear to have been introduced from the Supplement by Sir W. Alexander, first printed in 1621, to assist in completing the text, which is, notwithstanding, still imperfect and inconsequent, having been left so probably in the original MS. In the copy of edit. 1605, described by Hazlitt, twelve additional leaves were inserted with a similar object from the same source."

"This is a very uncommon edition."

"Beling's supplement to the 'Arcadia' was first printed separately at Dublin, 8vo., 1624. It is a very rare volume, and a copy in gilt vellum sold at Heber's sale for £3 19s."

The seventh edition of the "Arcadia" appeared in 1621 at Dublin. It has four leaves preliminary matter, ¶₁ is a blank; ¶₂ contains on its recto the following title in a monumental frame representing two columns on a pedestal united at the top by a sort of triumphal arch:

**THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.**
Introduction.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.

Now the fift time published, with some new Additions.

Also a supplement of a defect in the third part of this History.

By Sir W. Alexander.

Dublin,
Printed by the Societie of Stationers. 1621.

Cum Privilegio.

contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady And Sister," etc., the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A, recto. The volume is arranged from A—Z, Aa—Zz, Aaa—Bbb in sixes. The "Arcadia" ends on Rr, verso; the remainder of the book contains the Sonnets, etc. Also the dialogue described as having been inserted for the first time in the ed. 1605 is here reprinted (p. 493).

On page 326 the paragraph quoted above, "Thus far the worthy Author had revised that first written Arcadia of his," etc., is followed on the next page by "A supplement of the said defect by Sir W. A."; this runs from page 327 to page 346, and is followed by the following note by Sir W. Alexander:
"If this little Essay haue not that perfection which is required for supplying the want of that place for which it was intended, yet shall it serue for shadow to give a luster to the rest. I haue onely herein conformed my selfe to that which preceeded my beginning, and was knowne to be that admirable Authors owne, but doe differ in some things from that which followes, specially in the death of Philisides, making choise of a course, whereby I might best manifest, what affection I beare to the memorie of him, whom I tooke to be alluded vnto by that name, and whom I onely by this imperfect parcell (designing more) had a minde to honour."

Except this addition, the text is exactly that of the previous editions.

The eighth edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1623 at London. This is the first London edition to which the supplement of Sir W. Alexander is added, though not mentioned on the title and partly on pages not marked. In the main points this edition is arranged as previous ones. ¶₁ is a blank; ¶₂ contains, surrounded by the same emblematic marginal design referred to repeatedly, this title:

THE
COVNTESSE
OF
PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY,
Knight.
Introduction.

NOW THE SIXT TIME PUBLISHED.

LONDON
Imprinted by H. L. for Matthew Lownes. 1623.

On the verso of the title-page is mounted a cut-out portrait of Sir Philip Sidney, representing his bust. The name "Sydney * Philippus" surrounds it, and the verses "vix ea nostra uoco," and

"Carmen Apollo dedit, beli Mars contulit artes
Sed iuueni vitam Mors rapit ante diem  B."

are written below it.

There are further on a separate mounted slip these lines:

"de ipsius Arcadia.
Ipse tuam moriens (sed conjuge teste) jubebas
Arcadium sævis ignibus esse cibum.
Si meruit mortem, quia flammam accendit amoris,
Mergi, non uri debuit iste liber.
In librum quæcunq' cadat sententia : nullâ
Debuit ingenium morte perire tuum."

On ¶ begins the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc.; on ¶ the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A₁ recto. The volume is arranged from A to Z, and from Aa to Zz, and Aaa to Bbb₁. The text of this edition corresponds to that of the former ones up to page 326 (Ee), which terminates with the above-quoted paragraph: "Thus far the worthy Author had reuised," etc.¹ The next leaf is marked ¶,

¹ The nine folios inserted after page 326, containing the supplement by Sir W. Alexander, do not belong to this edition at all;
and bears the number 335, though in the book it is 327. On the margin at the top of the page in small type is printed: "Here this Story, left vnperfect by the Author, is continued by Sr W. A." The verso of this page is not marked; the next leaf 32 is marked on the recto 334, though it would be 329, and 33 is marked 335 instead of 331; 34 and the then following six folios *1-6 are not marked by numbers. Sir W. Alexander's supplement terminates on the recto of *6. After this *6 follows a leaf bearing no signature, but marked on the recto 347, and on the verso 348, the numbers due to those pages if all the pages described as not marked were counted. Page 347 begins: "From hence the History is againe continued out of the Authors owne writings and conceits, as followeth." Page 349 is marked Ff1, and from now forward the volume runs regularly in sixes to its end. The "Arcadia" terminates on page 482, i.e. Rr1 verso. "A dialogue betweene two Shepheards," etc., occurs on Ss1.1

only the first three leaves are marked. As I was unable to discover this supplement in the same shape in any other edition, it must be a portion of an edition which I was unable to trace, perhaps that of 1622, if there existed one of that date. The copy of this edition is a duplicate of that of 1621, only the title being different. It is, however, not at all impossible that the whole copy is made up:—of a title-page of the edition of 1623, the body of the work of the edition of 1621, and the supplement from a source unknown to me.

1 W. Carew Hazlitt, in his "Second Series of Bibliographical Collection and Notes on Early English Literature, 1474-1700," London, 1882, 8vo., p. 559, describes an edition of the "Arcadia" of 1622 thus: "The Covntesse of Pembrokes Arcadia .... Now the sixth time Published. London. Imprinted by H. L. for Simon Waterson. 1622. Folio. Title, Dedication, and to the Reader 3 leaves: A to 3 B in sixes, but only two leaves in Ee, and between Ee1 and 2 nine leaves inserted to supply the lacuna in the story." From the fact that the edition Mr. Hazlitt describes is a "sixth," as well as that of 1623 I have seen, I am inclined to think that he
The ninth edition of the "Arcadia" appeared in 1627 at London. There are three leaves preliminary matter in this edition. The first leaf has on its recto the title surrounded by a design of scrollwork occupying the greater part of the page:

**THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES**

**Arcadia.**

Written by Sir Philip Sidney

Knight.

Now the sixt time published,

*with some new Additions.*

Also a supplement of a defect in

*the third part of this Historie,*

By Sir W. Alexander.

**London**

Printed by W. S. for Simon Waterson.

1627.

There is for the first time added to this edition "a sixth book," though not mentioned in the title. The next mistook a copy of the 1623 edition bearing on the title-page "Simon Waterson" for "Mathew Lownes," as a separate edition, forgetting that Waterson and Lownes were both concerned in several editions of the "Arcadia," as extant copies show.
leaf contains the epistle, "To My Deare Lady and Sister," etc., the third the preface, "To the Reader." The "Arcadia" begins on A. The volume is arranged in sixes, A to Z, Aa to Zz, and Aaa to Fff. Sir W. Alexander's Supplement occupies pp. 327-346. Page 483 is another title-page running thus:

A SIXTH BOOKE,
TO THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA:
VVritten by R. B. of Lincolnes Inne Esquire.

Sat, si bene; si male, nimium.

LONDON,
Printed by H. L. and R. Y.
1628.
Introduction.

The place marked by the asterisk in this title is occupied by an emblematic design, representing in its centre a mermaid carrying a looking-glass in one hand, and combing her hair with the other, with the motto: "Omnia Tempus Habent." The verso of this title-page is blank. Page 485 contains the following preface: "To the Reader."

"To striue to lessen the greatnesse of the attempt, were to take away the glory of the Action. To adde to Sir Philip Sidney, I know is rashnesse; a fault pardonable in me if custome might as well excuse the offence, as youth may prescribe in offending in this kinde. That hee should vndergoe that burden, whose mother-tongue differs as much from this language, as Irish from English; augments the danger of the enterprise, and gives your expectation, perhaps an assurance, what the euent must be. Yet let no man iudge wrongfully of my endeavours: I haue added a limme to Apelles Picture, but my minde never entertain'd such vaine hopes, to thinke it of perfection sufficient to delude the eyes of the most vulgar, with the likeness in the workmanship. No, no, I doe not follow Pythagoras his opinion of transmigrations: I am well assur'd divine Sidney's soule is not infus'd into me, whose Judgement was onely able to finish, what his Inuention was onely worth to vndertake. For this, courteous Reader, let it suffice I place Sir Philip Sidney's desert (euen in mine own esteeme) as farre beyond my endeavours, as the most fault-finding Censor can imagin this assay of mine, to come short of his Arcadia. Vale."

"R. B."


In 1629 appeared the tenth edition, which is in every
Introduction.

detail a reprint of that of 1627; page for page correspond, and both have exactly 624 pp. The title-page, however, shows again the emblematic marginal design so often mentioned, and states the addition of a sixth book:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES

ARCADIA.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.

Now the seventh time published,
with some new Additions.

With the supplement of a Defect in the third
part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight.

Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke,
By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne, Esq.

London printed by H. L. and R. Y. and are
sold by S. Waterson in S. Pauls Church-
yard. 1629.

On the second title-page, i.e., on p. 483, the year printed is "1628." (Compare page 28.)

The next and eleventh edition again only varies in the title-page, which runs thus:

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES
Introduction.

Arcadia.

Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.

Now the eighth time published, with some new Additions. With the supplement of a Defect in the third part of this History, by Sir W. A. Knight.

Whereunto is now added a sixth Booke, By R. B. of Lincoln's Inne, Esq.

London,
Printed for Simon Waterson and R. Young, Anno 1633.

This title is printed within the well-known emblematical design.

There appeared four more editions in the course of the seventeenth century of the "Arcadia," but in none of them the arrangement of the text on 624 pages has been altered; the title-pages, of course, of these editions are different, and to some a few additions have been made.

The twelfth edition was published at London in 1638. Its title-page runs thus:

THE
COUNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA,
Written by Sir Philip Sidney Knight.
Introduction.

Now the ninth time published, with a twofold supplement of a defect in the third Book: the one by Sir W. A. Knight; the other, by Mr. Ja. Johnstoun Scoto-Brit. dedicated to K. James, and now annexed to this work, for the Readers benefit.

Whereunto is also added a sixth Booke, By R. B. of Lincolnes Inne Esq.

London
Printed for J. Waterfon and R. Young, 1638.

This title is surrounded by the well-known emblematic design. The supplement by Ja. Johnstoun is printed on ten leaves marked aa1-6 and bb1-4. aa1 is fully occupied by the following dedication:

TO THE MOST POTENT, || HIGH, AND INVINCIBLE PRINCE,
K. JAMES THE SIXT,
KING OF SCOTLAND, &c.
Grace, Health, Prosperity, and Peace, with daily increase of Honour.

Having, Sir at some idle hours, oft and oft evolved the worke of Sir Philip Sidney, intituled his Arcadia, I was carried with such pleasure in perusing the same, that I could never find an end of reading: while at length my braine transported with the Idea's of his conceit, brought forth a little complement, of what was rather desired than wanted in him: desired, I say, because there is nothing missing but himselfe; and yet his person is so well represented in his worke, that if he any wayeres could be absented from the assertion of the Ladies liberty, it was needfull, because he left in the midst; that by that want his want should be livelier deciphered. True it is, that whatsoever is wanting in him, can no more be filled up but by
himselfe, than one man can invest anothers mind: yet I have assayed to play the Ape, albeit I cannot represent the author. However it be, I can not thinke how it shall be better censured, than by your Majesties owne tryall; who, beside the great accompt your Majesty hath of the Writer, could better supply your selfe his default, than any other that I know; if at least so much time were permitted to your Maiesty, from other serious and important affaires of your Realme, as to peruse the same. Which, if it may seeme worthy of the light, hath need of your Majesties protection, as who by the beames of your countenance can abundantly cleere, what cloudes the obscurity of my present fortune may bring to the flourishing fame of Sir Philip Sidneys memory. Which accessory, concurring with my travell and diligence herein, I am sure otherwise to have a warrant in his owne writings for my invention. The language, so far as I could, I have borrowed from himselfe; and if I be more compendious herein, than need were, I am bound within the limits of his owne conceits, which I durst not exceed: further your Majesty in censuring hereof may better conjecture, than I can informe thereabout. For which cause, committing the same to your Highnesse leisurable inspection, I pray the eternall to blesse your grace, with long life, prosperity, and honour, to the advancement and furtherance of vertue, and comfort of your peaceable and obedient subjects.

Your Highnesse humble Servitor


The thirteenth edition was published at London in 1655. The title on A₂ recto is this:

THE COUNTESS OF
Pembroke's Arcadia

Written by Sir Philip Sidney

The tenth Edition.

With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal heads, and some other new Additions.

* 

Printed by William Du-Gard: and are to bee sold by George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new buildings in Paul's Church-yard; and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in Paul's Church-yard, M.DC.LV.

In the British Museum copy, facing this title-page is mounted a portrait representing Sir Philip Sidney in his armour. His crest is below the portrait, but no information is given as to where the portrait is taken from or who has designed it.

On A₃ is printed the epistle, "To My Dear Lady and Sister;" on A₄ the preface, "To the Reader." After this follow thirteen leaves considered as preliminary matter, containing "The Life and Death of Sir Philip

* The place occupied by the asterisk is taken up by a square ornamental design.
Sidney," and a great many epigrams and epitaphs. The "Arcadia" begins on sig. B, and the recto of B, is numbered page 1, so that the arrangement of the text on 624 pages of the former editions is also here preserved. After page 624 is first added the Supplement to the third book by J. Johnstoun, and after that—1. "A Remedie for Loue" WRITTEN BY S' PHILIP SIDNEY, "Heretofore omitted in the Printed ARCADIA," consisting of 48 couplets; 2. "An Alphabethical Table, or Clavis, whereby the Reader is let in to view the principal Stories contein'd in the Arcadia, as they stand in their proper places," covering four pages.

The fourteenth edition of the "Arcadia" was published at London in 1662. It is except the title-page exactly the same as that of 1655, and even the title-page differs but slightly, viz.:

**THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S ARCADIA**

WRITTEN BY Sir Philip Sidney

K N I G H T.
The eleventh Edition
With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal Heads, and some other new Additions.

* L O N D O N
Printed by Henry Lloyd, for William Du-Gard: and are to be sold by George Calvert, at the half Moon in the new buildings, and Thomas Pierrepont, at the Sun in St. Paul's Church-yard, MDCLXII.

The fifteenth and last edition of the "Arcadia" in the seventeenth century was published at London in 1674. As concerns the text and all additional matter, it exactly agrees with the two preceding editions. The title-page differs a little; it runs thus:

THE COUNTRYESS OF PEMBROKEs ARCADIA
WRITTEN BY Sir Philip Sidney K N I G H T.
The Thirteenth Edition.

With his Life and Death; a brief Table of the principal Heads, and some other new Additions.

L O N D O N,
Printed for George Calvert, at the Golden-Ball in Little-Britain, MDCLXXIV.

In 1725 appeared an edition of Sir Philip Sidney's works in three volumes 8vo., described as the "fourteenth edition." Besides, there is a general title-page at the beginning of the first volume with the date 1725, running thus:

THE
WORKS
OF
The Honourable
Sr Philip Sidney, Kt.
In Prose and Verse.

In Three Volumes.

CONTAINING,
I. The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.
II. The Defense of Poesy.
Introduction.

III. Astrophel and Stella.
IV. The Remedy of Love; Sonnets, &c.
V. The Lady of May. A Masque.
VI. The Life of the Author.

Death, the Devourer of all World's Delight,
Hath robbed you, and reft fro me my Joy;
Both you and me, and all the World he quight
Hath robb'd of Joyance, and left sad Annoy.

Joy of the World, and Shepherds Pride was he,
Shepherds hope never like again to see,
SPENSER'S Astrophel.

The Fourteenth Edition.

LONDON:
Printed for E. Taylor, A. Bettesworth,
E. Curll, W. Mears, and R. Gosling.
M.dcc.xxv. Price 15s.

The first volume has eight leaves preliminary matter: the first is a blank; the second contains on its verso the portrait of Sir Philip Sidney; the third the above quoted general title-page to the three volumes; the fourth and fifth are occupied by a dedication "To the Right Honourable the Earl of Leicester"; the sixth leaf contains on its recto the following title-page to the first volume:

THE WORKS OF
Introduction.

The Honourable Sir Philip Sidney, Kt.

Vol. I.

Containing
The First, and Second Books of the Countess of Pembroke’s Arcadia.

LONDON:
Printed in the Year MDCxxv.

and finally, the seventh and eighth leaves bear the epistle “To My deare Lady,” etc. Then follows, with a separate pagination, “The Life of Sir Philip Sidney,” occupying thirty-two pages (signatures A and B in eights). On a page marked i (sig. B,) begins the “Arcadia.” The first volume contains on 420 pages the first two books.

The second volume has two pages preliminary matter, one blank and a title, which only in the centre differs from that of the first volume, viz.:

Vol. II.

Containing
The Third, Fourth, and Fifth Books of the Countess of Pembroke’s Arcadia.

* The place occupied by the asterisk is taken up by a cupid on a pedestal, from which bay branches project.
The third book of the "Arcadia" begins, very likely through a mistake of the printers, not as one would expect, on page 421, but on p. 401 (sig. B,). The fifth book ends on page 881, which, if it were marked, would be sig. II.

The third volume has four pages preliminary matter, one blank, one title to the third volume, differing only in the centre from those of the first and second volumes, viz.:

---

**Vol. III.**

**CONTAINING,**

I. *A Sixth Book* to the Countess of Pembroke's *Arcadia.*

Written by R. B. of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq;

II. Sir Philip Sidney's Poetical Works.

Then follow two pages containing an "Explanation of some Characters &c. in the Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia," and the fourth leaf is occupied by the following title to the sixth book:

**A SIXTH BOOK TO THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S ARCADIA.**

WRITTEN

By R. B. of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq;
Introduction.

Sat, fi Bene; fi Male, inimicum.

*  

LONDON:
Printed in the Year M.DCC.XXIV.

The sixth book covers 64 pp. After it follow, with a new title-page and a separate pagination, "The Poetical Works of Sir Philip Sidney," running through 184 pp. The volume ends with two leaves "Postscript" and two leaves "Table."

The fact that the first volume is dated 1725, whereas the second and third bear the date 1724, seems to point out that the preliminary matter of the first was only completed in 1725.

The only modern edition of the "Arcadia" was published in 1867 at London, 8vo., under this title:

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE'S ARCADIA

WRITTEN BY
SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, Knt.

WITH NOTES AND INTRODUCTORY ESSAY BY HAIN FRISWELL
AUTHOR OF "THE GENTLE LIFE," ETC., ETC.

LONDON
SAMPSON LOW, SON, & MARSTON,
MILTON HOUSE, LUDGATE HILL.

1867.
D 2
Introduction.

To give an idea in what relation this edition stands to the quarto and first folio I quote the following paragraph from the editor's introduction:

"The principle on which this edition of the 'Arcadia' has been put through the press perhaps needs some explanation. As the sheets of MS. left the hands of Sidney, after the first book, or perhaps two, had been completed, they were transmitted to his sister the Countess of Pembroke, and some of them mislaid and lost. Hence one very great hiatus supplied by Sir William Alexander, others by R(ichard) B(eling) and Mr. Johnstone. It is also known that the Countess of Pembroke added to the episodes, adventures, and strange turns, at least in all the later books. Hence there is to be met with an Arcadian undergrowth which needs much careful pruning; and this undertaken, with needful compression, will leave the reader all that he desires of Sidney's own. Growing like certain fanciful parasites upon forest trees, on the books of the 'Arcadia' are certain eclogues of laboriously-written and fantastical poetry, some in Latin measures, against which Walpole was right to protest, and anent which Pope said—

'And Sidney's verse halts ill on Roman feet.'

These have been boldly removed, without any loss, it is believed, to the romance; lastly, long episodes of no possible use to the book, which we think have been supplied by other hands than Sidney's, have, whilst using their very words and phrases, been cut down. Tedious excrescences have thus been removed, but it is to be hoped with judgment, so that the reader gets all we think is Sidney's, and without curb put upon his utterance," etc.

Introduction.

The various supplements to the "Arcadia" have also been published separately, viz.:

"A Supplement of a Defect in the third Part of Sidney's Arcadia by William Alexander, Earl of Stirling." Dublin, 1621. Folio. (Reprinted in the ed. of 1722 and ff.)

"A sixth book of the Arcadia by R(ichard) B(eling)." Dublin, 1624. 4to. (Reprinted in the ed. of 1629 and ff.)

"A Continuation of Sir P. Sidney's Arcadia written by a young Gentlewoman" (Mrs. A. W. Weames). London, 1651. 12mo.


Based upon the "Arcadia," the following books appeared:


"Argalus and Parthenia. Originally compiled in Prose by Sir Philip Sidney and afterwards done into Verse by Francis Quarles Esq. in three books. Adorn'd with thirty copper-plates, to illustrate the Story: And the Life of the author now prefix'd." London, 1726. 8vo.

"The History of Argalus and Parthenia. Being A Choice Flower Gathered out of Sir Philip Sidney's Rare Garden." (?) 1770 and 1788. 8vo.

In 1625 appeared a French translation of the "Arcadia" entitled: "Larcadie de la Comtesse de Pembrok. Composee par Messire Philippes Sidney, Cheualier An-
Introduction.


The "Arcadia" was also translated into German by Valentinus Theocritus, and afterwards this translation was revised by Martin Opitz.

The first German translation was published in 1629, at Frankfort-on-the-Main, with the following curious title:


This translation, revised by Martin Opitz, appeared again in 1643, entitled thus:


This edition was reprinted in 1646 at Leyden, with almost the same title, in two parts 12mo., by Frantz Hegern.
THE ARCADIA.

1590.
TO MY DEARE LADIE
AND SISTER, THE COUNTESSE OF PEMROKE.

Ere now have you
(most deare, and
most worthy to be
most deare Lady)
this idle worke of
mine: which I fear
(like the Spiders
webbe) will be
thought fitter to be swept away, then worn
to any other purpose. For my part, in ver-
truhth (as the cruell fathers among the
Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes
they would not foster) I could well find in
my barte, to cast out in some desert of for-
getfulnes this child, which I am loath to.

A[3]
father. But you desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is an absolute com-
mandement. Now, it is done onelie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballauce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be par-
donede, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For in-
deede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that tristinglie handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner, be-
ing done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent unto you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a young head, not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when God will) hauing many many fancies begot-
ten in it, if it had not ben in some way de-
livered, would haue growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that they came in, then
then that they gat out. But his chiefe safetie, halbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe protection, the bearing the line-rye of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceaue me) is worthy to be a sauctuary for a greater ofender. This say I, because I knoue the vertue so; and this say I, because it may be euere so; or to say better, because it will be euere so. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follyes your good iudgement wil finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stufte, then, as in an Haberdashers shoppe, glasses, or feathers, you will con-inue to loue the writer, who doth exceding- lie loue you; and most most hartelie praies you may long lync, to be a principall orna-ment to the familie of the Sidneis.

Your louing Brother

Philip Sidnei.
He division and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneys doing, but adventured by the overseer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therefore submits himselfe to their judgement, and if his labour answer not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneys writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finisht, that then choise shoud have bene made, which should have bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they have bene chosen and disposed as the overseer thought best.
CHAP. I.


It was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparell against the approch of her louer, and that the Sun runing a most serene course becometh an indifferent arbitrer betweene the night and the day; when the hopelesse shepheard Strephon was come to the sandes, which lie against the Island of Cithera, where viewing the place with a heavie kinde
of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly riuall, the pastor Claius vnto him, and setting first downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my Claius, said he, whether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called vnto by ouer-busie Remembrance, Remembrance, restlesse Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our selues. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other shepeheardes some were running after their sheep strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble vp-on the short and sweete grassë, some medicining their sicke eues, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more lease inuenting new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt vs any holiday, eyther for pastime or deuotion, nay either for necessarie foode or naturall rest: but that still it forced our thoughts to worke vpô this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long laft) did gaze our eyes vpon her euer florishing beautie: did it not still crie within vs? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some paultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especiallie in so troublesome a season: to leaue that shore vnsaluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth: to leaue those steps vnkissed wherein Vrania printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembraunce commaundéd, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came ouer cloathed
cloathed vnto vs in the forme of this place, so this place giues newe heate to the seauer of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my Claius, Vrania lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburdened: and as for thee, poore Claius, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reverence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selue. There shee tooke, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selue, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightsomnes whereof had yet so naturally a chearfulnesse, as it made even sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning the spake vnto vs all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine cares did feed vpon the sweete words she utterred: And here she laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selue feelde some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deuiding her heavenny beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when she was imbarred, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunst for ioy, how the sailes did swel with pride, and all because they had Vrania? O Vrania, blessed be thou Vrania, the sweeteest fairenesse and fairest sweetenesse: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further, and Claius thus answered. Alas my Strephon (sai'd he) what needes this skore to reckon vp onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call
The Countesse of Pembroke

our thoughtes to appear at the court of affection, held by that racking steward, Remembrance? Aswell may sheepe forget to seare when they spie woolues, as wee can missie such fancies, when wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place served vs to thinke of those thinges, so those thinges serve as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loure, and loure with joy in the midst of all woes: let vs in such sorte thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so exalted as to loure, a maide, who is such, that as the greatest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that may be prayfed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddles climing vp a faire tree, and browsling on his tendreft braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starrs contayned in them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping over flowrie fieldes and shaddowed waters in the extreeme heate of summer, and yet is nothing, compared to the honie flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they haue seene her, what else they shall ever see is but drie stubble after clouers graffe) is to bee matched with the flocke of unspeakeable vertues laid vp delightfully in that best buil- ded solde. But in deede as wee can better consider the flunnes
funnes beautie, by marking how he guildes these wa-
ters, and mountaines them by looking vp on his owne face, too glorious for our weake eys: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her funstaying excellencie) will better way it by her workes vp on some meaner subiect employed. And alas, who can better wit-
nesse that then we, whose experience is grounded vp-
on feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (be-
ing silly ignorant shepeheard) raise vp our thoughts aboute the ordinary leuell of the worlde, so as great clearkes do not disdaine our conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes made vs when oth-
ers were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of hea-
\[\ldots\]

Wherupon running for pitie sake vnto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constantre frends to his life then his memorie) fast griping vp on the edge of a square small coffar, which lay all vnder his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to carry him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew
The Countesse of Pembroke

drew they vp a young man of so goodly shape and well pleasing faavour, that one would think death had in him a louely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparrell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called vp their care; so that lifting his feete about his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him upon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recover, both breath the servant, & warmth the companion of living. At length, opening his eyes, he gave a great groane, (a dolcfull note but a pleasaunt dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, until (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) got vp, and looking round about to the uttermost limittes of his sight, and crying upon the name of Pyrocles, nor seeing nor heareing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall Musidorus liue after Pyrocles? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparence dead had yet saued his life, and now comming to his life, should be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force tickled that unnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right have you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I list? and what pollicie have you to bestow a benefite where it is counted an injury? They hearing him, speake in Greek (which was their natural language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering
dering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some
dear friend was great cause of his sorrow; told him they
were poore men that were bound by course of human-
ityte to prevent so great a mischief; and that they wisht
him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such de-
sperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by
his owne prooue, who had lately escaped as apparant
danger as any might be. No, no (said he) it is not for
me to attend so high a blisseyfuffling; but since you take
care of me, I pray you finde means that some Barke
may be prouided, that will goe out of the hauyen, that if
it be possible we may finde the body farre farre too pre-
cious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I haue
within this casket, of value suuicient to content them.
Claius presently went to a Fisherman, & having agreed
with him, and prouided some apparell for the naked
stranger, he imbarke, and the Shepheards with him;
and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the ha-
uyen, but that some way into the sea they might discoerne
(as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times
some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the
young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his brest,
he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, in-
treating them to bend their course as neere vnto it as
they could: telling, how that smoake was but a small
relique of a great fire, which had druué both him & his
friend rather to committe themselues to the cold mer-
cie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire:
and that therefore, though they both had abandoned
the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be
met withall. They steered therefore as neere thether-
ward as they could; but when they came so neere as
The Countesse of Pembroke

their eyes were full masters of the obiect, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carcase of the shipp, or rather some few bones of the carcase, hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death having visit'd more then one dart to that destruction. About it floated great store of very rich things, and many chestes which might promis'd no lesse. And midst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testify both elements violence, but that the chiefe violence was grown of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisly wounds, & their blood had (as it were) filled the wrinkles of the seas visage: which it seemed the sea would not wash away, that it might witness it is not always his fault, when we condemn his cruelty: in summe, a defeat, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwreck without storme or ill footing: and a wast of fire in the midst of water.

But a little way off they saw the masts, whose proud height now lay along: like a widdow having lost her make of whom she held her honor: but upon the masts they saw a yong man (at least if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who fate (as on horseback) having nothing vpon him but his shirt, which being wrought with blew silk & gold, had a kind of resemblance to the sea: on which the sun (then neare his Western home) did shoo'te some of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece vsed to ware very long) was stir'd vp & down with the wind, which seem'd to haue a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feet; nimicely full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture: for, holding his
his head vp, full of unmoued majestie, he held a sworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waered about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, & their amasement such a superstition, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene Neptune and Venus, that had made all this terribile slaughter) as they went under stayle by him, held vp their hands, and made their prayers. Which when Musidorus saw, though he were almost as much раuiflied with joy, as they with astonishment, he left to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou liue, and arte well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond Pyrocles: and therefore Musidorus could doo no more but perswade the Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most divine excellencies, and promising great rewards for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come upon the staies; when one of the staylers descried a Galley which came with stayles and oares directlie in the chase of them; and stfreight perceaued it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee imploied eyther to bee his Galley slaues, or to fell at the best market. Which when the Maister vnderstood, he commanded forthwith to set on all the canuasse they could, and flee homeward, leauing in that fort poore Pyrocles so neere to be reskewed.
But what did not Musidorus say: what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight? But feare standing at the gates of their eares, put back all perswasions: so that hee had nothing to accompanie Pyrocles, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leave the pursuite of them, & turne to take vp the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly he might well see them lift vp the yong man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere Pyrocles shall that bodie of thine be enchainyed? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaundred to base offices? shall vertue become a slave to those that be slaves to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so cuill as vnworthy servitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the galleie setting vpone an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friend, and to wish well to the Pirates whome before he hated, least in their ruyn hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the hauen, that they abstented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselves into the sea: so that byng as full of sorrow for being vnable to doe any thing, as voide of counsell how to doe any thing, besides, that sickness grew something vpon him, the honest shepheards Strephon and Clains (who being themselves true friends, did the more perfectly judge the iustnesse of his sorowe) aduise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured
red persuasion of his death, to have no cause to dispaire of his life. as one that had lamented the death of his sheepe, shou'd after know they were but strayed, would receive pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

C H A P. 2.

1. The pastors comfortes to the wracked Musidorus. 2. His passage into Arcadia. The description of Laconia, Arcadia, Kalanders person, house, and entertainment to Musidorus, now called Palladius. His sickness, recovery, and perfection.

Ow sir (saide they) thus for our selues it is. Wee are in profession but shepheards, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilitie of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie wee are, is but a little way hence, and even vpon the next confines.

There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name Kalander, who vouchsafeth much favour vnto vs: A man who for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturrre, but comes to his eares, for his vpright dealing so beloved of his neighbours, that he hath many ever readie to doe him their uttermost service, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the use of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these countries of Peloponnesus: and (which is worth all) all these things giue him not so much power, as his nature giues him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deferred thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recouer againe your helth, without which you cannot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect, you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the cōsort of curtesie, & cæse of wise counsell shall not be wanting.

Musidorus (who besides he was meerly vnacquainted in the countrie had his wits astonisshed with sorow) gaue easie consent to that, for which he saw no reason to disagree: & therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed vpon the) they tooke their journey together through Laconia, Clais & Strephon by course carying his chest for him, Musidorus only bearing in his countenance cvident marks of a sorowfulmind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiuing, & knowing that the vio-

lence of sorow is not at the first to be striue withal: (be-
ing like a mighty beast, soner tamed with folowing, than overthowe by withstăding) they gaue way vnto it for that day & the next, never troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melacholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, thogh they had not a liuely entrace to his šeices shut vp in sorow, yet like one half asleep, he toke hold of much of the matters spoken vnto him, so as a man may say, ete sorow was aware, they made his thoughts bear away something els beside his own sorow, which wrought so in him, that at leght he grew cōrent to mark their spee-
ches, then to maruel at such wit in shepheardes, after to like
like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe conference: so that the 3. day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heavenly floore against the coming of the Sun, the nightingales (striving one with the other which could in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorrow) made the put of their sleep, & rising fro vnder a tree (which that night had bin their pauiio) they went on their iorney, which by & by welcomed Musidorus eyes (wearied with the wafted foile of Laconia) with delightfull prospects. There were hilles which garnished their proud heights with stately trees: hubbo valleis, whose base estate semed toforted with re-freshing off siluer riuers: medows, enameld with al sorts of ey-pleasing floures: thickets, which being lined with most pleasat shade, were witnessed so to by the chereful depositio of many wel-tuned birds: each pasture stroed with sheep feeding with sober security, while the pretie labs with bleting oratory craued the dams cotsfort: here a shepheardes boy piping, as though he shoule neuer be old: there a yong shepheardesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemd that her voice toforted her hands to work, & her hadds kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the coutry (for many houses came vnder their eye) they were all scattered, no two being one by th’other, & yet not fo far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an accopanable solitarines, & of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you (said Musidorus, then first unsealing his long silent lips) what coutries be these we passe through, which are so diuers in shew, the one wat-ing no store, th’other hauing no store but of want.

The coutry (answered Chius) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrenes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing
The Countesse of Pembroke

passing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants (by them named Helots) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so vnhospitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entring for feare of being mistaken.

But this countrie (where now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and even harde by is the house of Kalendar whether we lead you: this countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men, as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of their sheepe: and therefore in the diviſion of the Arcadian estate are termed shepheardes; a happie people, wanting little, because they desire not much. What cause then, said Musidorus, made you venter to leaue this sweete life, and put your selfe in yonder vnpleasant and dangerous realme? Garded with pouertie (answered Strephon) & guided with loue: But now (said Clainus) since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of vs whose basenes is such as the very knowledge is darkness: geue vs leaue to know somthing of you, & of the young man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to enforme Ka-lander, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. Musidorus (according to the agreement betweene Pyrocles and him to alter their names) answered, that he called himself Palladius, and his friend Daphantus; but till I haue him againe (said he) I am in deed nothing: and therefore my florie is of nothing, his entertainment (since so good a man he is) cannot be so lowe
lowe as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all, his curtetie may be to helpe me by some means to seek my friend.

They perceived he was not willing to open himselfe further, and therefore without further questioning brought him to the house: about which they might see (with sitte consideration both of the ayre, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie additions to a great house, as might well shewe, Kalander knew that provision is the foundation of hospitalitie, and thrift the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable representling of a firme fitatelines. The lightes, doores and staires, rather directed to the vse of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet as the one cheefly heeded, so the other not neglectted; each place handsome without curiofite, and homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet flubberd vp with good fellowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleue it was exceeding beautifull. The servants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and servicable in behaviouer, testifying euen in their countenaunces, that their maister tooke aswell care to be serued, as of the that did serue. One of them was forth-with readie to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maister greatly fauoured: and understanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common greatnes, how so euernow eclipsed with fortune.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

fortune: He ranne to his master, who came presentlie forth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheardes, but especially applying him to Musidorus, Strephon privately told him all what he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be known.

No said Kalander (speaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a false witnes) doe better apparrell his minde, then you haue done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking Strephon by the shecue, deliuered him a letter written ioynently both to him and Clainus from Vrania: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leave-taking of Kalander (who quickly ghest and smiased at the matter) and once againe (though hastely) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leaving Musidorus euene lothe to part with them, for the good conversation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his chest vnto him, he opened it, and would haue presented the with two very rich iewels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening vnto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that fight Kalander soone judged that his guest was of no meane calling; and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, Musidorus found his sicknes (which the fight, the sea, and late trauell had layd vpon him)
grow greatly: so that fearing some sudden accident, he delivered the chest to Kalendar; which was full of most precious stones, gorgeously & cunningly set in divers manners, desiring him he would keep those trifles, and if he died, he would bestow so much of it as was needful, to finde out and redeem a young man, naming himselfe Daiphantus, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But Kalendar seeing him faint more and more, with careful speed conveyed him to the most commodious lodging in his house: where being possess'd with an extreme burning feuer, he continued some while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of sickness, so that in six weekes the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embassadour of his health, to the great joy of Kalendar: who, as in this time he had by certaine friends of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Messenia, set forth a shippe and a galley to seeke and succour Daiphantus: so at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might Either profite or gratifie Palladus.

For hauing found in him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration) by dayly discourses which he delighted him selfe to haue with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a piercing witte quite voide of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence as sweete in the uttering, as lowe to come to the uttering, a behauior so noble, as gaue a malestie to aduersitie: and all in a man whose age could not be aboue one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was euene enamoured with a fatherly loue towards him; or rather became his sernaunt by
The Countesse of Pembroke's
the bondes such vertue laid vpon him; once hee acknowledged him selue so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narration of the Arcadian estate, the King, the Queene, their two daughters, and their gardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this story.

B

Vt Palladius having gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answere of the shippes set foorth, Kalander one afternoone led him abroad to a well arrayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selue more then in any other delighted: the backside of the house was not the field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both field, garden, and orchard: for as soone as the descending of the flayres had delivered them downe, they cam into a place cunninglie set with trees of the moste tastpleaing fruities: but scarcelie they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were suddeainely stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicke bend, behind the thickeets againe newe beddes of flowers, which being under the trees, the trees were to them a Pavillion, and they to the trees a mosaiical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull
lightfull by counterfating his enemie error, and making order in confusion.

In the midde of all the place, was a faire pond, whose shalke closing was a perfect mirroure to all the other beauties, so that it bare the we of two gardens; one in deede, the other in shaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked Venus of white marble, wherein the grauer had vsed such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the mar-ble were framed in fitte places, to set forth the beauti-full veines, of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe Æneas, who seem'd (having begun to sucke) to leave that, to looke upon her faire eyes, which smiled at the babes folliç, the meane while the breast running. HARD by was a house of pleasure builde for a Sommer retiring place, whether Kalander leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workeman of Greece. There was Diana when Acteon sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had let such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame & disdaine; & one of her foolish Nymphe, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was Atalanta; the posture of whose lims was so liuclie expressed, that if the eyes were the only judges, as they be the onely seers, one would have sworne the very pic-ture had runne. Besides many mo, as of Helena, Omphale, Soile: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excel-lent beautie, & more excellent would have bene deemed, but that there stood betweene the a yong maid, whose
wonderfulness took away all beautie from her, but that, which it might seeme she gave her back againe by her very shadow. And such difference, being knowne, that it did in deed counterfeit a person living, was there betwene her and al the other, though Goddesse, that it seemed the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquisitiuenes an vncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of invention. Ka-lunder answered, that it was made by Philoclea, the yonger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were contained in that table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents: & that he would also have drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beautie, in her shepheardish attire; but that the rude clown her gardian would not suffer it: nether durst he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of suspicion. Palladini perceaued that the matter was wrapt up in some secrecy, and therefore would for modestie demand no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which Kalunder perceauing, well said he, my deere guest: I know your minde, and I will satisifie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of the question, but I will discouer vnto you, as well that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is deliuered vnto me: knowing so much in you, though not long acquainted, that I shall find your eares faithfull treasurers.
So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the provinces of Greece, hath euer beene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefits, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are the onely people, which as by their Justice and proudence gete neither cause nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, so are they not flurred with false prais[e to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wafting of their owne liues in rauening, that their posteritie should long after faire they had done so. Euen the Muses seeme to approue their good determinatiō, by choosing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that the very shepheards haue their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name Basilius, a Prince of sufficient skill to gouerne so quiete a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had set downe good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth serue as a most sure bond to hold the. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not only passe all his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke all the princes liuing. Wherof the cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration, as depth of wisdome, height of courage
The Countesse of Pembroke

courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre affection, as trueth of worde, meekenesse, courtesie, mercifulnesse, and liberalitie.

He being already well striken in yeares, married a young princes, named Gynecia, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of most unspotted chaftity, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie shee tooke a good course: for otherwise it would have beene terrible.

Of these two are brought to the worlde two daughters, so beyonde measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable creatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much so euer some men (harpe witted onely in euill speaking) haue sought to disgrace them. The elder is named Pamela; by many men not deemed inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receyue the worde of more) more sweetnesse in Philoclea, but more maieftie in Pamela: mee thought loue plaide in Philocleas eyes, and threatened in Palmela: me thought Philoclea beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeelde: Palmela beautie vied violence, and such violence as no hart could resiost: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; Philoclea so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolne into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope;
but teach hope good manners. Pamela of high thoughts, who avoides not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be void of pride; her mothers wisdome, greatnesse, nobilitie, but (if I can ghesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our Basilius being so publickly happie as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happiness as to be a beloved Prince, and so in his private blessed as to have so excellent a wife, and so ouer-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For, having made a journey to Delphos, and safely returned, within shor. space hee brake vp his court, and retired himself, his wife, and children into a certaine Forrest hereby, which hee calleth his desert, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of mean calling, who do all household services,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him selfe remains with his younger daughter Philoclea, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without having any other creature living in that lodge with him.

Which though it bee straunge, yet not so straunge, as the course he hath taken with the princeesse Pamela, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied truly with none other, but one Dametas, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke euer was without the pruileged of a bable, with his wife Mifs, and daughter Mopsa, in whome no witt can devise anie thing wherein they maie pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serue for a foile of her perfections. This doltish clowne is such, that you
The Countesse of Pembrookes

you never saw so ill auourd a visar, his behaviour such, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparel, even as I would wish him: Mis § his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splay-foote haue made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she observes 'decorum', having a sroward mind in a wretched body. Betweene these two personages (who never agreed in any humor, but in disagreeing) is issued forth miftresse Mopsa, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praisises in verse, I will only reapeate them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are thefe, which I haue so often caused to be song, that I haue them without booke.

What length of verse can servfe brave Mopsas good to show? Whose vertues strange, & beaties such, as no ma the may know Thus srowedly burnded the, how can my Muse escape? (shape. The gods must help, and prectious things must servue to shew her Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste: As smothe as Pan, as Iuno milde, like goddesse Iris safte. With Cupid she fore-sees, and goes god Vulcans pace: And for a tast of all these gifts, she steals god Momus grace. Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue, Her twinkling eies bedeckt with pearle, her lips as Saphir blow: Her haire like Crapal stone, her mouth O heavenly wyde; Her skin like burnisht gold, her hands like siluer were vntryde.

As for her parts unknowne, which hidden sure are best:
Herforehead, which well beleeue, & never secke the rest.
Now truely hauing made these descriptions vnto you, me thinkes you should imagine that I rather faine some pleasant devise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banished from his owne wits) could possibly make so unworthie a choyse. But truely (deare guest) fo it is, that Princes (whose doings haue beene often loothed with good success) thinke nothing so absurd, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way; & so falling into other questiones, he found some of his answers (as a dog sure if he could speake, had wit enough to describe his kennell) not vnsensible, & all vnttered with such rudenes, which he interpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them) that Basilius conceauing a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparent shew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no sooner take the Princes minde, but that there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, & shadowes of vertues found for Dametas. His silence grew wit, his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous simplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great persons, in loue with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that his weaknesse with his presence would much be mended. And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus hauing first given him the office of principal heardman, laftly, since he tooke this strange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritye (like too great a sayle for so small a boate) doth so ouer-sway poore Dametas, that if before he were a good
good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt me (I feare mee in deede) my master will in the end (with his cost) finde, that his office is not to make men, but to use men as men are; no more then a horse will be taught to hunt, or an ass to mannage. But in sooth I am afraid I haue given your cares too great a surfette, with the grosse discourses of that heavie pece of flesh. But the zealous greefe I conceive to see so great an error in my Lord, hath made me bestow more words, then I confess so base a subject deserveth.

CHAP. 4.


Hus much now that I haue tolde you, nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moued him to this strange solitari-nes hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one person living. My selfe & in deed more than conjecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely sonne, by name Clitophon, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the coppy
COPY which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed Citophon for the curiositie, which made him break his dutie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subject to be reucaled: but since it was done, I was content to take so much proffite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, have caried about me: which before I read vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named Philanax, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplic imbraseth integritie, besides his vnfained loue to his master, wherein neuer yet any could make question, sauing, whether he loued Basilius or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either fertile-ly yeeld to all appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fantasie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (Philanax then lying sick) had written vnto him his determination, rising (as evidently appeares) vpon some Oracle he had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this answere.

Philanax his letter to Basilius.

Most redouted & beloued prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue vised
The Countesse of Pembrokes

vled my humble service, both I should in better season, and to better purpose haue spoken: and you (if my speche had preuayled) should haue beene at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietues, I would then haue faied, that wisdome and vertue be the only destinies appointed to ma to follow, whence we ought to seeke al our knowledge, since they be such guydes as cannot faile; which, besides their inward comfort, doo lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue, or, if the wickednes of the world shoulel oppresse it, it can never be said, that euil hapneth to him, who failes accompanied with vertue: I would then haue faied, the heauenly powers to be reuerenced, and not searched into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, then their hidden counsels by curiositiie. Thesee kind of soohtfayers (since they haue left vs in our selues sufficient guides) to be nothing but fanstie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or insalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be preuented. But since it is weakenes too much to remember what should haue beene done, and that your commandement stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the maner of your determination dooth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you haue so gouverned this Region, that neither your Subjectes haue wanted iustice in you, nor you obedientie in them; & your neighbors haue found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendshippe, then make newe triall of your enimie. If this then have proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise prudence, generally to preuent all
all those things, which might encober your happines: why should you now seake newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then wisdome and goodnes: Why should you deprive your selfe of gouernment, for feare of losyng your gouernment? like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accounted of, arme vp your courage the more against it: for who wil stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subiects haue you in their eyes, let them see the benefites of your iustice dayly more and more; and so must they needes rather like of present suretices, then vncertaine changes. Lastly, whether your time call you to live or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you live to keep the both vnmaried; & as it were, to kill the ioy of posteritie, which in your time you may enjoy: moued perchance by a mis-understoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficiently against such fancies: once certaine it is, the God, which is God of nature, doth neuer teach vnnaturalnes: and eu'en the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loues should follow: Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene hetherto such, as hath beene most fit to restraine all euill: gueing their mindes vertuous, de-lights,
lights, and not greuing them for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall to a lodain straightning them,what can it doo but argue suspition, a thing no more vnplea-
fant, then vnsecure, for the preseruing of vertue: Leave womens minds, the most vntamed that way of any:see whether any cage can please a bird: or whether a dogge growe not fiercer with tying: what dooth iclousie, but firre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrayned: for they are treasures, or things of great delight, which men vse to hide, for the aptnesse they have to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once a-
waked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishment, then it had been before to haue kept the minde (which being the chiefe part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommend-
mendibg so principall a charge of the Princesse Pamela, (whose minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thousands such) to such a person as Dametias is (besides that the thing in itself is strange) it comes of a very euil ground, that ignorance shouuld be the mother of faith-
fulnes. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good, as his fortune may keepe him vnaffaied: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easilie changed, or easilie decei-
ued: & so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to haue been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commaundement and my zeale drawn me, which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hilles, or like a poore passenger that may splice a rock, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe, to stand wholly uppon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are, and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By
By the contents of this letter you may perceive, that
the cause of all, hath beene the vanitie which pos
siblith many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poor
baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the cer-
taintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing so
certaine, as our continual uncertaintie. But what in par-
ticular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether
(as you may see by one place of Philanax letter) he him-
selue distinctly knew. But this experience shewes vs, that
Basilius judgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune,
hath rather heard then followed the wise (as I take it)
counsell of Philanax. For, hauing lost the Steve of his
government, with much amazement to the people, am-
ong whom many strange bruits are received for cur-
rant, and with some apperance of daunger in respect of
the valiant Amphalus, his nephew, & much enuy in the
ambitious number of the Nobilitie against Philanax, to
see Philanax so adauanced, though (to speake simly) he
defere more the as many of vs as there be in Arcadia:
the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as
I told you, not sticking plainly to covesse, that he means
not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal haue an-
y husband, but keep the thus solitare with him: wher he
giues no other leue to visit him at any time, but a
certain priest, who being excellent in poetrice, he makes
him write out such things as he best likes: he being no
les delightful in couerfation, the needfull for devotions, &
about twentyspecified shepheards, in whom (some for ex-
ercises, & some for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreatio.

And now you know as much as my self: wherin if I
haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my
old eage, which in the very disposition of it is talka-
tiue: whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loues to
The Countesse of Pembroke

exercise that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it known but by utterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I wil say for my selfe, that I haue not laid these matters, either so openly, or largely to any as your selfe: so much (if I much sayle not) doo I see in you, which makes me both loue and trust you. Neuer may he be old, answered Palladius, that dooth not reuerence that age, whose heauines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and spiri-tuall part: and well might you haue alledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which haue shewed effects in your Prince, truly euen the laft, that he should conceiue such pleasure in shepheards discourses, would not seeme the least vnto me, sauing that you told me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe hauing beeene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by Strepbon and Claius, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheards as Homer speakes of, that be governours of peoples, then such senatours who hold their coun-cell in a shepecoate: for them two (saide Kalander) especially Claius, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, hauing neglected
neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they have not so much empyred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sporte to heare howe they impute to loue, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (faie they) with such a strength.

But certainly, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to those sportes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare how soone euene children will beginne to vsis. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in mecter, either loue whetting their braine, or long peace hauing begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the clowne Dametas will stumble sometimes vpon some Songs that might become a better brayne: but no sorte of people so excellent in that kinde as the pastors, for their living standing but vpon the looking to their beastes, they haue ease, the Nurse of Poecrie. Neither are our shepheards such, as (I heare) they be in other countries, but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther themselves looke, or their children giue daylie attendance. And then truely, it would delight you vnder some tree, or by some riuers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliuer out, sometimes ioyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes chalengings one of the other, sometimes vnder hidden formes vterting such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they haue most commonly one, who inuageth the price to the best doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to sette

D  downe
downe in writing all that is saide, saue that it may be,
his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudeness of
an unthought-on songe. Now the choyse of all (as you
may well thinke) either for goodnesse of voice, or plea-
santnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also
there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde me-
lancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes,
hauing come to spende their liues among the countrie
people of Arcadia; & their conversacion being well ap-
proved, the prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and
not onely by looking on, but by great courtesie and li-
beralitie, animates the Shephhardes the more exqui-
sitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no
caus to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them;
the blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather
goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to com-
pa. Neyther doo I accuse my maister for aduaun-
cing a countriman, as Dametas is, since God forbid, but
where worthinesse is (as truely it is among divers of
that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder
the highest rasing, but that he would needes make ele-
cion of one, the basenesse of whose minde is such,
that it finckes a thousand degrees lower, then the ba-
feft bodie could carrie the most base fortune: Which
although it might becaunswered for the Prince, that
it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then
any great aduauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman:
yet all honest hartes feele, that the trust of their Lord
goes beyond all aduauncement. But I am euuer too
long vpon him, when hee crosseth the waie of my
speache, and by the shaddowe of yonder Tower, I see
it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we
owe
owe to our stomacks, the to break the aire with my idle discourses: And more witte I might haue learned of Homer (whome euen now you mentioned) who never entertayned cyther guestes or hostes with long speaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading Palladius through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they vsed to suppe; Palladius assuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfullest trencher-men of Media.

CHAP. 5.

The sorrow of Kalanders for his sonne Clitophon. The storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their perfections, their love, their troubles, her impoysoning, his rare constancie, her strange refusall, their pathologies, her flight, his revenge on his rival the mischiefe-worker Demagoras, then Captaine of the rebell Helots, who take him, and Clitophon that sought to helpe him: but both are kept alive by their new captaine.

Vt beeing come to the supper place, one of Kalanders servuants rounded in his care; at which (his colouer chaungyng) hee retired him selfe into his chamber, commanding his men diligentie to waite and attend vpon Palladius, and to excuse his absence with some necessarie busines he had presentlie to dispatch.

Which
The Countesse of Pembroke

Which they accordinglie did, for some fewe dayes forcing the eleuces to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces neuer fo cunningly, Palladius perceaued there was some il-pleasing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe fet alone at supper, he called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him the matter of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the ende confessed vnto him, that his maister had receiued newes, that his lonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunft to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betwene the Gentlemanne of Lacedaemon and the Helots: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken pryloner by the Helots; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great raunfome for his life: but that the hate those payfaunts conceaued agaynst all Gentlemen was suche, that euerie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether vnto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which lossse had stricken the old Gentleman with suche sorrowe, as if abundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyred, tearing his beard and hayre, and cursing his old age, that had not made his grave to stoppe his eares from suche advertisements: but that his faithfull seruaunts had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (Philanax the gouernour refusing to deale in it, as a private cause, but yet giuing leaue to seeke their belt redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedaemon) of whom there were now gathered upon
upon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge Clitophon. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to liue is a griefe vnto him, & that euens his reason is darkened with sorrow yet the lawes of hospitality (long and holily observed by him) giue still such a way to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the straunger lodged vnder his rooffe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguiſh, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But Palladim could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in peeces with compassion of the cafe, liking of Kalanders noble behauiour, kindnesse for his respect to himwarde, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his deereſt friend Daiphantus, whom he judged to suffer eyther a like or a worſe fortune: therefore riling from the boorde, he desired the steward to tell him particularly, the ground, and euent of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumſtaunces, there might perhaps some waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward easilie in this sorte condifcended.

My Lord (said he) when our good king Basilius, with better succeffe then expectation, tooke to wife (euen in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes Gynocia; there came with her a young Lord, cousin german to herſelfe, named Argalus, led hether, partly with the loue & honour of his noble kinſwomā, partly with the humour of youth, which euer thinkes that good, whose goodnes he sees not: & in this court he receuued so good encreafe of knowledge, that after some yeares
The Countesse of Pembroke

spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions, that Arcadia gloried such a plant was transported unto them, being a Gentleman in deed most rarely accomplished, excellentlie learned, but without allwayne glory: friendly, without factiousnes: valiant, so as for my part I think the earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall acts then hee; howsoever now of late the fame flies of the two princes of Thessalia and Macedon, and hath long done of our noble prince Amphialus: who in deed, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him; but I say for my part, I thinke no man for valor of minde, and habilitie of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled to Argalus; and yet so valiant as he never durft doe any bodie injurie: in behauiour some will say ever-fadde, surelie sober, and somewhat gien to musing, but never uncourageous; his worde ever ledden by his thought, and followed by his deed, rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had ever good choyse of the receiuer: in summe (for I perceiue I shall easilie take a great draught of his praifes, whom both I and all this countrie loue so weel) such a man was (and I hope is) Argalus, as hardly the nicesteye can finde a spot in, if the ouer-vehement constancie of yet spotles affection, may not in harde wrested construactions be counted a spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which hath made bothe him, and it selfe in him, ouer all this country famous. My maisters soone Clitophon (whole losse gives the cause to this discourse, and yet giues me caufe to beginne with Argalus, since his losse proceeds from Argalus) beynge a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

fitters sonne) so truly of good nature, and one that can see good and love it, haunted more the companie of this worthie Argalus, then of any other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and friendlines, as hath brought forth the effectes which you shall hear. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, fister to my master, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire Parthenia, faire in deede (fame I thinke it felle, daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not Helena queene of Corinth, and the two incomparable fisters of Arcadia) and that which made her fairenesse much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire embafladour of a moft faire minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to judge it felle, then to showe it felle: her speach being as rare as pretious; her silence without fullennesse; her modestie without affectation; her shamefastnes without ignorance: in summe, one, that to praise well, one must first set downe with himfelfe, what it is to be excellent: for fo she is.

I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in reason to drawe liking with affectation: mens actions doo not alwaies crosse with reason: to be short, it did so in deede. They loued, although for a while the fire therof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowne by the bellowes of dispaire, upon this occasion.

There had beene a good while before, and so conti-

nued, a fiter to this fame lady, a great noble ma, though
The Countesse of Pembrokes

of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to Parthenias mother, named Demagoras: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly stout, louing no bodie but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake Parthenia: and pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so gilded ouer all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers minde) had giuen her consent; and vsing a mothers authoritie vpone her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not because she liked her choise, but because her obedient minde had not yet taken vppon it to make choyse; and the daie of their assurance drew neere, when my young Lord Clitophon brought this noble Argalus, perchaunce principally to see so rare a sight, as Parthenia by all well judging eyes was judged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance appointed, yet loue that saue hee had a great journeie to make in shorte time, hasted so him selfe, that before her worde could tie her to Demagoras, her harte hath vowed her to Argalus, with so gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired aboue all things to haue Argalus, Argalus feared nothing but to misse Parthenia. And now Parthenia had learned both liking and misliking, louing and lothing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of judgement; in so much, that when the time came that Demagoras (full of proude ioy) thought to receaue the gifte of her selfe, shee with woordes of resolute refuflall (though with teares shewing she was forie she must refuse) assurred her mother, she would first be bedded in her graue, then wedded to Demagoras. The chaunce was no more
more strange, then unpleasing to the mother: who beying determinately (least I should say of a great Lady, wilfully) bent to marry her to Demagoras, tried all ways which a Wittie and hard-harted mother could use, vpon so humble a daughter, in whome the only resisting power was love. But the more she assualted, the more she taught Parthenia to defende: and the more Parthenia defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that Argalus standing betwixte them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining vpon Demagoras, she sought all means how to remove him, so much the more, as he manifested himself an unremoueable suiter to her daughter: first, by employing him in as many dangerous enterprizes, as euer the cruel stepmother Iuno recommended to the famous Hercules: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to ouerthrow him, did set him vp vpon the height of honor, inough to haue moued her harte, especially to a man euer way so worthy as Argalus: but she struggling against all reason, because she would haue her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with Demagoras, the more vertuous Argalus was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquered in his coquests, and therefore still employing him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, she vsed all extremities possible vpon her faire daughter, to make her gene ouer her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to judge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constancie of affection: for, as to Argalus the world sooner wanted occasions, then he valoure to goe thorow them; so to Parthenia, malice sooner ceased, the her
her unaltered patience. Lastly, by treasons, Demagoras and she would have made away Argalus: but he with prudence & courage so past over all, that the mother took such a spiteful grief at it, that her heart brake with all, and she died.

But then, Demagoras assuring himselfe, that now Parthenia was her owne, she would never be his, and receiving as much by her owne determinate answer, not more desiring his owne happiness, then enuying Argalus, whom he saw with narrow eyes, even ready to enjoy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his conceit with all the mischievous counsels which dismayed loye, and envious pride could give unto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that Argalus was gone to his country, to fetch some of his principal friends to honour the marriage, which Parthenia had most joyfully consented unto,) the wicked Demagoras (I say) desiring to speake with her, with unmercifull force, (her weake arms in vaine resisting) rubd all over her face a most horrible poysne: the effect whereof was such, that never leaper lookt more vgly then she did: which done, having his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of her seruants, as redy to revenge as they could be, in such an vnexpected mischief. But the abominablenes of this fact being come to my L. Kalendar, he made such meanes, both by our kings intercession, & his owne, that by the king, & Senat of Lacedæmon, Demagoras was upon paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should have hated the fault, ioynde himselfe, with all the powers he could make, unto the Helots, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to haue a man of such authority among the)
made him their general: & vnder him haue committed divers the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed vpon Parthenia, Argalus returned (poore gentleman) hauing her faire image in his heart, and alredy promising his eies the uttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselues of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue passions with telling you the griefe of both, when he knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first knowledge could possibly haue Vertues aide so ready, as not euens weakly to lament the losse of such a jewell, so much the more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was vnrecouerable: but within a while, truest of loue (which still held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and euens a delight to be constant, faith geuen, and inward worthines shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the noble Argalus, that not orlely in such comfort which witty arguments may belsew vpon adhersittie, but euens with the most abounding kindnesse that an eye-rauished louer can expresse, he laboured both to driue the extremity of sorow from her, & to haften the celebration of their mariage: wherunto he vnfainedly shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had neuer been disinherted of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed vnto her: and for that cause deferred his intende reuenge vpon Demagoras, because he might continually be in her presence; shewing more huble serviceables, and joy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue this rare enspaffle, not to be hoped for of any
any other, but of an other Argalus: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: for, where she desired to enjoy him, more then to live; yet did she overthrow both her owne desire, and his, and in no forte would yeeld to marry him; with a strange encounter of loves affects, and effects: that he by an affection strong from excessive beautie, should delight in horrible sullenness; and she, of a vehement desire to have him, should kindly build a resolution never to have him: for truth is, that so in heart she loved him, as she could not finde in her heart he should be tied to what was unworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might have a fayre field to vie eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, and truely affectionated speeches, while he conjured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him so unhappy, as to think he had not only lost her face, but her hart, that her face, when it was fayrefl, had been but as a marshall, to lodge the loue of her in his minde, which now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beseeching her, even with teares, to know, that his loue was not so superficial, as to go no further then the skin, which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers: how could he be so ungratefull, as to loue her the lesse for that, which she had onely receiued for his sake? that he never beheld it, but therein he saw the louelies of her loue towarde him: protesting vnto her, that he would never take ioy of his life, if he might not enjoy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that overheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other
other answere but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I loue you: if I were Princesse of the whole world, and had, withall, all the blessings that euer the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my felfe, & them, vnder your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must confesse) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a icy for my hart to think of) haue accepted your vouchfaying me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would haue supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match Argalus to such a Parthenia: Live happy, deare Argalus, I geue you full libertie, and I beseech you take it; and I affure you I shall reioyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her felfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

But Argalus with a moft heauie heart still pursuieing his desire, she fixt of mind to avoide further intreatie, & to flie all companie, which (euen of him) grew vnplea(fant vnto her, one night she stole away: but whether, as yet is unknowen, or in deed what is become of her.

Argalus fought her long, and in many places: at length (despairing to finde her, and the more he despaired, the more enraged) wee of his life, but first determining to be reuenged of Demagoras, hee went alone disguised into the chiefe towne held by the Helots: where comming into his presence, guarded about by many of his fouldiers, he could delay his fury no longer for a fitter time: but setting vpon him, in despight of a great many, that helped him, gaue him divers mortall wounds,
The Countesse of Pembroke

wounds, and himself (no question) had been there presentlv murdered, but that Demagoras himselfe desired he might be kept alioe; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with some cruel execution to bee layd vpon him, but death came sooner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leisure to appoint his successor, a young man, not long before delivered out of the prison of the King of Lacedemon, where hee should hauie suffered death for hauing slaine the kings Nephew: but him he named, who at that time was absent, making roades vpon the Lacedemonians, but being returned, the rest of the Helots, for the great liking they conceived of that yong man, (especially because they had none among themselves to whom the others would yeeld) were content to follow Demagoras appointment. And well hath it succedeed with them, he hauing since done things beyond the hope of the yongest heads; of whom I speake the rather, because he hath hetherto preserved Argalus alioe, vnder pretence to haue him publiquely, and with exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende of these warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous issue.

And he hath likewise hetherto kept my young Lord Clitophon alioe, who (to redeeme his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of Laconia, and forces gathred by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but he issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the Laconians, flew many of the noble-men, & tooke Clitophon prisoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth alioe: the Helots being villanously cruel; but he tempereth the so, sometimes by folowinge their humor, sometimes by struing with it, that hetherto hee hath saued both
both their lives, but in different estates; Argalus being kept in a close & hard prison, Clitophon at some libertie.

And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selues little of their safeties, while they are in the Helots hands, I have deliver’d all I under stande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to Clitophon’s case, to be so particularly told, yet the stragenes of it made me think it would not be vnpleasent vnto you.

CHAP. 6.

Kalanders expedition against the Helots. * Their estate. Palladius his stratageme against them: * which prevayleth. The Helots resistance, discounsture, and re-enforce by the returne of their new captaine. The combat and enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius, and by their means a peace, with * the release of Kalander and Clitophon.

Alladius thanked him greatly for it, being eu’n passionatly delighted with hearing so straunge an accident of a knight so famous ouer the world, as Argalus, with whom he had himselfe a long desire to meet: so had fame poured a noble emulation in him, towards him.

But the (wel bethinking himself) he called for armour, desiring them to provide him of horse & guide, and armed al sauing the head, he went vp to Kalader, whom he found lying vpö the ground, haung eu’er since banished both
The Countesse of Pembroke

both sleepe and food, as enemies to the mourning, which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But Palladius rayfed him vp, saying vnto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord Kalander; let vs labour to finde, before we lament the losse: you know myselfe misse one, who, though he be not my fonne, I would disdayn the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorrow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will folow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, Kalanders spirits were so resuied withal, that (receiuing some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed himselfe, and those few of his servants he had left vsent, and so himselfe guyded Palladius to the place vpon the frontiers: where alredy there were assembled betwene three and four thousand men, all well disposed (for Kalanders sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and braue armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enemies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them leues they knew; but neither cunning use of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which Palladius soone perceiving, he desired to vnderstand (as much as could be deliverued vnto him) the estate of the Helots.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who hauing been of old, freemen and possessi- 
oners, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which
they had long borne; till of late the Lacedemonians through greediness growing more heauie then they could beare, and through contempt lesse carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practiue) let themselues in armes, and whetling their courage with reuenge, and grounding their resolutio upon despaire, they had proceeded with vnloked-for successe: hauing already take divers Towns and Castles, with the slaughter of many of the gentrie, for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for an excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any souldierly discipline, practiue had now made then comparable to the best of the Lacedemonians; & more of late then euuer, by reason, first of Demagoras a great Lord, who had made him self of their partie, and since his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them so valouroueslie, that (besides the time wherein Clitophon was taken) they had the better in some other great conflict: in such wise, that the estate of Lacedemon had sent unto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. Palladius hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to Kalander, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping Clitophon: but some deuice was to be taken in hand, wherein no lesse discretion then valour was to be vied.

Whereupon, the counsell of the chiefe men was called
The Countesse of Pembrokes

led, and at last, this way Palladius (who by some experience, but especially by reading Histories, was acquainted with stratagemes) invented, and was by all the rest approved: that all the men there should dress themselves like the poorest sorte of the people in Arcadia, having no banners, but bloudie showers hanged upon long stanes, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of drumme and sife, their armour they should aswell as might be, couer, or at least make them looke so rustlie, and ill-favouredly as might well become such wearers, and this the whole number should doo, fauing two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength, whereof Palladius him selfe would be one, who should hewe their armes chained, and be put in cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of Cardamile where Clitophon was captiue; and being come two houres before Sunne-set within vewe of the wallcs, the Helots alreadie descrying their number, and beginning to sound the Alarum, they sent a cunning fellow, (so much the cunninger as that he could make it vnder rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, delivered vnto the Helots assembled together, that they were countrie people of Arcadia, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then they, & therafore had put themselues in the field, & had alreadie (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten skore Gentlemen prisoners, who they had there well & fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in Arcadia, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the fielde against their Princes forces, they
they were come to them for succor, knowing, that daily more & more of their qualitie would flock vnto the, but that in the mean time, left their Prince should pursue the, or the Lacedemonian King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cause) fall vpon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for surety haue their prisoners (who were such me as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The Helots made but a short consultatio, being glad that their contagion had spread it selfe into Arcadia, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of Greece, besides their greedi-
ness to haue so many Gentlemen in their handes, in whose raunsoms they already meant to haue a share, to which haft of concluding, two things well helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of Lacedemon: the second, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breed a proude reck-
lesnesse in them: therefore tending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were Arcadians, with whom they had had no warre, neuer suspecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chains vpon the Gentlemen) they grunted not onely leaue for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; which being done, and Palladius seing fit time, he gaue the signe, and sha-
The Counte of Pembroke

king of their chaynes; (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easily loofe them;) drew their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting upon the ward, made them to fly either from the place, or from their bodies, and so giue entrie to all the force of the Arcadians, before the Helots could make any head to resift them.

But the Helots being men hardened against daun-
gers, gathered as (well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would have giuen a shrewd welcome to the Arcadians, but that Palladius (blaming those that were slow, hasting the that were forward, but especially with his owne ensample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the Helots, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger; at length, every particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then Kalander cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but Palladius wisht him (first scouring the fliotes) to house all the Helots, and make themselfes masters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the Helots had gotten new hart, and with divers fortes of shot from corners of streets, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captain, who though he brought not many with him (having disperft most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet possest by the Arcadians, he made them turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpet giue the lowdeft testimonie he could of his returne, which once
once heard, the rest of the Helots which were otherwise scattered, bent the otherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had beene a root, out of which (as into branches) their courage had sprung. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruel obstinacie. The Arcadians fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the Helots to recover what they had lost. The Arcadians, as in an unknowne place, having no succour but in their handes, the Helots, as in their own place, fighting for their livelihoods, wifes, & children. There was victory & courage against revenge and despair: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

At length, the left winge of the Arcadians began to loose ground, which Palladius seeing, he straight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed the, with such an overflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the Helots (whose eies soone judged of that wherewith the selues were governed) saw that he alone was worth all the rest of the Arcadians. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or disliked the effects of his doings: but determining that ypon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought onely to joine with him: which minde was no lesse in Palladius, having easily marked, that he was as the first mower of all the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselves to be the uttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the battle in noise and number, as it was surpassing it in brauery of fighting, & (as it were)
The Countess of Pembroke's

were delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines : both valiant, as men despising death, both confident, as unwon to be overcome; yet doutefull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already seen. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge should haue beene sharply visited, but that the auntwere was as quicke as the objection. Yet some lighting; the smarthe bred rage, and the rage bred smarthe againe: till both sides beginning to waxe faint, and rather desirous to the accompanied, then hopeful to live victorious, the Captaine of the Helots with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake Palladius vpon the side of the head, that he reeled astonied: and with all the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the Arcadians were reddie to shield him from any harme might rise of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in steed of purfuing that aduauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliever the pommell of his sworde, in token of yeelding, with all speaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his prisoner, then any others general. Palladius standing vpon him selfe, and misdoubting some craft, and the Helots (that were next their capitaine) wauering betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, saide the capitaine, hath Palladius forgotten the voice of Daiphantus?

By
By that watche worde Palladius knew that it was his onely friende Pyrocles, whome he had lost upon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, caused the retraite to be founded, Daiphantus by authoritie, and Palladius by persuasion; to which helped well the little aduantage that was of eyther side: and that of the Helots partie their Captaines behaviou had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the Arcadian side the good olde Kalander striving more then his old age could atchieue, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blake armes pulled their malicious sightes one from the other. But he that tooke Kalander, meant nothing lesse then to faue him, but onelie so long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreat to be founded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whome should he see nexte to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the Arcadians) but his sonne Citophon? But nowe the Captaine had caused all the principal Helots to be assembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receive a message from the Arcadians; Amog whom Palladius vertue (besides the loute Kalander bare him) hauing gotte principal authoritie, he had persuaded them to seeke rather by parley to recover the Father and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted made
made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therefore was done in orderly manner, giving them to understand, that as they came but to deliver Clitophon, so offering to leave the footing they already had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurt, so as they might have the father, & the sonne without raunsume delivered. Which conditions being heard and conceived by the Helots, Daiphantus perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can bee deare unto you: if you winne, it will be a bloody victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our selves that fame badde humour of revenge. Besides, it is like to stirre Arcadia upon vs, which nowe, by using these persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, leafe the king and nobility of Laconia (with whom nowe we haue made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of this quarrell to ioyne the Arcadians with them, & so breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in all deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with the harme of the euill successe) you shall find this way most safe and honorable.

The Helots as much moued by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were content therewith. Whereupon Palladius take order that the Arcadians should presently march out of the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and to avoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarrell might engender. This being on both sides concluded
concluded on, Kalander and Clitophon who now (with infinite joy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of Daiphantus: Clitophon telling his father, how Daiphantus (not without danger to himselfe) had preferred him from the furious malice of the Helots: & even that day going to conclude the peace (lest in his absence he might receive some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, upon promise he should take the parte of the Helots; which he had in this fight perfourmed, little knowing that it was against his father: but (said Clitophon) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saved me from many deaths, which already laid hold on me: which Kalander with teares of joy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But Daiphantus, who loued doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know how Palladius (for so he called Mushidorus) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiuing a brief declaration of Kalander, he sent him word by Clitophon, that he should not as now come unto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the Helots minds, that he would adventure him in their power, who was so well knowne with an unfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to return with Kalander, whether also he within few daies (hauling dispatched himselfe of the Helots) would repaire. Kalander would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, protestting, he would esteeme his house more blessed the a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for Argalus Daiphantus assured them that hee woulde die, but hee woulde bring him, (though
The Countesse of Pembroke's
(though till then kept in close prison, indeed for his safety, the Helots being so animated against him as els hee could not haue liued) and so taking their leave of him, Kalander, Clitophon, Palladius and the rest of the Arcadians swearing that they would no further in any forte molest the Helots, they straiget way marched out of the towne, carrying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were already within the limits of Arcadia.

CHAP. 7,

The articles of peace betwene the Lacedaemonians & Helots, Daiphatus his departure from the Helots with Argalus to Kalanders house. The offer of a strange Lady to Argalus, his refusal, and who she was.

The Helots of the other side shutting their gates, gaue them selves to burye their dead, to cure their wounded bodies: till the next day bestowing the chereful vfe of the light vp on them) Daiphantus making a generall conuocation spake vnto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope, or reason to imagine) haue deliuered vs out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alreadie swallowed. For all being lost, (had they had not directed, my
my return so iust as they did) it had bene too late to recover that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which means the truce beganne betwene vs, you may easily conceive, what little reason we haue to think, but that either by some suppleie out of Arcadia, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruities of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorow. But now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining Clitophon more hardly then his age or quarrell deferred, becomes a sharply learned experience, to use in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the conclusion between the Kings with the Nobilitie of Lacedemon, and you, which is in all points as your selues desired: as well for that you would haue grantted, as for the assurance of what is grantted. The Townes and Fortes you presently haue, are still left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay such dutties as the rest of the Laconians doo. Your selues are made by publicke decree, free men, and so capable both to giue and receive voice in election of Magistrates. The distinction of names betwenee Helots and Lacedemonians to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enjoy both names and priuileiges of Laconians. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in Spartan discipline: and so you (framing your selues to be good members of that estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer servants.

Which
which conditions you fee, care in themselves no more contentation then assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly, a forgetfulness decreed of of all what is past, they shewing themselves glad to have so valiant men as you are, jioned with them: so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of war is finished, and as you hated them before like oppressours, so now to love them as brothers; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by virtuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they stood vpon, which in the end I with your commiioners have a-greed vnto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king Amicas procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kil his nephew Eurileon, but how soever it be, I haue concidenced. But so will not wee cryed almost the whole assemblie, couceiling one an other, rather to trye the uttermost event, then to loose him by who they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferre such an opportunity before a vaine affection, but yet could not preuaile, til openly he sware, that he would (if at any time the Late-demonians brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setting them in perfect or-der, hee tooke his leave of them, whose eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and after making temples vnto him as
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

31

to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to have a wit so farre ouergoing his age, and such dreadful terror proceed from so excellent beautie. But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for Argalus, whom also (vppon oath never to beare armes against the Helots) he deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Jewells of his owne, he would have parted alone with Argalus (whose countenaunce well shewed, while Parthenia was lost he counted not himself delivered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into Arcadia. Where again leaving the all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the wel-knowne house of Kalander: There was he receiued with louing joye of Kalander, with joyfull loue of Palladius, with humble (though douful) demeanor of Argalus (whom specially both he and Palladius regarded) with gratefull seruifablenes of Clitophon, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashefull kinde of modestie, as if shee feared the eyes of men, who was vnmooued with sight of the most horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had mistaken her woroke to haue a Marses heart in a Cupides bodye: All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they had seene the uttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder Palladius had before stirred, but that Daiphantus, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the advantage in the moyst & fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all men
The Countesse of Pembrokes

men (saving poore Argalus) made the ioy of their eyes speake for their harts towards Daiphantus: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleafant aduenture among the.

It was that as they had newly dined, there came into Kalander a messenger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the fair Helen Queene of Corinth; was come thether, and desired to be lodged in his house. Kalander ( most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie guests with him, saving onely Argalus, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his solitarie queft after Parthenia. But when they met this Lady; Kalander streight thought he sawe his nece Parthenia, and was about in such familiar sorte to have spoken vnto her: But she in graue and honorable manner giuing him to understand that he was mistaken, he halfe ashamed, excused him selfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; shee said, it might very well be, hauing bene many times taken one for another. But assoone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest her, she desired to speake with Argalus publickly, who she heard was in the house. Argalus came in hastely, and as hastelie thought as Kalander had done, with sodaine chaunges of ioye into sorrow. But she where she had staid their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this sorte spake vnto him. My Lord Argalus, sayd she, being of late left in the court of Queene Helen of Corinth, as chiefe in her absence (she being vpô some occasion gone thece) there.
there came vnto me the Lady Parthenia, so disguysed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so ougly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofs, she could make me thinke that she was Parthenia. Yet at last finding certenly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had ever told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betweene vs, I tooke the best care I could of her land of her understanding the whole tragically historie of her undeserved aduenture: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord Argalus: which whosoever loues not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthie to live in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could value the inward fores of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly desiring, and persuading me, to thinke of no husbande but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loued; with-all, she gaue me this Ring to deliuer you, desiring you, & by the authoritie of loue comauading you, that the affection you bare her you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who shoulde rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceeding: and therefore I am come (with faithfull loue built vp o your worthines) to offer my selfe, & to beseech you to accept the offer, & if these noble gëdemë prefer will say it is great folly, let the withal, say it is great loue. And then he staid, earnestly attending Argalus his answere, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could, to Parthenia) thus answered her.

M. a
Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I vnto you, for this, no more rare, then noble courtesie; but most bound for the goodnes I perceiue you shewed to the lady Parthenia, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes, but he followed on) and as much as fo vnfortunate a man, fitle to be the spectacle of miserie, can doo you seruice; determine you have made a purchase of a flaue (while I liue) neuer to fayle you. But this great matter you propose vnto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see what happines it should be vnto mee; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before al other, should haue it; but Parthenias it is, though dead: there I began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I shall not long tarry after her, with whose beautie if I had onely been in loue, I should be so with you, who haue the same beautie; but it was Parthenias selfe I loued, and loue, which no likenes can make one, no comandement disloque, no foulnes defile, nor no death finish. And shall I receive (said she) such disgrace, as to be refus'd? Noble Ladie (said he) let not that harde word be vsed, who know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert: but it is onely happinesse I refus'e, since of the onely happines I could and can de- fire, I am refus'd.

He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbrasing him, Why then Argalus (said she) take thy Parthenia, and Parthenia it was in deede. But because sorrow forbad him too soon to beleue, she told him the truth, with all circumstances, how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitarie place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the Queen Helen of Corinth (who likewise felt her part of miseries) being then
then walking also alone in that louely place, heard her, and never left, till she had known the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pittyng, she sent her to a Phisition of hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could helpe her: which in such sorte as they saw perforrned, and she taking with her of the Queens seruaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true Parthenia, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the Corinthian Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and Argalus easily perswaded to what more then ten thousand yeares of life he desired: and Kalander would needes haue the mariage celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare guestes, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of hospitalitie) carried with loue and dutie: & therefore omitted no service that his wit could invent, and his power minister.

CHAP. 8.

The adventures first of Musidorus, then of Pyrcoles since their shipwracke, to their meeting. The mariage of Argalus and Parthenia.

Vt no waie he fawe he could so much pleasure them, as by leaving the two friends alone, who being shrunkne aside to the banqueting house where the pictures were; there Palladius recounted unto him, that after they had both abondoned the burning ship (& either
of them taken some thing under him the better to support him to the shore) he knew not how; but either with over-labouring in the fight and sodaine colde, or the too much receiving of salt water, he was past himself: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to do) the chest that was under him, he was cast on the sands, where he was taken vp by a couple of Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning himself, when he despaired of his safety. How after hauing failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the Shepheardes persuasione come to this Gentlemans house; where being dangerous sicke, he had yielded to seeke the recovery of health, onely for that he might the sooner go seeke the deliverie of Pyrocles: to which purpose Kalander by some friends of his in Messenia, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of Clitophons taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. The did he set foorth vnto him the noble entertainment and careful cherishing of Kalander towards him, & so vpon occasion of the pictures present deliucred with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what Kalander had told him touching the strange storie (with all the particularities belonging) of Arcadia, which did in many sorte so delight Pyrocles to heare; that he would needs have much of it againe repeated, and was not contente till Kalander himselfe had answered him divers questions.

But first at Musidorus request, though in brief maner, his mind much running vpo the strange storie of Arcadia, he did declare by what course of aduertures he was come to make vp their mutuall happiness in meeting.
When (cosin, said he) we had stript our selves, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swum a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of the shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came alue to the shore, you would seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perish as to live, so that place as good to perish in as an other. There I found my sworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confess) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall waving it about my head, that faylers by it might have the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde prisoner, presentlie sett vppon another shippe, and maintaining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the sworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie praye one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as love is careful, and misfortune subject to doubtfulness) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I fought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwise I would haue bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kings of Lacedemon hauing sett out some Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephevs to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to
kil Eurileon the Kings nephew: but in the end they prevailed, & we were all taken prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (only keeping the name of Daphnius, according to the resolution you know is betwixt vs,) but being laid in the iayle of Tenaria, with speciall hate to me for the death of Eurileon, the popular sort of that towne conspired with the Helots; and so by night opened them the gates, where entering, and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so delivered me; and I moued with gratefulnesse, and encouraged with carelesnesse of life, so behaued my selfe in some conticts they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking vnsensible wonders of mee, and withall so much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of Lacedemon, (their chiefe Captayne beynge slaine as you knowe by the noble Arga-lus, who helped thereunto by his persuasio) hauing borne a great affection vnto me, and to auoyde the danegrous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who should haue the place, and all so affected, as rather to have a stranger then a competitor, they elected mee, (God wotte little proude of that dignite,) restoring vnto mee such things of mine as being taken first by the pyrates, and then by the Lacedemonians, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my success with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you delievered Clisophon, whom I with much ado had preserved. And in my peace the King Amilas of Lacedamon would needes haue mee bannished, and depreved of the dignitie where-
whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to travaile over the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere Musidorus) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kissinge each other) they called Kalander, of whom Daiphantus desried to heare the full storie, which before hec had recounted to Palladius, and to see the letter of Philanax, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene Argalus and the faire Parthenia beyng to be celebrated, Daiphantus and Palladius seling some of their jew- els, furnished themselves of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckings so much beautifull, nor all the daintie devises so much delight, as the fairenesse of Parthenia, the pearle of all the maydes of Mantinae: who as shee went to the Temple to bee married, her eyes them- selves seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepe close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kind of natu- rall swelling, they seemed to invite the guestes that lookt on them; her cheakes blushing, and withal when shee was spoken vnto, a little smyling, were like roses, when their leaues are with a little breath stirred: her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare shewe as if the voward slyled, yet that would conquer.
conquere. Daiphantus marking her, O Jupiter (said he speaking to Palladius) how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to Arcadia? But Palladius not greatly attending his speach, some daies were continued in the solemnising the marriage, withal conceipts that might deliver delight to mens fancies.

CHAP. 9.

Pyrocles his inclination to love. His, and Musidorus disputation thereabouts: broken of by Kalander.
fing the courte could not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapheardish people, he greatly desired a speedy returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden. But perceiving this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to haften his returne; whereto he founde him but smally enclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say vnto him.

A mind well trayned and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthy cousin) doth not easily change any course it once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded & well wayed causes. For being witnes to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be altered. Even the very countenaunce and behaviour of such a man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it, and the inward good, in yeeding it selfe suitable to the vertuous resolution of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friend Pyrocles) the excellencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo not sufficiently know, having seene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenes, and not your unworthines. But as in deedie I know it, and knowing it, most dearely loue both it, and him that hath it; so must I needs saye, that since our late comming into this country, I haue marked in you, I will not say an alteration, but a relenting truely, & a slacking of the maine career, you had so notably begun, & almost performed
The Countesse of Pembroke

formed; and that in such sorte, as I cannot finde sufficient reason in my great loue toward you how to allow it; for (to leaue of other secreteer arguments which my acquaintance with you makes me easily finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyfelt, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to giue your selfe vehemently to the knowledge of those things which might better your minde; to seake the familiaritye of excellent men in learning and soultiery: and lastly, to put all these things in practice both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie enterprisef, as occasion fell for them; you now leaue all these things undone: you let your minde fall asleep: beside your countenaunce troubled (which surely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heauen, is without cloudes) and lastly you subject your selfe to solitarines, the flye enimic, that doth most separate a man from well doing. Pyrocles minde was all this while so fixed upon another deuotion, that he no more attentiuely marked his friends discource, then the childe that hath leaue to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempest doth attend the vnskilful words of a passinger: yet the very sound hauing imprinted the general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike of so deereely an esteemed friend, and desirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefaile looke (witnessing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose. Excellent Musidorus, in the praiſe you gaue me in the beginning of your spech, I easily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde you
you have thought so well of me, if extreme of love had not made your judgement partial, nor you could have loved me so intirely, if you had not been apt to make so great (though undeferred) judgements of me; and even so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I have ever through weaknesses been subject, yet you by the daily med'ing of your mind have of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not discern, so that the change you speak of, falls not out by my impairing, but by your bettirng. And yet unde the leave of your better judgement must needs say thus much, my dec' cousin, that I find not my so holye to be condemned, because I do not with continual vehemency follow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde itself must (like other things) sometimes be vnent, or else it will be either weakened, or broken: And these knowledges, as they are of good use, so are they not all the minde may stretch itself vnto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts. Trulie as I know not all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges; but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselves. And in such contemplation, or as I think more excellent, I enjoye my solitaries, and my solitaries perchance is the nurle of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and they are but the epe, which alwaies heard together; cœ- demne not therefore my minde sometime to enjoy it selfe, nor blame not the taking of such times as serue most fitte for it. And alas, deere Musidorus, if I be sadde, who
The Countesse of Pembroke

who knowes better then you the iust causes I haue of sadnes: And here Pyrocles sodainly stopped, like a man unsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might we haue ferued to haue satisfied another. And so looking with a countenaunce, as though he desired he should know his minde without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward euill, sending againe new blood to his face, he continued his speach in this manner. And Lord(dere cosin, said he) doth not the pleasantnes of this place carry in itselfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you not see how all things conspire together to make this countrey a heauenly dwelling? Do you not see the grasse how in colour they exceil the Emeralds, orerie one striving to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to express? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their florishing olde age with the onely happines of their seat, being cloathed with a continuall spring, because no beautie here shoulde euer fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweet c6sent of their voyces: Is not euer ecbo therof a perfect Musicket? and these fresh and delightful brookes how flowly they slide away, as loth to leaue the company of so many things united in perfection; and with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainelie, certainly, cosin, it must needes be that some Goddesse enhabiteth this Regi-on, who is the soule of this soile: for neither is any, leste then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such a heap of pleasures: nor any leste the a Goddesse, could haue
haue made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiall dwel-
lings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rusfully casting his
eye vpon Musidorus, as more defirous of pitie the plead-
ing. But Musidorus had all this while helde his looke
fixed vpon Pyrocles countenance; and with no lesse lo-
ting attention marked how his words proceeded from
him: but in both these he perceived such strange diver-
sities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gaue
him ground to sette any judgement: for, besides his
eyes sometimes even great with teares, the oft chaging
of his colour, with a kind of shaking unstayednes over
all his body, he might see in his countenace some great
determinatio mixed with feare; and might perceive in
him store of thoughts, rather flirred then digested; his
words interrupted continually with sighes (which ser-
ued as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his
speech (though of his wotcd phrase) not knit together
to one constat end, but rather dissolued in itselfe, as the
vchemencie of the inwarde passion preuyied: which
made Musidorus frame his aunswere nearest to that hu-
mor, which should soohest put out the secret. For ha-
ung in the beginning of Pyrocles speech which defed
his solitarines, framed in his minde a replie against it, in
the praife of honourable action, in shewing that such a
kind of cotepiatio is but a glorious ride to idlenes; that
in actio a man did not onely better himself, but benefet
others; that the gods would not hauie deliuered a foule
into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instru-
mets of doing, but that it were intend the mind shoule
ploy the; & that the mind shoule best know his owne
good or euill, by practive: which knowledge was the
onely way to increase the one, and correct the other:
besides many other argumentes, which the plentifull-
nesse of the matter yeelded to the sharphnes of his wit
When he found Pyrocles leave that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and joyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor utter most store of passion; and euen thus kindly embracing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitariness, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe vp into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enjoy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be persuaded to follow solitarines. And euen so doo I give you leave (sweet Pyrocles) euer to defend solitarines, so long, as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the excessive praises you giue to this country, in truth it is not vnpleasent: but yet if you would returne into Macedon, you should see either many heavens, or find this no more then earthly. And euë Tempe in my Thessalia, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought vp together) is nothing inferior vnto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subject: or els you seeue sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easlie travaile over mountaines, as molehils: and so like wel disposed men, set vp every thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fantastical mind-infected people, that children & Musitias call Louers. This word, Louer, did no lesse persuade poore Pyrocles, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sick of the Tarantula. There was not one part of his body, that did not feel a sudden motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to d'uncce to the sounde of
that word; yet after some pause (lifting up his eyes a little from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of Musidorus) armed with the very countenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is nothing but guilty: with much a do he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as euene that miserable subiect of his conning, whereof you speake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainly cryed out Musidorus) that euery my care should be poysoned with so euill newes of you. O let me neuer know that any base affectio shuld get any Lordschip in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, Kalandder came, and brake of their discourse, with inuiting the to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which being harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good sporte, and drive away some part of Daiphantus melancholy. They condescended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished the selues as liked them Daiphantus writing a few vwords which he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.

Kalanders hunting. Daiphantus his close departure, and letter. Palladius his care, and quest after him, accompanied with Clitophon. His finding and taking on Amphilus his armor. Their encounter with Queene Helens attendants. Her mistaking Palladius.

Hen went they together abroad, the good Kalanders entertaining the, with pleaunt discoursing, howe well he loued the sporte of hunting when he was a young man, howv
The Countesse of Pembroke

how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights; that the Sunne (how great a iorning focuer he had to make) could never preuent him with carlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) dismayde him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding. O, saide he, you will never liue to my age, without you kepe your felues in breath with exercise, and in hart with joyfullnes: too much thinking doth confume the spirits: & oft it falles out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember how much Arcadia was changed since his youth: actiuntie & good fellowship being nothing in the pricc it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. The would he tell them stories of such gallants as he had known: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times haft, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining Accent craving libertie: many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it shouled they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liueries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staves in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to sounde an alarum upon a sille fugitue. The houndes were straight uncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimblenes of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but euin his feete betrayed him; for how focuer they went, they themselves uttered themselves to the sent of their enemies; who one taking it of an other
other, and sometimes beleeuing the windes aduertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull councellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein some kind of proportion, but the skillfull woodmen did finde a mutick. Then delight and variety of opinion drew the huntsmen sundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept till (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citizens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters; and even the Ninph Echo left to bewayle the losse of Narcissus, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leaving his flight) he was driven to make courage of despaire; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifye that he was at bay: as if from hotte pursuite of their enemie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

But Kalander (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besieged Deer; whom when some of the younger sort would have killed with their swordes, he woulde not suffer: but with a Croflebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the unkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among them that had killed him, Daiphantis was mist, for whom Palladius carefully enquiring, no newes could be giuen him, but by one that sayd, he thought
The Countesse of Pembroke

he was returned home; for that he marked him, in the
chiefe of the hunting, take a by way, which might lead
to Kalanders house. That answer for the time satisfying,
and they having performed all duties, as well for the
Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned:
some talking of the fates of the Deeres bodie; some of
the fairenes of his head; some of the hounds cunning;
some of their speed; and some of their cry: till coming
home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit
the Suns office) they found Daiphantus was not to be
found. Whereat Palladius greatly maruailing, and a day
or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could
help him to knowledge, at last he lighted vpon the let-
ter, which Pyrocles had written before hee went a hun-
ting, and left in his studie among other of his writings.
The letter was directed to Palladius himselfe, and con-
teyned these words.

My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into
such a course, whereof your knowledge may much more
vene you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concea-
ing it from you, since: if I wrong you, it is in respect
I care you. Returne into Theffalia, I pray you, as full
of good fortune, as I am of desire: and if I live, I will in
short time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

This was all, and this Palladius read twice or thrife
over. Ah (said he) Pyrocles, what meanes this alteration?
what haue I deferred of thee, to be thus banished of
thy counsels? Heretofore I haue accused the sea, con-
demned the Pyrats, and hated my euill fortune, that
derunned me of thee, But now thy selfe is the sea, which
drounches my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes
thy selfe of me: Thy owne will becomes my euill for-
tune
tune. The turned he his thoughts to all forms of ghesties that might light upon the purpose and course of Pyrro-
cles: for he was not so sure by his words, that it was
love, as he was doubtful where the love was. One time
he thought, some beautie in Laconia had layed hold of
his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be Par-
thomas excellencie, which had broken the bands of all
former resolution. But the more he thought, the more
he knew not what to thinke, armies of objections ri-
sing against any accepted opinion.

Then as careful he was what to doo himselfe: at
length determined, never to leave seeking him, till his
search should be either by meeting accomplished, or by
death ended. Therefore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing
tender respect, that his friends secret determination
should be kept from any suspicion in others) he went
to Kalander, and told him, that he had receaude a mes-
sage from his friend, by which he unnderstood he was
gone backe againe into Laconia, about some matters
greatly importing the poore men, whose protection
he had undertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit
for him, to follow him, but in such private wise, as not
to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid
him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as
either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and ta-
kine onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe
choise jewells, leaueing the greatest number of them, &
most of his apparell with Kalander: which he did partly
to giue the more cause to Kalander to expect their re-
turn, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitive after the:
and partly to leave those honorable thankes vnto him,
for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no
other way receaue. The good old man hauing nei-

Arcadia. Lib. i. 41

G ther
other reason to dissuade, nor hope to persuade, recea-
ued the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner,
but before he went, desired he might haue the happi-
ness, fully to know what they were: which he said, he
had euer till then delaid, fearing to be any way impor-
tune: but now he could not be so much an enemie to
his desires as any longer to imprison the in silence. Pal-
ladins tolde him that the matter was not so secrete, but
that so worthie a friend deserued the knowledge, and
shuld haue it as soone as he might speake with his frie:
without whose consent (because their promise bound
him otherwise) he could not reveale it: but bad him
hold for most assured, that if they liued but a while, he
should find that they which bare the names of Daipha-
tus and Palladins, would gine him & his cause to thinke
his noble courtese wel imploied. Kaldler would presse
him no further: but desiring that he might haue leave
to go, or at least to sende his sone and servaunts with
him, Palladins brake of all ceremonies, by telling him;
his case stood so, that his greatest fauour should be in
making lef ado of his parting. Wherewith Kalandar
knowing it to be more cumber then courtese, to striue,
abstained from further vrging him, but not from hartie
mouring the losse of so sweet a converstion.

Onely Chitophon by vehement importunitie obtey-
ned to go with him, to come againe to Daiphantus,
whom he named and accouted his Lord. And in such
private guise departed Palladins, though havings a com-
pangi to talke with all, yet talking much more with vin-
kindnesse. And first they went to Mantinae, whereof
because Parthenia was, he suspected there might be
some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes
of him he went to Tegea, Ripa, Enispe, Stimphalus, and
Pheneus.
Pheneus, famous for the poisonous Stygian water, and through all the rest of Arcadia, making their eyes, their cares, and their tongue serve almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of those places he was knowne. And so went they, making one place succeed to another, in like uncertainty to their search, manie times encountering strane aduetures, worthy to be registred in the roules of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of either side of which high hills lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleasamnes of their vnder-prospect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of the selues, inveted to light fro their horses, & pulling of their bits, that they might something refresh their mouths vpon the grass (which plentifully grewe, brought vp vnder the care of those well shading trees,) they the selues laid the downe hard by the murmuring musicke of certain waters, which spoutted out of the side of the hills, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion of sleepe, they rose, and walkt onward in that shadie place, till Clitiphon espied a piece of armour, & not far of an other piece: and so the sight of one piece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpiece & shield, by the devise whereof, which was he sreight knew it to be the armour of his cousin, the noble Amphialus. Whereupon (fearing some incouenience hapned vnto him) he told both his doubt, and his cause of doubte to Palladius, who (considering therof) thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on: lest perchance some violete
The Countesse of Pembroke

were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to set in ballance with any Knight living. Yet with a sodaine conceit, having long borne great honour to the name of Amphialus, Palladius thought best to take that armour, thinking thereby to learn by them that should know that armour, some newes of Amphialus, & yet not hinder him in the search of Daiphantis too. So he by the help of Clitophon quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too great, but yet servued well enough.

And so getting on their horses, they travailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses, furnished all in blacke, with a black a more boy vpo euery horse, they al appareled in white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black & white. But before they could come so neere as to discern what was within, there came running vpo them above a dozen horsmen, who cried to the to yeeld the-selues prisoners, or els they should die. But Palladius not accustomed to grant over the possession of him self vpon so vniust titles, with sword drawne gauze them so rude an answer, that divers of the neuer had breath to reply again: for being wel backt by Clitophon, & hauing an excellët horse vnder him, when he was overprest by some, he avoided them, and ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellows faults: and so, ether with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either living, or able to make his life servie to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, assuring the black boies they should haue no hurt.
hurt, who were els ready to haue run away, & looking into the coach, he fou'd in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but al as much darke
ned, as might be, with sorrow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well, they were but her servants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gentleman (whom he knew not) painted, having in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie having not so much as once heard the noise of this conflict (so had sorrow closed vp all the entries of her mind, & loue tied her eies to that beloved picture) now the shadow of him falling vp to the picture made her call vp her eie, and seeing the armour which too well she knew, thinking him to be Amphialus the Lord of her desires, (bloud coming more freely into her checkes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for scare) with a pitiful looke (like one vniustly condemned) My Lord Amphialus (said she) you haue enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leave you, & cuil fortune me, if not I pray you, (& to graunt, my praiser fitt time nor place you can haue) accomplish the one eu'n now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be slowly vttered in her offie
lying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares, that Pal-ladus could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet, Madame (said he) I perceve you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set ypon (without any cause giue by me) by some of your servants, whom be-cause I haue in my iust defence cuil entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo, I find greater cause, why I should cuil pardon of you.

When
The Countesse of Pembroke's

When she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, and seeing her men, some slaine, some lying vnder their dead horses, and striving to get from vnder them, without making more account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are well serued that durst lift vp their armes against that armour. But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour: for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to say vnto you. Palladies assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner, how he found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately vſed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your proues hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selfe hath giuen, as to garde me to the next towne. How great soever my businesse be fayre Ladie (said he) it shal willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first eu[n] by the favour you beare to the Lorde of this noble armour, I coniure you to tell me the storie of your fortune herein, left hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so strange a plight come before mine eyes, I condenne me selfe of want of consideration in not having demanded thus much. Neither aske I it without protetation, that wherein my sworde and faith may auail me, they shall binde themselues to your service. Your coniuration, fayre Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one unrelieueable) to graunt your wil herein: and to say the truth, a strange niceness were it in me to retraie that from the eares of a person represen{-}ting so much worthinesse, which I am glad eu[n] to rookes and woods to utter.

CHAP.
The story of Queen Helen, Philoxenus her suitor; Amphialus an intercessor for his friends. His praises, his birth, and education. Her love vomte to himselfe his refusal and departure. Philoxenus wringe-rage against him. Their fight. The death of sonne and father. Amphialus his sorrow and desolation of the Queen. A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour: whose griefe is amplified by meeting his dead friends dog. Palladius his parting with Helen and Clitophon.

Now you then that my name is Helen, Queen by birth: and heretofore possession of the faire Citie and territorie of Corinth. I can say no more of my selfe, but beloved of my people: and may justly say, beloved, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receive; also one, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suiters; some perchaunce loving my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoever my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom either birth or vertue gave courage to avowe so high a desire.

Among
Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord Philoxenus, sonne and heire to the vertuous noble man Timotheus: which Timotheus was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) love of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this sonne of his I must say truly, not unworthy of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of servisablenesse to mee, and on the forth of himselfe to win my favour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him than any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenaunce deliuered vnto him. Though I must protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it deliuered at all any affections, whereof my hart was utterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule, & thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whilsts Philoxenus in good sorte pursed my favour, and perchaunce nourished himselfe with ouer much hope, because he found I did in some sorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she loked vpon the picture before her, & straight sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and the her speach staied the tale, hauing brought her to that loke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But Palladius greatly pitying so sweate a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already known, and honoured, besought her for her promisse sake, to put silence so longe vnto her moning, till she had recounted the rest of this story.

Why saide she, this is the picture of Amphialus: what neede I say more to you: what care is so barbarous but bath
hath hard of Amphialus: who follows deeds of Armes, but every where findes monumet of Amphialus: who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of Amphialus: where are all heroicall parts, but in Amphialus: O Amphialus I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so: with that she wept againe, til he againe soliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of Amphialus: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of Amphialus?

This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to Basilius King of Arcadia, and in his childhood esteem'd his heir: till Basilius in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cousin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of Argos, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should liue under the power of Basilius sent him to that Lorde Timotheus (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought vp in company with his sonne Philoxenus.

A happie resolution for Amphialus, whose excellent nature was by this means trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue giuer him. The good Timotheus ) no lesse louing him then
The Countesse of Pembroke

then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres; and shortly occasions fell aptly to the Amphialus, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour overcame: which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his măhood, yet, as though therein he excelled himselfe, he was commonly called the courteous Amphialus. An endless thing it were for me to tell how many adventures (terrible to be spoken of) he achieved: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes vsing policy, some times force, but always vertue, well followed, and but followed by Philoxenus: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last Philoxenus having no greater matter to employ his friendship in, then to winne me, therein desired, and had his uttermost furtherance: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may justly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceive (and his wit can conceive as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forwarde the suite of his friend Philoxenus: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of Philoxenus, and of the great happines it would be vnto me to have such a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleue.

For why should I vse many circumstances to come to that where alredy I am, and euer while I liue must continue? In fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that he fighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so
Arcadia. Lib. I.

so full of beauty, sweetnes, and noble conversation, had entered there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling maner would describe the loue of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth loue between those lips! when he would with daintiest eloquence stirre pitie in me toward Philoxenus, why sure (said I to my selfe) Helen, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of Philoxenus, who indeede had but waited of him therein, alas (thought I) good Philoxenus, how evil doth it become thy name to be subscribed to his letter? What should I say? nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to express mine owne passions?

Dyes paste, his eagernes for his frendes neuer decreased, my affection to him euery increased. At length, in way of ordinarie courtesie, I obtained of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only Amphialus, I feare that I shall euer enjoy: and growen bold, or madder, or bould with madness, I discouered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I shall neuer forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing vnasayled, which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his frend, in sweet ternes making me receive a most resolute refusal of himself. But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speche could doo for his frend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulness (which commonly waits vpon absence) woulde make roome for his frende: to whom he woulde not vtere thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare
The Countesse of Pembroke

feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratefulness, nor yet to discourse so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to trauell into farre countreyes, vntill his friends affection either ceased, or preuayled.

But within a while, Philoxenus came to see how onward the fruits were of his friends labour; when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenance, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found jealousie and disdaine tooke hold of him: and yet the troward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chiefest let in my way, that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my favor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for Amphialus, as well as Amphialus had done for him: he neuer answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgave me some euill success: and yet though I had authority enoufh to have stayed him (as in these fatal things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes unwittingly accessarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whole faithfulness to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) have brought forth that which I feare I must ever rewe.

For he had travailed scarce a daies journey out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he over-tooke Amphialus, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had bene here stayed; and by and by called him to fight
fight with him, protest ing that one of the two should
die: you may easily judge how strange it was to Am-
phius, whose hart could accuse it selfe of no fault, but
too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to
fight with him) would faine have made Philoxenus un-
derstand, but (as my seruant since tolde me) the more
Amphius went back, the more he followed, calling
him Traitor, and coward, yet never telling the cause
of this strange alteration. Ah Philoxenus (saide Amph-
lius) I know I am no Traitor, and thou well knowest
I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with
this much, and let this fausse thee, that I loue thee,
since I beare thus much of thee, but he leaving words
drew his sworde, and gaue Amphius a great blow or
two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would
have slaine him; and yet so farre did Amphius con-
taine himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him, Well
Philoxenus, and thus much villany am I content to put
up, not any longer for thy sake (whom I haue no cause
to loue, since thou dost injure me, and wilt not tell
me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to
whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away,
and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make
me soone yeeld to be thy seruant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake
so fiercely at Amphius, that in the end (nature preuai-
ing aboue determination) he was faine to defend him
selfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye
blow the poore Philoxenus fell dead at his feete, ha-
ing had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby
Amphius knew it was for my sake: which when Amph-
lius
The Countesse of Pembroke

Philius sawe, he forthwith gave such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my servant said, no imagination could conceive greater woe. But that by and by, an unhappie occasion made Amphius passe himselfe in sorrow: for Philoxenus was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous Timotheus, who (having heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he found him dead before he could over take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confess, it is euen vnable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing Amphius and Timotheus as I have done. Alas what sorrow, what a malefement, what shame was in Amphius, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had lain upon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for Timotheus, forow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindnes of Amphius so deuoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but Amphius, Amphius, have I? he sank to the earth, and presently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily vsed to complaints, no nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tongues, durst it vnder-take to shew the vnspeakeablenes of his grieue. But (because this serues to make you know my fortune,) he threw away his armour, even this which you haue now vpon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe, and the (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lamenting, & even crying out so pittyfully, that my servant, (though of a fortune not
not vsed to much tenderenes ) could not restrained weeping when he tolde it me. He once ouertook him, but Amphialus drawing his sword, which was the only part of his armes ( God knowes to what purpose ) he caried about him, threatened to kill him if he followed him, and withall, had him deliuer this bitter meassage, that he well enough found, I was the cause of all this mischief: & that if I were a man, he would go over the world to kill me: but bad me assure my selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight ( whose cares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes ) now way my case, if at left you know what loue is. For this cause haue I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, aduerturing what perils or dishonors might ensue, only to follow him, who proclaims hatred against me, and to bring my neck unto him, if that may redeem my trespass & assuage his fury. And now sir (saide she) you haue your request, I pruy you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. Palladius willingly consented: but ere they began to go, there cam Clitophon, who hauing bene something hurt by one of them, had pursuued him a good way: at length ouertaking him, & ready to kill him, understood they were seruants to the faire Queene Helen, and that the cause of this enterprize was for nothing, but to make Amphialus prisoner, who they knew their mistresse sought, for she concealed her sorrow, nor cause of her sorrow from no body.

But Clitophon (very sorie for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing freely Construction of
of this rashly vndertaken enmitye, when in comes another (till that time vnseene) all armed, with his beuer downe, who first looking round about vpon the companye, as soone as he spied Palladius, he drew his sword, and making no other prologue, let fatie at him. But Palladius (forie for so much harm as had already happened) sought rather to retir[e, and warde, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his harte he pittied. Which Clitophon seeing, stept betwene them, asking the new com knight the cause of his quarrell; who answered him, that he woulde kill that theefe, who had stollen away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that Palladius lookt vpon him, and sawe that he of the other side had Palladius owne armour vpon him: truely (sai[ed Palladius) if I haue stolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you shall not fight with me vpon such a quarrell, you shall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But Clitophon straight knewe by his words and voyce, that it was Iomenus, the fa[thful & diligent Page of Amphialus: and therefore telling him that he was Clitophon, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who desuered all honour, the yong Gentleman pulle[ of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kisse Palladius hands, desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreme griefe, which easliie might bring forth anger. Sweete Gentleman (saide Palladius) you shall onely make me this amendes, that you shal carry this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an vnknowen knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot cast a greater miste over his glory, the by being vnkind to so excel[ta princeffe as
as this Queen is, Ixmenus promised he would, as soone as he durst find his master: and with that went to doo his duty to the Queen, whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardy, but as soone as she saw Ixmenus (looking to her picture) Ixmenus (said she) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said Ixmenus, I haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for as soone as the unhappie combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister castings of his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpō paine of death to follow him.

Yet divers daies I followed his steppes; till lastly I found him, haung newly met with an excellent Spainiel, belonging to his dead companion Philoxenus. The dog freight fawined on my maister for old knowledge: but never was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for louing his maisters murtherer, renewing a freshe his complaints, with the dumbe counceller, as if they might comfort one another in their miseries. But my Lord haung spied me, rase vp in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, If I would not displease him, I shoule not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a commandment for me to disobey: I yeelded, leaving him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armoure, found an other in steed thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any shoule beare the armoure of the best Knight living) armed my selfe therein to play the fool.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

foole, as euë now I did. Faire Ismenus (said the Queen) a siter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my ende.

With that (sobbing) the desired to be conducted to the next towne, where Palladius left her to be waited on by Clitophon, at Palladius earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with Ismenus (who went withall to a castle belonging to his master) he continued his quest for his friend Daiphantus.

CHAP. 12.

Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie. * Her habite, sung, & who she was. * Obiections of the one against women, and love of them. * The answeres of the other for them both. * Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindness.

O directed he his course to Laconia, as well among the Helots, as Spartans. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraven in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the univerall lamenting his absent presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the Elean province, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concouerse bless his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, esteeming
ming no bodie founde, since Daiphantus was lost. Afterward he passed through Achaea and Sicyonias, to the Corinthians proude of their two Seas, to learne whether by the streight of that Ithmus, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding euerie place more dumbe then other to his demandes, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months travaile in vaine) to make freshe searche in Arcadia; so much the more, as then first he bethought him selфе of the picture of Philoclea (in resembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing alreadie past ouer the greatest part of Arcadia, one day comming vnder the side of the pleasaunt mountaine Menalus, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiueneffe) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete stayes make speedie iournyes. And therefore lighting downe, and unbrideling his horse, he him selſe went to repose him selſe in a little wood he saw thereby. Where lying vnder the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which perfwaded, and obtayned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face, but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceuue the hanging of her haire in faireſt quaſitive, in locks, some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a careleſſe care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a pateme,
whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearle, and so joyned all over with gold wiers, and couered with feathers of diuers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so bravely it was held vp from the head. Upon her bodie she ware a doubler of skie colour sattin, couered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with precious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discerne the small of her leg, which with the foot was dressed in a short paitre of crimson velvet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Over all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming vnder the right arme, and couering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely vpon the top of the shouder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche iewell: the devise wherof (as he after law) was this: a Hercules made in little founme, but a distaffeset within his hand as he once was by Omphales commandement with a worde in Grecke, but thus to be interpreted, Neuer more va- liant. On the same side, on her thigh she ware a sword, which as it witnessing she to be an Amazon, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a need- les weapon, since her other forces were without withstandinge. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so louingly interlaced one the other, that
that it could resist the strongest violence of eye-sight, but she went into it by a door she opened, which moved him as warily as he could to follow her, and by and by he might hear her sing this song, with a voice no less beautiful to his ears, then her goodliness was full of harmonic to his eyes.

Transform'd in show, but more transform'd in minde,
I cease to strive with double conquest spoil'd:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treason spoil'd.

For from without came to mine eyes the blove,
Where to mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld,
Both these confir'd poor Reasons overthrove;
False in myselfe, thus have I lost the field.

Thus are my eyes still Captive to one sight:
Thus all my thoughts are slaves to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his servants yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transform'd to your will.

What maruaille then I take a woman's biew,
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him some suspicion, but the voice gaue him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the dore, and entering into the arbour, he perceaued in deed that it was Pyra-cles thus disguis'd, wherewith not receauing so much joy to have found him, as griefe so to have found him, amazedly looking vpon him (as Apollo is painted when he saw Daphne sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not
The Countesse of Pembroke

not able to bring forth a worde. So that Pyrocles (who had as much shame, as Musidorus had sorrow) rising to him, would have formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinuation being of blushing, and his division of sighes, his whole oration stood upon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time Musidorus had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gafffull countenaunce vpon him (as if he would conjure some strange spirits) he thus spake vnto him.

And is it possible, that this is Pyrocles, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercise of vertue; or is it indeed some Amazon that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vexe me? for likelier sure I would have thought it, that any outwarde face might have bene disguised, then that the face of so excellent a mind could haue bene thus blemished. O sweete Pyrocles, separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fit it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not onely expectation, but prooste, desired of your olde Father, and wanted of your natue countrie, now so neere your home, to diuert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse, to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to overthrow all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired hauen, or like an ill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie.

Remem-
Remember (for I know you know it) that if we will be men, the reasonable parte of our soule, is to have absolute commandement, against which if any sensual weaknes arise, we are to yeeld all our sounde forces to the overthrowing of so unnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an aduersey, that in it selfe is nothinge but weakenesse? Nay we are to resolve, that if reason direct it, we must doe it, and if we must doe it, we will doe it ; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely every waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this womanish habit (without you frame your behauiour accordingly) is wholy vaine: your behauiour can never come kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So that you must resolve, if you will playe your parte to any purpose, whatsoever peevish affections are in that sexe, soften your hart to receiue them, the very first downe-stappe to all wickednes: for doe not deceiue your selfe, my deere cosin, there is no man sodainely excellently good, or extremely euill, but growes eithers as hee holdes himself vp in vertue, or lets himself slide to vi-tiousnes. And let vs see, what power is the author of all these troubles: forsooth loue, loue, a passion, and the basest and fruitelesse of all passions: fear bredeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe ; and so all generally haue power towards some good by the direction of right Reason. But this bastarde Loue (for in deed the name of Loue is most vnworthylie
The Counte( of Pembrokes

apply to (so hatefull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt lust and idlenes; as the matter it workes upon is nothing; but a certaine base weakenes, which some gentlefooles call a gentle hart; as his adjoyed companions be vnquietnes, longings, fond comforts, faint discomforts, hopes, ielou(ies, vngrounded rages, caufle yeeldings; so is the hieft ende it aspires vnto, a little pleasure with much paine before, and great repen- tence after. But that end how endless it runs to infi- nite euils, were fit inough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with Kalander and of friendship with me) it vttterly subuerts the course of nature, in making reason giue place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-pon it first gat the name of Loue: forindeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the louver into the thing loued, vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of loue imitate the excellent; for as the loue of heauen makes one heauenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; so doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effemi- nate loue of a woman doth so womanish a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an Amaz- on, but a launder, a distaff-spinner; or what so euer o- ther vile occupation their idle heads can imagin, & their weake hands perforne. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you have bene, or what
what you must be: if you consider what it is, that moved you, or by what kind of creature you are moved, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungerous, your selfe so vnworthie to runne into the one, or to be druen by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly have occasion rather to praise you for haung conquered it, then to give you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in Pyrocles this speech wrought no more, but that he, who before he was espied, was afraid, after being perceived, was ashamed, now being hardly rub'd vpon, lefte both feare and shame, and was moved to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to Musidorus struing with it, he thus, partly to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answere. Cosin, whatsoever good disposition nature hath bestowed vpon me, or how soever that disposition hath bene by bringing vp confirmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wilt dome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I have my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, the I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a woman, & nursed of a woman. And certeily (for this point of your speach doth neereft touch me) it is strange to see the vnman-like cruelty of mankind, who not content with their tyrannous ambition, to haue brought the others vertuous patience vnder them (like to childish masters) thinke their masterhood nothing, without, doing iniury to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, even this estate of Amazons, (which I now for my greatest honor doe seek to counterfaite) doth well witnes, that if generally the sweetnes of their disposition did not make them
The Countesse of Pembroke

them see the vainness of these things, which we accept glorious, they neither want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praters of men, should remember, that if we haue such excellencies, it is reason to think them excellent creatures, of whom we are: since a Kite never brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it superfluous to vse any wordes of such a subject, which is so praised in it selfe, as it needes no praises; so whithall I feare left my conceate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes, which for their vnworthines may be a disgrace vnto the I so inwardly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue: & vertue (ye your selues say) is to be loued, & I too truly: but this I willingly confess, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to seeke it in an ill favoured creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an vn-ciuill guest to Kalander, if you could feele what an inward guest my selue am host vnto: ye would thinke it very excusable, in that I rather performe the dutties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendshipe with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me gives me reason to my former dealing. And here Pyrocles stayed, as to breath himselfe, hauing bene transportted with a little vehemency, because it seemed him Musidorus had ouer-bitterly glaunted against the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aswell as out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Loue
Loue (said he) deare cosin, is little beholding vnto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of the highest power of the mind, which notable me have attributed vnto it; but ye deicet it below all other passions, in trueth somewhat strangely, since, if loue receive any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter objections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare Musidorus, then loue: But I am good witnessse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende myselfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self; for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stir me vp as ye did, by remembrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, thee must ye confesse, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart; & so no dout hath it, whatsoever I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom shal we loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should loue this word vertue, where I see it written in a book. Those troublesome effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues; as an vnable vessel to beare such a licour: like euill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, soonest overthrowe with best wine. Euen that heavenly loue you speake of, is accompanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispaires. And in that heavenly loue, since ther are two parts, the one the loue it self, th'other the excellency of the thing loued; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is loue it self; which when I have a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

...it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I wear a woman's apparel; I will be the more womanish since, I assure you (for all my apparel there is nothing I desire more, then fully to prove my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for love, and most of all for that divine creature, which hath join'd me and youe together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in words to defende the noble desire which possesteth me. O Lord (saide Musidorus) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Even so (said Musidorus) as every base occupation makes one sharp in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered Pyrocles) as each excellent thing once well learned, serves for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said Musidorus) a measure for other things, which never receiued measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered Pyrocles,) because the workings of it are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted vnto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enjoying, answered Pyrocles, with a great sigh. O (said Musidorus) now set ye forth the balenes of it: since if it ende in enjoying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mi-stake me (answered Pyrocles) I spake of the end to which it is directed, which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine dis-enchaunt you (said Musidorus.) My hart is too farre possest (said Pyrocles.) But
But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life; answere Pyrocles.

But Musidorn was so greeued to see his wellbeloved friend obstinat, as he thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words: Well, well, (faide he) you lift to abufe your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly glosse of a visage: Confesse the truth; and ye shall finde, the utmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed vpon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slave vnto in another. For my part I now protest I haue left nothing unsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most entier friendship to you requires of me; I do now beseech you even for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the remembrance of your olde careful father (if you can remeber him that forget your self) lastly for Pyrocles owne sake (who is now vpon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection; other wise giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of friendship, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied Pyrocles, though he were very vnpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewell of him he loued as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicted, he was the apter to con-
The Countesse of Pembroke

ciue vnkindnesse deeply: insomuch, that shaking his head, and deliivering some shewe of teares, he thus vtttered his griefes. Alas (said he) prince Musidorus, how cruelly you deale with me; if you seeke the victoy, take it; and if ye list, triumph. Haue you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be persuwaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fetheres. But truely you deale with me like a Physition, that seeing his patient in a pestilent feuer, should chide him, in stead of ministring helpe, and bid him be sick no more; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison; and loaden with grecuous fetters, should will him to shake of his fetters, or he wuld leaue him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death; I am a prisoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am flaue. Now if you list to leaue him that loues you in the hieft degree: But remember ever to carry this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed afresh with this new vnkindnes, bega(as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but gushing-out abundance of teares, and crossing his armes ouer his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an ouer-pressing burthen, he funcke downe to the ground, which sodaine traunce went so to the hart of Musidorus, that falling down by him & kissing the weeping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene ouer vehem
Arcadia. Lib. 1. 56

ment, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a love much more vehement; that he had not thought fancy could have received so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploied all his service to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But even this kindnes made Pyrocles the more melt in the former vnkindnes, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent look vpó Musidorus, as who should say, And is it possible that Musidorus should threaten to leave me? And this frooke Musidorus minde and senses so dumbe too, that for grieues being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one vpon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of vnkindnes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that most dearely loue.

And thus remayned they a time, till at length, Musidorus embrasing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend? It is you that shake me of (saide Pyrocles) being for my vnperfectnes vnworthie of your friend shippe. But this (said Musidorus) shewes you more vnperfect, to be cruel to him, that submits himselle vnto you, but since you are vnperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be governed by vs wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take vpon me, with three absolute commandements: The first, that you increase not your cuill with further grieues: the second, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: & the last commandement shalbe, ye command me to do what service I can, towards the attaining of your desires. Pyrocles hart was not so oppressed with the mighty passions of
The Counteße of Pembroke

of love and unkindness, but that it yielded to some
mirth at this commandement of Musidorus, that he
should love: so that something clearing his face from
his former shewes of griefe, Wel (said he) deare cousin,
I see by the well shooting of your commandementes,
that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counsellor: and
therefore I am resolued to imploy all my endeavoure to o-
be you, with this condition, that the comandementes
ye command me to lay vpon you, shall onely be, that
you continue to love me, and looke vpon my imperfec-
tions, with more affection then judgement. Love you?
(said he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the
true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full
of it: But (said he) let vs leaue of these flowers of newe
begun friendship: and now I pray you againe tel me, but
tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of
your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assur-
ing your selue, that there is nothing so great, which I
will feare to doo for you: nor nothing so small which I
will disdaine to doo for you. Let me therefore receive a
cleere vnderstanding, which many times we misse, while
those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are
omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his con-
gruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene
friends, all must be layd open, nothing being superflu-
ous, nor tedious. You shallbe obeyed (said Pyrocles) and
here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be, for this ar-
bor no body offers to come into but my selue; I vsing it
as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that
respect is born vnto it; yet if by chace any should come,
say that you are a servant sent from the Q. of the Am-
azones to secke me, and then let me alone for the rest. So
lase they downe, and Pyrocles thus said.

CHAP.
How Pyrocles fell in love with Philoclea. * His counsel and course therein. * His disguising into Zelmanc.

Her meeting with Damætas, Basilius, the Queene and her daughters, & their speeches. * Her abode there over entreated; & and the place thereof described.

Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall overthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in Kalanders house, you your selfe deliuered vnto mee what you had understoond of Philoclea, who muche resembling (though I must say much surpasing) the Ladie Zelmanc, whom too well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poision. Yet alas so sweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, til Kalandre had made it more and more strong with his declaratió. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passió which to be desinde is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights, & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle
gentle nature. But qué this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encresced. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the Architecture of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be iudged, forsooth, of the painters cunning. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of uncertaine wishes, and that the wishes grew to vnquiet lon-}

gings, when I could fix my thoughts vpone nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with Philo-

cles: when each thing I law, seemed to figure out some parts of my passions, whé euén Parthenias faire face became a lecture to me of Philocles imagined beautie: when I heard no word spoken, but that me thought it caried the sum of Philocles name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arm my selfe, & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw upon the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to witnesse the eternall spring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, nor seene any thing; I had neuer any tatt of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted), I must needs confess, conquered; and that me thought euén reason did assure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the recurent friendship I bare vnto you. For as it went against
against my harte to breake any way from you, so did I
tearc more then anie aualst to breake it to you:finding
(as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute,counselie is
tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: & that there is
nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a
respected frié. This made me determine with my self,
(thinking it a leffe fault in friédship to do a thing with-
out your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this
secret course: Which conceit was most built vp in
me, the last day of my parting and speaking with you;
when vpó your speach with me, & my but naming loue,
(when els perchance I would have gone further) I law
your voice & couteunce do chaunce, as it assured me,
my revealing it should but purchase your grieue with
my cumber:& thersore (deere Musidorus) eué ran away
fró thy well knowne chiding:for hauing writte a letter,
which I know not whether you found or no, & taking
my chiefe jewels with me, while you were in the mid-
dest of your sport, I got a time (as I think) vnmarked, to
steale away, I cared not whether so I might scape you:
& so came I to Ithou:is in the prouince of Meffenis; whe-
lying secret I put this in pra<5life which before I had de-
ued. For remébring by Philanax his letter, & Kaláders
speech, how obstinately Baslius was determined not to
mary his daughters, & thersore fearing, left any publike
dealing should rather increase her captiuitie, then fur-
ther my loue; Loue (the refiner of inuentió) had put in
my head thus to disguise my self, that vnder that maske
I might (if it were possible,) get acceffe, and what ac-
ceffe could bring forth, commit to fortune & industry;
determining to beare the countenance of an Amázon.
Thersore in the closest maner I could, naming my selfe
I 2

Zelmane,
The Conteſte of Pembrokes

zelmane, for that decre Ladies take, to whose memorie I am so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which were harde at hand, by night, thus drest my selfe, resting till occasion might make me found by them, whom I sought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could haue laide it. For after I had runne over the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I ever delighted in, so now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to stir vp Poetical fancies, or rather as I thinke, of loue; whose scope being pleazure, will not so much as utter his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.

But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeased with my bad musike) comes master Dametas with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and swearing by the patable of Pallas, & such other othes as his rustical brauery could imagine; & whe he saw me, I assure you my beauty was no more beholding to him the my harmony; for leaning his hands vpon his bil, & his chin vpon his hadds, with the voice of one that plaith Hercules in a play, but never had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake to me, was, am not I Dametas? why am not I Dametas? he needed not name him selfe: for Kalanders description had set such a note vpon him, as made him very notable vnto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not descend so much as to make him any answer, but continued on my inward discourses: which (he perchaunce wintes of his owne unworthy thines, & therefore the ater to thinke him selfe conte ned) tooke in so hainous manner, that standing vpon his tip-toes, and staring as though he would haue a more pulled
pulled out of his eye, why (said he) thou woman, or boy, or both, what fencer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Prince's pleasure, I tell thee it is Dametas pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these wordes to my selfe: O spirite (saide I) of mine, how canst thou receaue anie mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and thou mirth how dareft thou enter into a minde so growne of late thy professed enemie? Thy spirite (saide Dametas) doost thou thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am Basilius officer, and have charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (saide I sobbing) that so vile an oyster should kepe thee? By the combe-case of Diana (Iware Dametas) this woman is mad: oysters, and pearles: doost thou thinke I will buie oysters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my lesson, so that I forgot al Zelmanes ship, and drawing out my sworde, the basenesse of the villainye yet made me stay my hande, and he (who, as Kalander tolde me, from his childhood euer feared the blade of a sworde) ran backe, backward (with his hands about his head) at left twentie paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by Latonas prayers were turned into Frogs. At length staying, finding him selfe without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had past through the discipline of a Towerne. But seeing me walke vp and downe, without
marking what he said, he went his way (as I perceived after) to Basilus: for within a while he came unto me, bearing in deed shewes in his countenance of an honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courtesie, as Dametas with rudeness saluting me, Fair Lady (said he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as this should receive solitary persons; but much do I marvel, how such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a grave majestic upon him, as if I found in my self cause to be reverenced. They are never alone (said I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied Basilus) cannot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from suspicion in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your self. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seek no better warrant (said I) then my owne conscience, nor no greater pleasures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seekes to satiifie others, (said Basilus.) Those that be good (said I,) and they will be satisfied as long as they see no euill. Yet will the best in this country, (said Basilus) suspect so excellent a beauty being so weakely guarded. Then are the best but starke nought, (answered I) for open suspecting others, comes of secrete condemning themselves; But in my country (whose manners I am in all places to maintaine and reverence) the generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes every one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the assured foundation in themselves. Excellent Ladie (said he) you praise so greatly, (and yet so wisely) your country, that I must needs desire to know what the nest is, out of which such Byrds doe flye. You
You must first descree it (said I) before you may obtaine it. And by what means (saide Bafilius) shall I descree to know your estate? By letting me first knowe yours (answer'd I.) To obey you (said he) I will doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be knowne first, as you doo descree in all points to be prefered. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is Bafilius vnworthily Lord of this country: the rest, either name hath brought to your ears, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall understand of me. I that from the beginning affirred my selfe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a peice of reuerence vnto him. Mighty Prince (saied I) let me not knowing you serue for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little reverence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my country, which is the inuincible Lande of the Amazons: My selfe neece to Senicia, Queene thereof, lineally descended of the famous Penthesilea, slaine by the bloody hand of Pyrrhus. I hauing in this my youth determined to make the worlde see the Amazons excellencies, as well in private, as in publicke vertue, haue passed some daungerous adventures in divers countrees: till the vnmercifull Sea depruisd me of my company: so that shipwrack casting me not far hence, uncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But Bafilius (who now began to tast that, which since he hath swallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would vie to well paying passangers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires; yet had I learned alredy somuch, that it was against my wo-
The Countesse of Pembroke

manhood to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to prove whither intercessions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commanded Dametas to bring forth-with his wife and daughters thither; three Ladies, although of divers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in grave Matron like attire, with countenance and gesture suitable, and of such fairnes (being in the strength of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with just price have purchased admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the most dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children. The faire Pamela, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdain, that the trust of her vertue is repos'd in such a louts hands as Dametas, had yet to shew an obedience, taken on a shepeardish apparell, which was but of Ruffet cloth cut after their fashion, with a straight body, open breasted, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide sleeues: but beleewe me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiounnes of her body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to see how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which sweetly rase vp like two faire Mountainets in the pleaunt valley of Tempe) there honge a very riche Diamond set but in a blacke horne, the worde I haue since read is this; yet still my selfe. And thus particularly haue I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not so particulall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornamen of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumph of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of Loue
Loue, yong Philoclea appeared in her Nimphe-like apparel, so neare nakednes, as one might well discern part of her perfections; & yet so appareled, as did shew she kept best store of her beauty to herself; her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call the her beames) drawe vp into a net, able to take Jupiter when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body) couered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, inough to haue made your restraine imaginatio haue thought what was vnder it: with the cast of her blacke eyes, blacke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wunderfull shining, or that she, (goddesse like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in giuing blacknes the price above all beauty. Then (I say) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for euic, the roses me thought blusched to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe from the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast; Then the clouds gaue place, that the heavens might more freshly smile vppo her; at the left the clouds of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and forcible then euer) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to haue stayed long time, but that Gynecia stepping betweene my sight and the onely Philoclea, the chaunce of obiect made mee recover my senses: so that I could with reasonable good manner receive the salutation of her, and of the the Princess Pamela, doing the yet no further reverence then
The Countesse of Pembroke

then one Prince vseth to another. But when I came to the never-inough praised Philoclea, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse) with more then woman-ly ardency, Divine Lady, (said I) let not the worlde, nor those great princes maruaile, to see me (contrary to my manner) do this especiall honor vnto you, since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But she blushing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise, Noble Lady, (said she) it is no maruaile to see your judgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne with so great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, whom I my selfe owe all service. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that shewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do such an errour, if it were an errour. You are so well acquainted (said she sweetly, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne beautie, that it makes you easlie fall into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in mer (said I truely fying) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke) Baslius willing her so do, Well (said she) I must needs confesse I haue heard that it is a great hapiness to be praised of them that are most praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an invincible Amazon, since you will overcome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine some while in this cöpanie, to ease your owne trouail, and our solitarines. First let me dye (said I) before any word spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And
And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truly a place for pleasantnes, not vnfitte to flatter solitariness, for it being set vpon such an unsensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a prety height before almost you perceiue that you ascend, it giues the eye lordship over a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coutry, being diversified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with louly lightomes and artificial shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre, having round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each anwsering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gracious Pamela liueth: so that the Lodge seemeth not vnlike a faire Comet, whose taile stretcheth it selue to a starre of lesse greatnes.

CHAP. 14.

"The devises of the first banquet to Zelmane." Her crossoes in love, by the love of Basilius and Gynecia; The conclusion between Musidorus and Zelmane.

O Gynecia her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was invited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: wherein is
The Countesse of Pembroke's

is a banqueting house among certain pleasant trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shining of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasant to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heauenly Iris. There were birds also made to finely, that they did not onely deceiue the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the wa-trie instruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we fate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we fate, and that deuided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which Basilis at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne vnder, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make divers times the full circle round about, since Philosclea (being also set) was carried still in, equall distance from me, and that onely my eyes did ouertake her; which when the table was stayed, and wee beganne to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And so was my common fene deceived (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall stale a looke on her, me seemed I tasted her delicioussesse. But alas, the one thirte was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselfes open to receive all the dartes she did throwe, somtimes close vp with admiration, as if with a contrivie fancie, they woulde preferue the riches of that sight they had gotten,
gotten, or cast my lidde as curtaines ouer the image of beautie, her presence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reason (now growen a servant to passion) did yet often tel his master, that he should more moderatly vse his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, dildayned almost to allow him the place of a Counseller: so that my senses delights being too strong for any other resolution, I did even loose the raines vnto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would passe, either unmarked, or unsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my first acte, assuring my selfe, that vnder that disguisement, I should find opportunitie to reueal my self to the owner of my harte. But who would thinke it possible (though I feele it true) that in almost eight weekes space, I have liued here (having no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a lover) yet could never finde opportunitie to have one minutes leasure of priuie conference: the cause whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miserable. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that Basilius had of me (I think Cupid having headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was striken (taking me to be such as I professe) with great affection towards me, which since is growen to such a doting loue, that (till I was faine to gette this place, sometimes to retire vnto freely) I was even choaked with his tediousnes. You never saw fourscore yeares daunce vp and downe more liuely in a young Lover: now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in lone with a cloake, and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted Lover in Arcadia. Doo you not think that this is a fallet of worm.
woomwood, while mine eyes feede upon the Ambo-
sea of Philoclea beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he
(good man) were ealy enough to be dealt with: but (as
I thinke) Loue and mischeefe having made a wager,
which should haue most power in me, haue set Gynecia
also on such a fire towards me, as will neuer (I feare)
be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being
a woman of excellent witte, and of strong working
thoughts) whether she suspected me by my ouer-vehe-
ment showes of affection to Philoclea (which loue for-
ced me unwisely to vtter, while hope of my maske foo-
lishly encouraged me) or that she hath take some other
marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuil it is
hath revealed it vnto her, I know not; but so it is, that al
her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable
portraitures of a desperate affection. Whereby a man
may learne, that these auoydings of companie, doo but
make the passions more violent, when they meete
with fitte subiects. Truely it were a notable dumb shew
of Cupids kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with
ouer-veheement longing) direct themselues to Philoclea:
& Basilius as busie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cum-
bersome, making such suits to me, who nether could if I
would, nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terri-
ble witte of Gynecia, carried with the beere of violent
loue, runnes thorow vs all. And so iclous is she of my
loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to
open my mouth to the vnecuitable Philoclea, but that
her unwished presence gaue my tale a conclusion, before
it had a beginning.

And surely if I be not deceived, I see such shewes of
liking,
liking, and (if I bee acquainted with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heavenly Philoctes, towards me, that I may hope her cares would not abhorre my discours. And for good Basilus, he thought it best to have lodged vs together, but that the eternal hatefulnes of my destinie, made Gynecias icelous stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confess, that one way her love doth me pleasure: for since it was my foolish fortune, or unfortunate sollicitude, to be known by her, that keepes her from bewraying me to Basilus. And thus (my Musidorus) you have my Tragedie played vnto you by my selfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede pronounce a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie ligh.

Musidorus recommended to his best discours, all which Pyrocles had told him. But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out of the maze; yet perceiving his affection so grounded, that striving against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendship in question, then give place to any friendly counsell. Well (said he) deare co- sin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of love, yet happie it is, that your love is imploved vpon so rare a woman: for certainly, a noble causeth dooth eate much a grievous case. But as it standes now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cannot see wherein I can be serviable vnto you. I desire no greater service of you (answerd Pyrocles) thr that you remain secretly in this country, and some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you that have my key to eter,becaule as my
The Countesse of Pembroke's

fortune, cyther amendes or empaires. I may declare
it vnto you, and haue your counsell and furtheraunce:
& hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayle,
and yet the staine of all womankinde, that you may
haue so good a view, as to allowe my judgement: and
as I can get the most convenient time, I wil come vnto
you; for though by reason of yonder wood you
cannot see the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now,
(said she) it is time for me to leaue you, and towards
euening wee will walke out of purpose hetherward,
therefore kepe your selfe close in that time. But Muf-
sidorus bethinking him selfe that his horse might hap-
pen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that
day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse
in some forte, the next day early to come a foote thither,
and so to kepe that course afterward, which Py-
rocles very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin
(faid he) from me, no more Pyrocles, nor Daiphantus
now, but Zelmane: Zelmane is my name, Zelmane is
my title, Zelmane is the onely hope of my aduancem-
ment. And with that word going out, and seeing that
the coast was cleare, Zelmane dismissed Musidorus, who
de parted as full of care to helpe his friend, as before
he was to dissivade him.

C H A P. 15.

1. The Labyrinth of Zelmanes lose. 2. The Ladies exerci-
ses. 3. The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Ar-
texias beautie. * The description of their persons and
affections; 5. and occasion of this challenge. 6. The suc-
cesse thereof abroad.

Zelmane
Eiriane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by Philoclea, watched by Gynecia, and tired by Basilius) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserably spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: Zelmane fought occasion to speake with Philoclea; Basilius with Zelmane; and Gynecia hindered them all. If Philoclea hapned to sigh (and sigh she did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, Zelmane sighed also; whereto Basilius and Gynecia soone made vp four parts of sorrow. Their affection increased their conversation; and their conversation increased their affection. The respect borne breede due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. Zelmanes eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing governours. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

But Zelmane sayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend Musidorus (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might have full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a Little River neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon roots of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they fitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betwenee Pamela and Philoclea, which could soonest beguile sally fishes; while Zelmane protested, that the fitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken,
The Countesse of Pembroke

taken, that she had forgotten taking. Basilius in the meanc time would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & Cyncia sit stil, but with no stil pensifnesse. Now she brought them to see a seeld Doue, who the blinder she was, the higher she straue. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flye, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceaued) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one euening as Basilius returned from hauing forced his thoughts to pleafe themselves in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentleman desired leaue to do a message from his Lord unto him. Basilius granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutiful ceremonies observed, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from Phalatus of Corinth, to crave licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence defe all Arcadian Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be present, to giue evident profe what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his challenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of Artesia (so was the mistresse of Phalantus named) who in six courses should haue better of the other, in the judgement of Basilius, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. Basilius (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to
to avoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would entertaine Zelmanc, (that she might not think the time so gainefull to him, lose to her) granted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what Arcadian Knight (for none els but upon his perill was licensed to come) would defende what he honored against Phalantus, should haue the like freedome of accessse and returne.

This obteyned and published, Zelmanc being desirous to learne what this Phalantus was, hauing never knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, Basilisc told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bafard-brother to the faire Helen Queene of Corinth, and deedly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorable courteous, and wronglessly valiant, considerately pleasant in converstion, & an excellent courtier without vnsfaithfulnes; who (finding his sisters unperswadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of Amphialius) had for a time left her court, and gone into Laconia: where in the warre against the Helots, he had gottē the reputatio of one, that both durst & knew. But as it was rather choise the nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly refited in peaceable delightes, being beloued in all companys for his louely qualities, & (as a ma may terme it) cunning cherefulnes, wherby to the Prince & Court of Laconia, none was more agreeable the Phalantus: and he not giuen greatly to strugge with his owne
owne disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, having a fortune sufficient to content, & he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe, and was acquainted with this Artesia whose beautie he now defendes, became her seruant, said him selfe, and perchaunce thought him selte her lover. But certainly (said Basilius) many times it fallas out, that these young companiões make themselues belewe they loue at the first liking of a likely beautie; loving, because they will loue for want of other businesse, not because they feel indeed that divine power, which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and io (God knowes) as inconstantly lean upon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking loue vpon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie Artesia, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For she thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not provde of it, called her disdain of him charitie, and placed her honour in little setting by his honouiring her; determining neuer to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whom all worthinesse were harboured. And to this concept not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing vp she receaued at my sister in lawe Cecropia, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this young Artesia into her charge, because her Father had bene a deare-friend of her dead husbands, and taught her to thinke that there is no wisdome but in including heauen & earth in ones self: and that loue, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendshipe, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones selfe: And so good discipline she found of her, that
that liking the fruits of her owne planting,she was co-
tent (if so her sone could have liked of it) to have wi-
shed her in marriage to my Nephew Amphialus. But I
thinke that desire hath losst some of his heate,since she
hath knowne, that such a Queene as Helen is, doth of-
fer so great a price as a kingdome,to buie his fauour,for
if I be not deceaued in my good sister Cecropia ,shee
thinks no face so beautifull,as that which looks vnder
a crowne. But Artesia indeede liked well of my Ne-
phew Amphialus,for I canuer deeme that loue,which
in hauty harts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and
as it were,peacock themselfes; but yet she hath shewed
vchemencie of desire that way, I thinke,because all her
desires be vehement, in so much that she hath both pla-
ced her onely brother (a fine youth called Ismenus) to
be his squire, and her selfe is consent to waite vpon
my sister, till she may see the uttermost what she may
worke in Amphialus: who being of a melancholie
(though I must needes faye courteous and noble) mind,seems to loue nothing leffe then Loue:& of late
hauing through some aduenture, or inwarde miscon-
tentment, withdrawe him selfe frō any bodies know-
ledge, where he is: Artesia the easier condiscended
to goe to the court of Laconia, whether she was sent
for by the Kingses wife, to whome she is somewhat
allied.

And there after the war of the Helots, this Knight Pha-
lantus, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her
seruant, and she so little caring, as not to showe mis-
like thereof, was content onely to be noted to have a
notable seruant. For truely one in my court neerey
acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me

K
The Countesse of Pembroke's

A pleasant description of their love, while he with cheerful looks would speak sorrowful words, using the phrase of his affection in so high a style, that Mercury would not have wooed Venus with more magnificent Eloquence: but else neither in behaviour, nor action, accusing in himself arie great trouble in mind, whether he sped or no. And she of the other side, well finding how little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolish witnesse, to speak more then one thinkes.

For she made earnest benefite of his jest, forcing him in respect of his promise, to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly vnto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatry. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) haung in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to Amphialus, (persuading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no stomacke to it, before other folkes prayse it) she tooke the aduauntage one daye vpon Phalantus unconsconsciable pryasinges of her, and certaine cast-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her sake, to arrest his word affone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of Greece, & with the chalenge now made, to give her beauty the principality over all other. Phalantus was entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedingly perplexed: he was (as he confess to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for
indeed he had little cause, being accounted, with his
Launce especially (whereupon the challenge is to be
tried) as perfect as any that Greece knoweth; but because
he feared to offend his sister Helen, and with all (as he
said) he could not so much believe his love, but that he
might thinke in his hart (whatsoever his mouth affir-
med) that both she, my daughters, and the faire Parthe-
nia (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my wiuues neere
kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for that
prerogative. But his promise had bound him prentice,
and therefore it was now better with willingnes to pur-
chase thankes, then with a discontented doing to haue
the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on,
as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him.

And now hath he already passèd the courts of Lac-
nia, Elis, Argos and Corinth: and (as many times it hap-
pes) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to preuaile;
so hath his Lawnce brought captiues to the triumph of
Artesias beauty, such, as though Artesia be among the
fairest, yet in that company were to haue the prehemi-
nence: for in those courts many knights (that had bene
in other far countries) defended such as they had seene,
and liked in their trauaille: but their defence had bene
such, as they had forsayted the picture of their Ladies,
to giue a forced false testimonie to Artesias excellencie.
And now lastly is he come hether, where he hath leaue
to trye his fortune. But I assure you, if I thought it not
in dew & true consideratiō an injurious service & churl-
sish curtesie, to put the danger of so noble a title in the
deciding of such a dægerles combat, I would make yong
master Phalantus know, that your eyes can sharpe a blut

Launce
The Countesse of Pembroke's Launce, and that age, which my graye haires (only gotten by the loving care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath not diminished in me the power to protecting an undeniable verity. With that he bustled vp himselfe, as though his harte would faine haue walked abroad. Zelmer with an inwarde smiling gaue him outward thanks, desiring him to referee his force for wortlier causes.

CHAP. 16.


* Passing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the coming of Phalantus, who the next morning haung already caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vpon the tree made a shield to bee hanged vp, which the defendant should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challenege. The Imprefa in the shield, was a heauen full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was the beauty which gane it the praise.

Himselfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatie veluet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein Artesia sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if she had newly borrowed them of Thebus. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footemen pleasantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another
other of them that by Phalantus well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at every pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leisurely, that with perfect judgement they might be discerned.

The first that came in (following the order of the time wherein they had been wonne) was the picture of Andromana, Queene of Iberia; whom a Laconian Knight having sometime (and with special favour) serued, (though some yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein Fortune had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not comparable to Arteisia; not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impouerish her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions) disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princesse of Elis, a Lady that taught the beholdors no other point of beauty, but this, that as liking is, not alwaies the child of beauty, so whatsoever liketh, is beautyfull; for in that vilage there was nether Maiestie, grace, fauour, nor fairenesse; yet she wanted not a servaunt that would haue made her fairer then the faire Arteisia. But he wrote her praises with his helmet in the duit, and left her picture to be as true a wittes of his overthrow, as his running was of her beauty.

After her was the goodly Artaxia, great Queen of Armenia, a Lady vpon whom nature bestowed, & well placed her delightful colours; & withal, had proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be discovered by the senses, yet altogether seemed not to make vp that harmony, that Cupid delightes in; the reason whereof might seem a manish countenance, which overthrew that louely swerennes,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

sweetnes, the noblest power of woman-kind, farre fitter to presaile by parley, then by battell.

4 Of a farre contrary consideratió was the representation of her that next followed, which was Erona Queené of Licia, who though of so browne a haire, as no man should have injured it to have called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so much overcome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came near to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the exacte Symmetrians perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part so well, in euerie part, that it caught holde of the judgement, before it could judge, making it first loue, & after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeeling, conquered; & with a pitiful looke made one find cause to craue helpe himselfe.

5 After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named Baccha, who though very faire, and of a fattenes rather to allure, then to mislike, yet her breasts over-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her mouth, betweene simpering & smyling, her head bowed somwhat down, seemed to lâguish with over-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast vpward, disswading with too much perswading, while hope might seem to overcome desire.

6 The other (whose name was written Leucippe) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a sober simplicitie, like one that could do much good, & ment no hurt, her eyes hauing in them such a cheerfulness, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes owayed that pretty demurenes which the more onemarkes, the more one woulde judge the poore soule apt to beleue; & therefore the more pitie to
Next came the Queene of Laconia, one that seemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineaments were neither perfect possessions thereof nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautyfull.

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being conquered, & might well have made all the beholders waite vpo her triumph, while her selfe were led captiue. It was the excellently-faire Queene Helen, whose Lacinth haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through golde fads) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giving & receiving riches. In her face so much beautie & favour expressed, as if Helen had not bene knowe, some would rather have judged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, the counterfainting of any living patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could have found, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue. For euery thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wated any thing in maiestie, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it quished with delight. And no indifferent foule there was, which if it could resist fro subiecting it self to make it his princeffe, that would not log to haue such a playfellow.

As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sades the it seemed nature had beftowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she vled those ornamets, not for her self, but to prevaile with another, so she feared, that all would not ferue.
Of a faire differing (though esteemed equall) beauty, was the faire Parthenia, who next wayted on Artesias triumph, though faire better she might have sitt in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either not to deferue, or not to need any exquiste dec-king, having no adorning but cleanlines; and so faire from all arte, that it was full of carelesnesse: vnlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But Basilius could not abstatne from praising Parthenia, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfullnes: telling withall Zelma, how he had understooode, that when in the court of Laconia, her picture (maintained by a certaine Sycionian Knight) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then iustice: her husband (the famous Argalus) would in a chafe haue gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her vndeferued champion) tolde her husbande, she desirde to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as euill as ever it was, then that it should be a cause to make Argalus put on armour. Then would Basilius haue tolde Zelma, that which she alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth giue place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayde, which fate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so atten-
tiue vpon it, as if that little soeete could haue bene
the circle of her thoughts, her apparell so poore, as it
had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a shepchooke
lying by her with a bottle vpon it. But with all that po-
uerie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as ma-
ny harts as the greatest Queene there did. Her beautie
and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be
the faire shepheardesse, Vrания, whom a rich knight cal-
led Lacemon, farre in loute with her, had unluckely de-
fended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of
her being captiue, was Zelmae, daughter to the King
Plexirus: who at the first sight seemed to haue some re-
ssembling of Philoclea, but with more marking (coparing
it to the present Philoclea, who indeed had no paragon
but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenes
as an vnperfect glasse doth giue; aunsuerable enough
in some features, & colors, but erring in others. But Zel-
mane sighing, turning to Basilius, Alas sir (saide she) here
be some pictures which might better become the tobes
of their Mistresses, then the triumpe of Artesia. It is
tue sweetest Lady (saide Basilius) some of them be
dead, and some other captiue: But that hath happened
so late, as it may be the Knightes that defended their
beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in
some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe
could not blot out the image which love hath engraued
in the. But divers besides these (saide Basilius) hath Pha-
lantus woon, but he leauers the rest, carying onely such,
who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may ju-
lly glorifie the glory of Artesias triumph.

CHAP.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

CHAP. 17.

The overthrow of five Arcadian knights. The young shepherds prettie challenge. What passions the sixth knight soyle bredde in Zelmane. Clitophon hardly overmatcht by Phalantus. The ill arrayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie against Phalantus. The halting knights complaint against the black knight. Phalantus fall by the ill furnish knight. The crose-parting of Phalantus with Arte sia, and who the victor was.

Hus talked Basilus with Zelmane, glad to make any matter subiect to speake of, with his mistresse, while Phalantus in this pompous manner, brought Arte sia with her gentlewome, into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would first strike upon the shielde, while Basilus the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light, but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For Phalantus was all in white, hauing in his bales, and caparison imbrodered a wauing water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast over, in which were divers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to strike, and leap in the nette.

But the other knight, by name Neftor, by birth an Arcadian,
Arcadia. Lib. I.
cadian, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both vpó his armour, and horse. His impress in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, More easie, and more sweete. But this hot knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he received of Phalantus, leaving his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe: he going away remedilessly chaffing at his rebuke. The next was Polycetes, greatly esteemed in Arcadia, for deeds he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable love he had long borne to Gynecia; which Basilius himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from overthrow, and her from becoming as then the last of Artesius victories: a thing Gynecias virtues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if Zelmae had not seen it. But her champion went away as much discomforted, as discomfited. Then Telamon for Polixeena, & Eurimelô for Elpine, and Leon for Zoana; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted vp the ballance of his praise for actiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whose loffe as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a man) brown of complexion (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very louely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who
who slubber vp matters of meane account. And well
might his proportion be judged; for he had nothing
upon him but a paire of slippes, and vpon his bodie a
Gote-skinne, which he cast ouer his shoulder, doing
all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance
could not make him do amisse, because he had a hart to
do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so co-
ming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom
choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came to-
wards the king, and making a reverence (which in him
was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (laid
he) I pray you heare a few words, for my hart wil break
if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of
Vrania, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men
when they fall downe, they say is not so faire as yonder
gay woman. But pray God, I may never see my olde
mother alioe, if I think she be any more match to Vra-
nia, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog
that keepes our flock at home, is like your white Grei-
hounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.
And therefore I pray you let me be dreft as they be,
and my hart giues me, I shall tumble him on the earth:
for indeede he might aswell say, that a Couslips is as
white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his
great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall
see what I can doo to him. Basilius sawe it was the fine
shepheard Lalus, whom once he had afore him in Pa-
storall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full
of prety simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his ear-
nestness, he bad him be content, since he sawe the pi-
cures of so great Queens, were faine to follow their
champions fortune. But Lalus (euen weeping ripe)
went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge \\

would revenge
was striken quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the sword have revenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, Basilius would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leaving Zelmane no lesse angry with his los, then she would have beene with his victory. For if she thought before a riuals prayse woulde haue angred her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in Philocleas cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commaunded truce for those sportes, & Phalantus (though intreated) would not leaue Artesia, who in no case would come into the house, hauing (as it were) lucke of Cecropias breath a mortall mislike against Basilius.

But the night measured by the shortell of sleepe, was soone past ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchful stars leaue to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned Basilius to play his iudges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; Zelmane hauing lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fielde, ready to proue Helen of Corinth had receaued great inury, both by the erring judgement of the challenger, and the vnlikely weakeenesse of her former de- fender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be Clitophon (Kaladers sonne of Basilius: his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well hadled, that it shewed like a glittering sandle and grauell, interlaced with sifter riuers: his deuice he had put in the picture of Helen which hee defended. It was the Ermion, with a
Arcadia. Lib. I.

peach that signified, Rather dead then spotted. But in that armour since he had parted frō Helen (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into terms of affection,) he had performed so honourable actions, (still seeking for his two friends by the names of Palladius and Daiphatus,) that though his face were covered, his being was discovered, which yet Basilius (which had brought him vp in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commanded the trumpets to sound, to which the two braue Knights obeying, they performed their courses, breaking their six statues, with so good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner, that it bred some difficulty in the judgement. But Basilius in the end gave sentence against Clitophon, because Phalantus had broken more statues vpō the head, & that once Clitophon had received such a blowe, that he had lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the horse. But Clitophon was so angry with the judgment, (wherin he thought he had receiued wrōg) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, & uncle; and so disdainfully went his way, still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by seeking: & so yielded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two hours after, was no leffe marked then at the rest before, because he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor devise, his armour of so old a fashion (besides the rustic poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his grandfathes courage: about his middle he had in steede of bases, a long cloake of silke, which as was handsomely, as it needed must, became the wea-
rer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on
the earth alreadie, since he had to meete one who
had bene victorious of so many gallants. But he went
on towards the shielde, and with a sober grace strake
it; but as he let his sworde fall upon it, another Knight,
all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield al-
most as soon as he, and so strongly, that he brake the
shield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for so the be-
holders called him) angrie with that, (as he account-
ed,) insolent injurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound
blowe, that they that looked on saide, it well became
a rude arme. The other aunswered him againe in the
same case, so that Launces were put to silence, the
swordes were so busie.

But Phalantis angry of this defacing his shield, came
upon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his
sword set fire to his eyes, which presently was reuen-
ged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill apparelled
Knight, who disdainned another should enter into his
quarrell, so as, who ever sawe a matachin daunce to i-
mitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the
matachin: for they being but three that fought, euer-
rice one had aduersaries, striking him, who strooke the
third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he
had receaued of the other. But Basilius rising himselfe
to parte them, the sticklers authoritie fearflie able to
periwade choletike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth,
halting on foote, who complained to Basilius, daem-
ning iustice on the blacke Knight, for hauing by force
taken away the picture of Pamela from him, which in
little forme he ware in a Tablet, and covered with
silke
Arcadia. Lib. I.

filke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with Artesias length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weaknesse of the other: as the smallest starre doth the starr the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The injurie seemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going the other way, and finding it was to defend Pame- las divine beautie against Artesias, with a prowde iallitie commended him to leave that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such commandements, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his picture. This understood by Basilius, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then another picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him away to learn of Esculapius that he was not fit for Venus.

But then the question arising who should be the former against Phalantus, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe) of the one side, was alleged the having a picture which the other wanted: of the other side, the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill apparelled Knight should have the precedence, if he delivered the figure of his mistresse to Phalantus; who asking him for it, Certainly (said he) her liuellie picture, (if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best comparison I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the heavenly
heavenly beauties. But because perhaps all eyes cannot taste the Divinity of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clouded by some meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image Phoebulus so feebly lost yesternight, and instead of an other (if you overcome mee) you shall have me your slave to carry that image in your mistresse triumphe. Phalantus easilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill apparell'd Knight choosing out the greatest slaves in all the store, at the first course gave his head such a remembrance, that he lost almost his remembrance, he himself receyuing the encounter of Phalantus without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gave him such a counterbuffe, that because Phalantus was so perfite a horseman, as not to be driuen from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horse: Phalantus remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprise, that disgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the judges giuen, and the trumpets wittnesse to the ill apparell'd Knight; Phalantus disgrace was ingrieued in lieu of comforte by Artesia, who telling him she neuer lookt for other, had him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing himselfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you have los't me.

Nay truely Madame (saide Phalantus) it shall not be
be so: for I think the loss of such a Mistresse will prove a great gaine: and so concluded, to the Sporte of Basilius, to see young folks love, that came in maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little constancie. But Thalantus first professing great Scruce to Basilius for his curteous intermitting his solitary course for his sake, would yet conduct Artesia to the castle of Cecropia, whether she desired to goe: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, should ever any more intangle him. And with that resolution he left the company.

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black knight went away repyning at his luck, that had kept him frō winning the honor, as he knew he shuld have don, to the picture of Pamela), the ill appareled knight (who was only desired to stay, because Basilius meant to shew him to Zelma) pulde of his Helmet, & then was knowne himselfe to be Zelma: who that morning (as she told) while the others were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile of frō the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was Basilius pleasure she should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come upon the spur to redeem Philocleas picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wildernes-s company) should be in captivity, if the cunning she had learned in her countrey of the noble Amazons, could withstand it: & under that pretext saine she would haue giue a secret passport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant rednesse in Philocleas face, and paleness in Gynecias, but brought forth no other countenances but of admiratio, no speches but of comedatios: all these few (besides love)
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Thinking they honoured them selues, in honouring so accomplished a person as Zelmane; whom dayly they fought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose Basilius had in a house not farre of, seruaunts, who though they came not uncalled, yet at call were redye.

**CHAP. 18.**

*Musidorus disguised. His song. His love. the cause thereof. His course therein.*

And so many daies were spent, and many waies vfed, while Zelmane was like one that stode in a tree waiting a good occasiō to shoot, & Gynecia a blauncher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an apointed course, the sheapheards were to assemble, & make their pastoral sports afore Basilius: Zelmane (feareing, left many eyes, and comming divers waies, might hap to spy Musidorus) went out to warne him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her-ward, a man in sheapperdish apparel who being in the sight of the Lodge it mightseme he was allowed there. A long cloke he had on, but that cast vnder his right arme, wherein he held a shephooke, so finely wrought, that it gaue a brauery to pouerty, & his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they hansomnes by the grace of the weare, though he him-
Selfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eies somewhat cast vp to heauen , as though his fancyes straue to mount higher; sometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthen of his sorrowes; at length, with a lametale tune, he songe these fewe versies.

Come shepheardes weedes, become your masters minde: 2
Teld outward show, what inward change he tryes:
Nor be abash'd, since such a guest you finde,
Whose strong est hope in your weake comfort lye.

Come shepheardes weedes, attend my woe full cryes:
Disse your selues from sweete Menalca's voice:
For other be those tunes which sorrow eies,
From those cleere notes which freely may reioyce.
Then power out plaint, and in one word say this:
Helples his plaint, who spoyleth himselfe of bliss.

And hauing ended, he strike himselfe on the brest; saying, O miserable wretch, whether do thy destinies guide thee: The voice made Zelmane haften her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, she plainly perceaued that it was her deare friend Musidorus, whereat maruailing not a little, she demaunded of him, whether the Goddesse of those woods had such a powre to trasforme every body, or whether, as in all enterprizes else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

Alas, (said Musidorus) what shall I say, who am loth to say, and yet faine would haue said? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wisdome, which wants experience. I now woe
The Countesse of Pembroke

(woe is me) do try what loue can doo! O Zelmame, who will resist it, must either have no witte, or put out his eyes: can any man resist his creation? certainly by loue we are made, and to loue we are made. Beasts only cannot discern beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that do not honor it. The perfect friendship Zelmame bare him, and the great pittie she (by good triall) had of such cases, could not kepe her from smiling at him, remembering how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of louers. And therefore a little to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you that were last day so hie in Pulpit against louers, are you now become so meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a passion; and that a woorthie mans reason must cuere haue the masterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed Musidorus,) and withall falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of Loue, or what other heauenly or hellish title thou list to haue (for effects of both I finde in my selfe) haue compassion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no saide Zelmame, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doe but counterfaite thus, to make me see the deformitie of my passions: but take heed, that this iest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I befeeche thee (saide Musidorus taking her fast by the hand) even for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou haft some remembrance, & by thoete sacred flames which (I know) haue likewise necerly touched thee; make no iest of that, which hath so cruelly pierced me thorow, nor let that be
be light to thee, which is to me so burdensome, that I am not able to bear it. Musidorus both in words & behaviour, did so liuely deliver out his inward grief, that Zelmae found indeed, he was thorowly wounded: but there rose a new ielously in her minde, lest it might be with Philoclea, by whom, as Zelmae thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleared of that doubt, Musidorus shortly (as in haft and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case vnto her.

The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before taid, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way of) guided me to a young shepheards house, by name Menaleas, who seing me to be a straying stranger, with the right honest hospitality which seems to be harboured in the Arcadian breasts, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and hauing by talke with him, found the manner of the countrey, something more in particular, then I had by Kalanders report, I agreed to sojourn with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to observe. And so hether to your arbour diewers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had neuer bene so, nay, O that it might euer be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compass can set forth infinite beauty. All this while Zelmae was racked with jealousie. But he went on, For (said he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe, O sweet Pyrocles, how art thou bewitched: where is thy vertue, where is the use of thy reason: how much am.
am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet I know I, that all the heavens cannot bring me to such thralldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came fourth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to strike my soule; at least, an unmeasurable sling I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight? said Zelmane, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd Musidorus) I know your susspition; No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it is, and must be Pamela. Then all is safe (sayd Zelmane) proceede, deare Musidorus. I will not (sayd he) impute it to my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that caled the consideratio of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of Venus; nor reuenge of Cupid; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the onely shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was presentlie striken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, wil strike himselfe again vpon it) would needs looke againe; as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceived. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a resifting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had planted in the grounde of my harte, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my loue, which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of heauen? Let this word suffice, I loue.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both prevented, and beaten by you. And so, I that wai-
ted here to do you service, have now my self most need of succor. But wherupon got you your self this apparel? said Zelmahe. I had forgotten to tel you (said Musidorus) though that were one principall matter of my speech; so much am I now matter of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to Menalca\'s house, full of tormenting desire, after a while sayning vnder the weight, my courage friend vp my wit to seeke for some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At laft this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpose laft vned my horse and armour. I tolde Menalcas, that I was a Thessalian Gentle-man, who by mischaunce hauing killed a great favorit of the Prince of that coutry, was pursued so cruelly, that in no place, but either by fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my perfections might be asliaged) to disguise my selfe among the shephadrs of Arcadia, & (if it were possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes presence; Because if the worst should fall, that I were discouered, yet hauing gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to moue his hart to protect me. Menalcas (being of an honest disposition) pittied my case, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and so (I giuing him largly for it) let me have this rayment, instructing me in all the particularities, touching himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, vpon it, I hired him to goe into Thessalia to a friend of mine, & to deliver him a letter fro me; conjuring him to bring me as speedy an answeere as he could, because it imported me
The Countesse of Pembroke's me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friendes did yet possesse any fauour, whose intercessions I might use for my restitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well sealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my trustie vertuful Calodoulus (whom you know) that assoone as he had deliuered the letter, he should keep him prisoner in his house, not sufferinge him to haue conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure: in all other respects that he should vse him as my brother. And thus is Menalcas gone, and I here a poore shepheard, more proud of this estate, the of any kingdom: so manifest it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one unto, is the contentmet of the mind: with which, no estate, without which, all estates be miserable. Now haue I chosen this day, because (as Menalcas tolde me) the other shepheards are called to make their sports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde means to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (answered Zelmane) but that I will be your good mistresse: marrie the best way of dealing must be by Dametas, who since his blunt braine hath perceiued some fauour the Prince dooth beare vnto me (as without doubt the most servile flattereie is lodged most casilie in the grossest capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their Greateres, and then haue they not witte to learne the right degrees of ductie) is much more servisable vnto me, then I can finde any cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for every present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are masters of his sillie mind, onely reuerence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him.
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

O heauen and earth (said Musidorus) to what a passe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts: But o Loue, it is thou that doost it: thou changeft name vpò name; thou disguifeft our bodies, and disfigureft our mindes. But in deed thou haft reafon, for though the wayes be foule, the journeys end is most faire and honourable.

CHAP. 19.

The means of Musidorus his apprenticesage unto Dametas.

The preparation and place of the Pastorals.

The Lyons assault on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane.

The shee beares on Pamela, and death by Dorus.

The Io Pæan of Dametas, and his scape from the beare.

The victors praises.

O more sweete Musidorus (said Zelmane) of these philosophies; for here comes the very person of Dametas. And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forrest-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which prouided forte he had ever gone, since the feare Zelmane had put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reverence afore her; inougth to haue made any man forswear all courtesie. And then in Basilius name, he did inuite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Pastoralles. But
But when he spied Musidorus to be none of the shepheards allowed in that place, he would faine have persuaded himselfe to utter some anger, but that he durfte not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gaue occasion to Musidorus to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard Menalcas, by name Dorus, sent by his father in his tender age to Athens, there to leare some cunning more then ordinary, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother Menalcas (latelee gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: wherevpon his death he had charged him to seek the service of Dametas, and to be wholly, and ever guided by him, as one in whose judgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to Dametas a good summe of golde in redy coine, which Menelcas had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he shold receive this poore Dorus into his service, that his mind and manner might grow the better by his dayly example. Dametas, that of all manners of stile could best conceive of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by Musidorus prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slauent to that, which he, that shewed to be his servant, offered to give him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed very sqeumish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse Pamela. But such was the secrete operation of the golde, helped with the persuasian of the Amazon Zelmaine, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the eride he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the lyking of
of Basilius, as he might be contented) that then he would receive him into his service.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they found Gyneca and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselves there a while, until the shepherds coming: whether also taking Zelmane with them, as they went, Dametas told them of Dorus, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in stead of his brother Menalcas. As for Basilius, he stayed behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to cofer, to breed the better Zelmanes liking (which he only regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seek to close the eie with the purling noife it made upon the pibble stones it ran ouer: the field itself being set in some places with roses, & in all the rest constantly preferring a florishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew vnto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a Theater) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of growth, continuall greenes, or poeticall fancies have made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gave a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the chole-ricke looke of Phoebus.

In this place while Gyneca walked hard by them, carrying many vnquiet contentions about her, the Ladies
The Countesse of Pembroke

sate them down, inquiring many questions of the shepheard Dorus, who (keeping his eie still vpon Pamela) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed countenance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenanced with unwoonted presence. But Zelmane that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hande of Philoclea, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. O Loue, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so constant in their torments? when sodainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a the Beare not far from him, of little leffe fiercenes, which (as they geue) having bene huted in Forests far of, were by chaunce came the-ther, where before such beastes had never bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered some thing the countenances of the two Louers, but so, as any man might perceiue, was rather an assem-bling of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. Philoclea no sooner espied the Li6, but that obeying the coman-dement of feare, she lept vp, & ran to the lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legs could carrie her, while Dorus drew Pamela behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is eué ready to seaze. But the Lion (seing Philoclea run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to seaze him selue on the pray, when Zelmane (to whome daunger then was a cause of dreadsnes, all the copositions of her elemets being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desir croft him.
him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow upon his chine, that she opened al his body: wherewith the valiant beast turning vpō her with open jaws, she gave him such a thrust thorow his breast, that al the Lion could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and fleue of Zelmane, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow hauing take away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gaue Zelmane leasure to take of his head, to carrie it for a present to her Ladie Philoclea: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like Arethusa when she ran from Alpheus; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time have willingly hidden, was present to the fight of the twice wounded Zelmane. Which made Zelmane not follow her ouer hastily, lest she should too soone deprive herself of that pleasure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully overtake her, till they came to the presence of Basilius. Neither were they long there, but that Gynecia came thether also: who had bene in such a trauance of musing, that Zelmane was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lions coming: but then affection setting, and the soone ending of the fight preventing all extremity of feare, she marked Zelmanes fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as Zelmane ran after Philoclea, so she could not find in her hart but run after Zelmane: so that it was a new fight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runne one after the other each carried forward with an inwarde violence: Philoclea with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth:
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Zelmane with an eager and impatient delight, Gynecia with wings of Loue, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before Basilius amazed with this sight, and fearè hauing such possesstio in the faire Philoclea, that her bloud durft not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of paleneffe from hec most pure whitenes, Zelmane kneeled down, and presented the Lions head vnto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the punishment of that unnatural beast, which cōtary to her owne kind wold haue wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traitorous eics, as durft rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answerèd the sweete Philoclea then blushing, for seare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent Amazons were there to teach him good manners. And even thankes to that beautie (answerèd Zelmane) which can give an edge to the bluntèst swordes: There Philoclea told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turnèd her eyes in her tale to Zelmane, she perceiued some bloud vortex Zelmanes shoulder, so that starting with the louely grace of pitty, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with over-much kissing may forget to giue the babe sukke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praying Zelmane, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though Zelmane assureèd them, it was nothing) would needes see it; Gynecia hauing skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it servèd to vertuous courage, which euë Ladies would (euë with the contempt of courage) seeme
to cherish. But looking vpon it (which gave more inward bleeding wouds to Zelmane, for she might sometimes feel Philocleas touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied she a pretious baulme vnto it, of power to heal a greater griefe.

But eu'en then, & not before, they remembred Pamela, & therefore Zelmane (thinking of her friend Dorus) was running back to be satisfied, whē they might all see Pamela coming between Dorus & Dametas, hauing in her had the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard Dorus had newly presented vnto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deferred death for her presumption, yet was her will to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. Dametas for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish. But whē he came so neere, as he might be heard of Basilius, he would needs breake thorow his eares with this joyfull song of their good succeffe.

Now thanked be the great God Pan,
which thus preserves my loved life:  
Thanked be I that keepe a man,
who ended hath this fearesfull strife:  
For is my man must praises have,
what then must I that kepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eies doth please,
with gentle beames not hurting sight:  
Yet hath sir Sunne the greatest praisē,
because from him doth come her light:  
So is my man must praises have,
what then must I that keepe the knaue?
Being all now come together, & all desirous to know each others aduertures, Pamela, noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valid mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this maner. As soone (said she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safety, there came out of the fame woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing be-like to deale while the Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, and this young shepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisedome, which since they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but euë pure feare bringing forth that effect of wisedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not counterfait being dead, for indeed I was little better. But this shepheard having no other weapon, but that knife you fee, standing before the place where I lay, so behav-ed him selfe, that the first fight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer Charons ferry,) was the shepheard shewing me his bloudy knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide Zelmane, speaking to Dorus, whose valour she was carefull to have manifested) in what forte, so ill wea-poned, could you attchieue this enterprize? Noble Ladi (saide Dorus) the manner of these beastes fighting with any man, is to stande vp vpon their hinder feete: and so this did, & being ready to give me a shrewd im-bracement, I thinke, the God Pan, (euer carefull of the chiefe blessings of Arcadia) guided my hand so iust to the hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy remé-brace) breed any dager to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather (with all subiected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies, since the duety thereunto gaue me harte to
to save my selfe, then to receive thankes for a deed, which was her onely inspiring. And this Dorus spake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from coming into his eyes and gestures. But Zelmame (that had the same Character in her heart) could easily discourse it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speach, desired to understand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest Dametas was escaped.

Nay (said Pamela) none shall take that office from my selfe, being so much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (sorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on: When (said she) Dorus made me assuredly perceive, that all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to finde my selfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both perceived the gentle Dametas, lying with his breast and head as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing vp his legges as close vnnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was full resolued not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that Dorus was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shewed him the beast, as deade as he could wish it: which you may beleue me, was a very joyfull fight vnnto him. But then he forgate al curtse, for he fell upon the beast, giuing it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beasts shuld be suffered in a cómó welth. And then my gouernour, as full of ioy, as before of feare,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

came da unc and sing ing before vs as euen now you saw him. Well wel (aid Baslius) I haue not chosen Dametas for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie, and therein I know he will not deceave me.

But then he told Pamela (not so much because she should know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act Zelmsne had perfourmed, which Gynecia likewise spake off; both in such extremity of praising, as was ease to be seené, the constructions of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affecti- on. Baslius told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another Pallas with the spoiles of Gorgon. Gynecia fware, shee fawe the face of the young Hercules killing the Nemean Lion, & all with a grateful affent confirmed the same praises: onely poore Dorus (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) shoule bene left forgotten, had not Zelmsne againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in Arcadia, that shepheard s should per- forme such valorous enterpries. This Baslius(hauing the quicke sense of a louer) tooke, as though his Mi- ftres had giuen a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to Dorus; and therefore(as nymblie as he could) enquired of his estate; adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercife his courage in soldierie, he would commit some charge vnto him vnder his Lieu- tenant Philanax. But Dorus (whose ambition clyme- d by another stayre) hauing first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard Menalcas; who
who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, 
& excused his going to sounderie, by the un-
aptnesse he found in himselfe that way: he told Basili- 
us, that his brother in his last testament had willed him 
to serve Dametas; and therefore (for due obedience 
thereunto) he would think his service greatly rewar-
ded, if he might obtaine by that meane to live in the 
fight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen 
vocation. Basilius (liking well his goodly shape and 
handsome manner) charged Dametas to receive him 
like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, 
and Dametas truth would be good bulwarkes against 
such mischiefes, as (he stucked not to say) were threat-
ened to his daughter Pamela.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that 

had bene said (because he had no worse to fall into then 
his owne) accepted Dorus: and with all, telling Basilius, 
that some of the shepheards were come; demanded 
in what place he would see their sports: who first cu-
rious to know whether it were not more requisite for 
Zelmanes hurt to rest, then fit vp at those pastimes; and 
she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to 
haue Pastorals, Basilius commanded it shoule be at the 
gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince be-
ing (according to the auncient manner) he made Zel-
mane sit betweene him & his wife therin, who thought 
her selfe betweene drowning and burning: and the 
two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so pre-
pared their eyes and cares to bee delighted by the 

shepheards.

But before all of them were assembled to begin their 
sports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or 
seeming
The Countesse of Pembroke

Seeking so to be for haste] with humble hastines told Basilius, that his Mistres, the Lady Cecropia, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beastes ranging in that dangerous fort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himself able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceived: whom yet (if Basilius would punish for it) she was readie to deliver. Basilius made no other answere, but that his Mistres if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be killed: and then he told his wife & Zelma of it, because they should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such beastes, where the like had never bene seene. But Gynecia tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting Cecropia, because shee had heard much of the diuellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularly she did her best to bring vp her sonne Amphialius (being brothers sonne to Basilius) to aspire to the crowne, as next heire male after Basilius; and therefore saw no reason, but that she might conjecture, it proceeded rather of some mischieuous practice, than of misfortune. Yet did shee onely utter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, shee would attend a further occasion, least over much haste might seeme to proceede of the ordinarie mislike betweene sisters in Lawe: onely they maruelled, that Basilius looked no further into it; who (good man) thought so much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digressions vnto him. But the shepheardes were ready, and with wel handling themselves, called their senses to attend their pastimes.
ASILIVS, because Zelmane so would have it, vfed the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their inuicions could minister. And yet because many more shepheards were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner chastife the cowardise of the fugitiue shepheards: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of speech and behauiour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while they prepared to do, Dametas, who much disliked (since his late authority) all his old companions, brought his servant Dorus in good acquaintance and allowance of the; & himselfe stood like a director over the, with nodding, gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or mislike those things he did not understand. The first sports the shepheards shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god Pan, and his companions the Satyres. Then would they cast away their Pipes, and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would vs in singing some short coplers, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answere. As the one halfe saying,

We love, and have our loves rewarded.

The others would answere.

We love, and are no whit regarded.

The
The Countesse of Pembroke

The first againe.

We finde most sweete affections share,
With like tune it should be as in quire sent back againe.
That sweete, but sower despairefull care.
A third time likewise thus:
Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare?
The aunswere.

And who can hope, that feeles despaire?
Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure, they would conclude with some such words:

As without breath, no pipe doth move,
No musike kindly without love.

Hauing thus varied both their songs and daunces into divers sorts of inuentions; their last sport was one of them to prouoke another to a more large expressing of his passions: which Lalus (accounted one of the best fingers amongst them) hauing marked in Dorus dauncing, no lesse good grace & hansome behauiour, then extreme tokens of a travelled minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to chalenge Dorus, and was by him answered in the vnderwritten sort.

Lalus and Dorus.

Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorrowes signifie:
And if for want of use thy minde ashaimed is.
That verie shame with Loues high title dignifie.
No stile is held for base, where Loue well named is:
Each ear doth sucke up the words, a true loue scattereth,
And plainie speach oft, then quaint phrase, better framed is.

Nigh-
Nightingales seldom singing, the Pie still chattereth:

The wood cries most, before it thoroughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, each slight sore mattereth.
Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.
Shallow brookes murmur most, deep silent slide away.
Nor true love loves those loues with others mingled be.

If thou wilt not be scene, thy face goe hide away,
Lalus.

Be none of vs, or els maintaine our fashion:
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better hide away.

But if thou haft a Loue, in that Loues passion,
Lalus.

I challenge thee by show of her perfection,
Which of vs two deserueth most compassion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
Dorus.

Sing then, and see (for now thou haft inflamed me)

Thy health too meane a match for my infection.

No, though the heavens for high attempts haue blamed me,

Yet high is my attempt. O Mule hislorifie

Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.

Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan glorifie
Lalus.

My Kalas giftes: who with all good gifts filled is.

Thy pipe, O Pan, shall helpe, though I sing forlitle.

A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;

Who though she be no Bee, yet full of honie is:
A Lillie field, with plowe of Rose which tilled is.

Milde as a Lambe, more daintie than a Conie is:

Her eyes my eyesight is, her conversation
More gladde to me, then to a miser monie is.

What coyse account she makes of estimation?

How nice to touch how all her speeches prized be?
The Countesse of Pembroke's

A Nymph thus turnde, but mended in translation.

Dorus. Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies rayfed be
In one, whose name to name were high presumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title pleased be.
O happie Gods, which by inward assumption
Enjoy her soule, in bodys faire possessio
And keep it joynde, scaring your feates consumption.
How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,
Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection
From heau'ny throne to her heau'n use digression?
Of best things then what world can yeeld confession
To liken her? Decke yours with your comparison:
She is herself, of best things the collection.

Lalus. How oft my dolesfull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne
When first he spied my lome? how oft he said to me,
Thou art no soldier fitte for Cupids garrison?
My sonne, kepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:
Lone well thine owne me thinkes, woolles whitenes passeth all:
I never found long love such wealth bath paide to me.
This winde he spent: but when my Kala glasseth all
My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,
Not rotten keepe, but high crownes she surpass eth all.
Can I be poore, that her golde baire procure my selfe?
Want I white wooll, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?
Till I get her, shall I to keepe enure my selfe?

Dorus. How oft, when reason saw, love of her harnisfed
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
To set a pearle in fréele so meanely varnish'd?
Looke to thy selfe, reach not beyond humanitie:
Her minde, beames, stait faire from thy weake wings banished:
And Loun, which lover hurts is inhumanitie.

Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
Her eyes so maistering me, that such obiection
Seemde but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.

Her pereles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp, and if hope-slayling ende lies pleasure,
O fayrer death how can I make election?

Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,
With sleeues turnde vp, loose haire, and brest enlarged,
Her fathers corne (mowing her faire limmes) measure.

O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.

Thy father bids thee save, and chides for spilling.
Save then my soule, still not my thoughts well heaped,
No lovely praisse was ever got by killing.

These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.

Once, of sweete once, I saw with dread oppressed
Her whom I dread, so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Lounes chief clothinge drest.

I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enjoy so dear a couer,
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.

Lay all your scare upon your scarefull lover:
Shine eyes on me, that both our lives be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your slyues recover.

I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:

Lalus.

Dorus.

But.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But straight they fledde summon'd by cruel honor, Honor, the cause, desart is not regarded.

Lalus. This mayde, thus made for ioyes, o' Pan becomne her, That without love she spends her yares of love: So faire a fieldde would well become an owner. And if enchantment can a harde hart move, Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite, Affections charmes in my behalfe to prove. The circle is my (round about her) sight: The power I will invoke dwelies in her eyes: My charme should be, she haunt me day and night.

Dorus. Fare other care, o' Muse, my sorrow tries, Bent to such one, in whom, my selfe must say, Nothing can mend that point that in her lies. What circle then in so rare force beares swaye? Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damn, or save: No charme holds her, but well possesse she may; Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slave: My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot. No thrallles like them that inward bondage have.

Lalus. Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte: Dislaime me not, although I be not faire. Who is an heire of many hundred sheep Doth beauties keep, which never Sunne can burne, Nor storms do turne fairenes scours of to wealth. Yet all my health I place in your good-will. Which if you will (o doo) bestow on me, Such as you see, such still you shall me finde. Constant and kind: my sheep your foodes shall breed, Their
Arcadia. Lib. I.

Their wooll your weede, I will you Musique yeeld
In floworie fielde; and as the day begins
With twenty ginesses we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as Nature things hath made.
But when in shade we meet of wirtle bowes,
Then Love allowes, our pleasures to enrich,
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.

Lady your selfe, whom nether name I dare,
And titles are but spots to such a worthie,
Heare plaints com forth from dungeon of my minde.
The noblest kinde rejects not others woes.
I have no sheaves of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties howe your bessines, my health your deeds;
My minde for weedes your vertues liuerie weares.
My foode is teares: my tunes waymenting yeeld:
Despaire my fielde; the flowers spirits warres:
My day neve cares: my ginesses my daily sight,
In which do light small birds of thoughts oorthrowne:
My pastimes none: time pesseth on my fall:
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:
I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burne:
No place to turne, without within it frys:
Nor helpe by life or death who living dye.

But if my Kala this my suite denies,
Which so much reason beares,
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:
If still her inndbe such,
My earthy moude will melte in wearie teares.

My earthy moude doth melte in wearie teares,
The Countesse of Pembroke

And they againe resolue
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,
Which doth to ashes burne:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,

Lalus.     So doth my life within it selfe dissolve,
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showeing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Looke above poore Natures power.

Dorus.    Such force hath Looke above poore Natures power,
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.

Lalus.    Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepeheards trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their lowes condition:
Ossinging take to thee the reputation.

Dorus.    Of singing take to thee the reputation
New friend of mine, I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth secke another estimation.
But ah my Muse I would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddesse, so by thy invention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.
Seen, and unknowne, heard, but without attention.

This
This Eclogue betwixt Lalius & Dorus, of every one of the beholders received great commendations. When Basilius called to a yong shepheard, who neuer had daunced nor song with the, but layne al this while upo the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loued, to be in prison in his body: & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepheardes, according to the accustomed guise: or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, vnknowne to him; as being a straunger in that coutry. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too joyful to suffer the reherfall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy Basilius some way, he songe this songe, he had learned before he had subiected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

As I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A little flocke, but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping lead, the Sunne already sank
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my bothe
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scothe;
Saying the glowe worme, which would curteous be:
Of that small light oft watching shepheardes see.

The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In couer of dimme cloudes his siluer groates,
Icleped starrs; each thing to rest dispos'd:
The caues were full, the mountaines void of goates:
The birds eyes close'd eie closed their chirping notes:
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.

And
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared sore;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to beare
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euery for my selfe since I was bore:

I fate me downe: for see to goo me could,

And sange vnto my sheepe best stray they should.

The sone I sange old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swft Ister knewe,
For clerkely reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfully hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,

To haue a feeling tast of him that sitts
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.

He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleasa
Was sumpe concorde betweene our wit and will:
Where highest notes to godlines are raisd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,

How sheepeheards did of yore, how now they thrive,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt the they strive.

He liked me, but pitied lastfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippry yeares upbore:
He still hop'd well, because he loyed truth:
Till forse to parte, with haste and eyes even sore,
To worthy Coriden he gane me ore.

But thus in okes true shade recounted he
Which now in nights deeps shade sheep heard of me.

Such
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely wonderd with such as bestes begot:
Unknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
Might freely rone, or rest, as seemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.

The bestes had sure some beastly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie;
The fearfull Hinde the Leopard did kisse:
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents kisse.
This thinke I well, the bests with courage clad
Like Senators a harmelcs empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
(For enuie barbreth most in feeblest hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As euen in bests their dames leaue chaunging parts)
The multitude to Ioue a suite empartes,
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
Roring, and howling for to have a King.

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birds likewise with chirpes, and quing could
Cackling, and chattering, that of Ioue be speech.
Onely the owle still warnede them not to speech
So hastily that which they would repent:
But savve they would, and be to deserts went.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

"Ou wise wisiely saide, for wisedome wisely sayer"

O beastes, take heed what ye of me desire.

Rulers will think all things made them to please;

And soone forgett the swaine due to their hire.

But since you will, part of my heavenly fire

I will you leade; the rest your selues must giue,

That it both scene and selue may with you liue.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,

Which freight the Earth unclothed in his claye:

The Lion, harte, the Ounce gane actime might;

The Horse, good shape; the Sparrow, lust to playe;

Nightingale, voice, satysfying songes to saue.

Elephant gane a perfect memorie:

And Parrot, ready tongue, that to applie.

The Foxe gane craftie; the Dog gane flatterie;

Ass, pacience; the Mole, a working thought;

Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secrete crueltie:

Monkie, sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;

The Ermion, white skine; spotted with nought;

The Sheep, mild-seeming face, climbing, the Beare;

The Stagge did gane the harme eschewing feare.

The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholie;

Ari, industrious, and Connie, skil to builde;

Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;

Camelion, ease to change; Ducke, ease to yelde;

Crocidente, scarce which mighte be falsely spylde;

Ape great thing gane though he did mowing stand,

The instrument of instruments, the hand.
Arcadia. Lib. I.

Each other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they dread their prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to give him wings:
And dye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this privilege they grant,
That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
No beast should freely speake, but onely he.

Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to bestes best use his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
Not in his sayings sayings 1, but we:
As if he meant his lordship common be.

But when his seate so rooted he had found,
That they now skilck not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which against it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
But yet the common Damme none did bemeone;
Because (though hurt) they never heard her grone:

Then gan the factions in the bestes to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler bestes,
(As Tygers, leopards, beares, and Lions feed)
Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes;
Where famine ranine taught their runge cheastes,
That craftily he first them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

N 4
The Countesse of Pembrokes

For murtherers done, which never erst was seene,
By those great beasts, as for the weakers good,
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,
Gainst those of might, of whom in fear they stood,
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons cattell of the fielde,
Tho when they saw their foen of greatnes kilde.

But they or spent, or made of slender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light:
For by and by the horse faire bits did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like case might rewe
When falcon they, and gosshauke saw in mewe.

Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he used.
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'd to be abused,
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he bruised:
At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
At last for sport their sillie lines did spill.

But yet o man, rage not beyond thy neede:
Deeme it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; joy not to see things bleede:
Thou scarest death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.

And you poore beasts, in patience bide your hell,
Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.

Thus
Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houses
To sheepe, whom loure, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes hatefull flowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins desire:
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
Sure shepherds signe, that morne should soon fetch day.

According to the nature of diuerfe eares, diuerfe
judgements streight followed: some praifing his
voice: others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile: oth-
ers the strangenes of the tale, and fanning what he
shuld meane by it. But old Geron (who had borne him a
grudge euer since in one of their Eclogues he had taken
him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to
make his reveuenge, and faid, He neuer faw thing worse
proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not
what beasts at fuch a sport-meeting, when rather some
fong of loue, or matter for joyfull melody was to be
brought forth. But, faid he, This is the right conceipt
of young men, who thinke, then they speake wifeliest,
when they cannot understand themfelves. But little did
the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraifes,
or the others praifes, who had fet the foundation of
his honour there; where he was moft defpifed. And
therefore he returning againe to the traine of his defo-
late pensiuenesse, Geron inuited Hislor to anfwere him
in Eclogue-wise; who indeed hauing bene long in loue
with the faire Kala, and now by Lalus ouergone; was
growne into a deteftation of marriage. But thus it was.

Geron
The Countesse of Pembroke

Geron. Hiflor.

Geron. In faith, good Hiflor, long is your delay,
From holy marriage sweete and surest meanes:
Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.
I pray thee doo to Lalus sample leane:
Thou seest, how friske, and jolly now he is,
That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.
Believe me man, there is no greater blisse,
Then is the quiet joy of loving wife;
Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse.

Friend without change, playfellow without strife,
Foode without fulnes, counsaille without pride,
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.

Hiflor. No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,
As for to finde a pasture strawed with golde,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.

Who would not haue a Phoenix if he could?
The humming Waffe, if it had not a stinge,
Before all flies the Waffe accept I would.
But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions haue:
The Waffe seemes gay, but is a combrous thing.
If many Kalaes our Arcadia gaue,
Lalus example I would soone ensue,
And thinke, I did my selfe from sorrow saue.

But of such wifes we finde a slender creow,
Shrewdnes so stirres, pride so pusses up the hart,
They seldom ponder what to them is due.
With meager lookes, as if they still did smart;

Puiling
Puiling, and whimpering, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
   Ether dull silence, or eternall chat,
Still contrarie to what her husband says;
If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.
   Austere he is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iorney stayes.
   She warre doth ever with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who frends by nature are,
Envyng shallow toyes with malice deepe.
   And if for sooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating browes haue got;
Must goe for that, if for her loures he care:
   Or els, Nay faith, mine is the lucklesst lot,
That euer fell to honest woman yet:
No wife but I hath such a man, God wot.
   Such is their speech, who be of sober wit;
But who doo let their tongues shew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they shite?
   The house is made a very lothsome cage,
Wherein the birde doth never sing but cry,
With such a will as nothing can assuage.
   Dearly the servants doo their wages buy,
Reuiled for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doo lie.
   Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I secke not their shame, but still me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Who for ech fickle scare from vertue shrinkes,
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:
The Countesse of Pembroke's

No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinks.

The heau'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring.

But let vs pike our good from out much bad:

That still our little world may know his king.

But certainly so long we may be glad,

While that we doo what nature doth require,

And for th'event we never ought be sad.

Man oft is plag'de with airc, is burnt with fire,

In water drown'd, in earth his burial is;

And shall we not therefore their use desire?

Nature above all things requireth this,

That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;

Which drawer out line doth hold all humane blisse.

Thy father inshly may of thee complaine,

If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,

In granting unto him a grandsires gaine.

Thy common-wealth may rightly grieved be,

Which must by this immortal be preserued,

If thus thou mutther thy posteritie.

His very being he hath not defuered,

Who for a selfe-conept will that forbear,

Whereby that being aye must be conserv'd.

And God forbid, women such cattell were,

As you paint them: but well in you I finde,

No man doth speake aright, who speakes in feare.

Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.

These fiftie winters married haue I beene;

And yet finde no such faultes in womankind.

I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,

So well she can command, and yet obey;

In ruling of a house so well shee's scene.

And yet in all this time, betwixt vs tway,
Arcadia. Lib. I.

We heare our double yoke with such consent,
That never past foule word, I dare well say.
   But these be your love-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and love not as you should,
   But with much stude earne late to repent.
   How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.
   Go to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maist auowe,
   And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.
Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdome bowe
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
   And are not for thy fondes thrallome to allow.
   As we to get are framed, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home have care.
   O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:
Thy house by thee must liue, or els be gone:
   And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?
Riches of children passe a Princes throne:
Which touch the fathers hart with secret joy,
   When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.
   Marrie therefore, for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthfull head doo clime
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.

All the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fellowe, and easilie perceived in Histor, he liked Latus fortune better, then he loued his person. But Basllius to entermixe with these light notes of libertie, some sadder tune, set to the key of his own passion, not seeing
The Countesse of Pembroke

there Strephon or Klaues, (who called thence by Vranius letter, were both gone to continue their suite, like two true runners, both employing their best speed, but not one hindring the other) he called to one Lamó of their acquaintance, and willed him to sing some one of their songs; which he redily performed in this doble Seftine.

Strephon. Klaues.

Strephon. You Gote-heard Gods, that love the grassie mountaines,
You Nimphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies,
You Satyrs joyde with free and quiet forrests,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playing musique,
Which to my woes giues still an early morning:
And drawes the dolor on till very euening.

Klaues. O Mercurie, foregoer to the euening,
O heauenlie huntresse of the sauge mountaines,
O louelie starre, entitiled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playing musique,
Which oft hath Echo tir'd in secrete forrests.

Strephon. That was once free-burges of the forrests,
Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at euening,
That was once esteem'd for pleasant musique,
Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines
Of huge depeire, and soule afflicting vallies,
Am grownie a shrick-owle to my selfe each morning.

Klaues. That was once delighted euerymorning,
Hunting the wilde inhabiters of forrests,
Arcadia. Lib. 1.

I that was once the musique of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is cuening,
Hart-broken so, that molehilles seeme high mountaine.
And fill the vales with cries in stead of musique.

Long since alas, my deadly Swannish musique
Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing strength clim'd highest mountaine:
Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:
Long since I see my ioyes come to their cuening,
And sate thrown downe to outer-troden vallies.

Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,
Have praied me leave my strange exclaiming musique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, and ioyes of cuening:
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish myselfe layd vnder mountaines.

Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,
Transforme themselfes to lowe deiect vallies:
Me seemes I heare in these ill changed forrests,
The Nightingales doe learne of Owles their musique:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turne to the mortall serence of an cuening.

Me seemes I see a filthie cloudie cuening.
As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of murdered men in forrests.

I wish
The Counteſfe of Pembroke.

**Strephon.**
1. I wish to see the trees of all these forrests;
2. I give the Sunne a last farewell each evening;
3. I curse the stinking stinkers out of Musick:
4. With enuie I doe hate the loftie mountaines;
5. And with despite despite the humble vallies:
6. I doe detest night, euening, day, and morning.

**Klaus.**

Curse to myselfe my prayer is, the morning:

My fire is more, then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies;
I wish no eueninges more to see, each euening;
Shamed I have myselfe in sight of mountaines,
And stoppe mine eares, lest I growe mad with Musick.

**Strephon.**

For she, whose parts maintainde a perfect musique,
Whose beauteie shone more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,
In straightnesse past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternall euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.

**Klaus.**

For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,
She, whose last word brings from her sheares their musique,
At whose approch the Sunne rose in the euening,
Who, where she went, bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyled forrests,
Turning to desarts our best pastur'd mountaines.

**Strephon.**

These mountaines witnesse shall, so shall these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,
Our morning hymne is this, and song at euening.

*Zel-
Elmame seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but Philocleas cares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sange these Sapphiques, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to sudge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaued,
Hope we do liue yet.

But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not unto her knowne,
So that eyes message doo returne reiecte,
Hope we doo both dye.

Yet dying, and dead, doo we sing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praise;
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne;
Hers be the glory.

If the sphoares senseleffe doo yet hold a musique,
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,
Teldeth a lutes tune.

Are then humane mindes priviledg'd so meanly,
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre,
With the vowe of truthe to recorde to all worldes,
That we be her spoiles?

Thus
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Thus not ending, ends the due praise of her praise;
If the wale consume, but a sole hath his life,
Which is helde in love, love it, that hath ioynde
Life to this our sole.

But if eyes can speake to doo barty errande,
Or mine eyes language shee doo hap to judge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaued,
Hope we doo liue yet.

What exclaiming praises Basilius gaue to Zelmanes
fonge, any man may ghesse, that knowes loue is
better then a paire of spectacles to make every thing
seeme greater, which is seene through it: and then is it
never tongue-tied, where fit commendation (whereof
womankind is so licorous) is offered vnto it. Yea, he fel
prostrate on the ground, and thanked the Gods, they
had preserued his life so long, as to heare the very mu-
sique they themselues vsed, in an earthly body. But the
wasting of the torches servewed as a watch vnto them, to
make them see the time waste; and therefore the King
(though vnwilling) rose from the seate, which he
thought excellently setted on the one side: and consi-
dering Zelmanes late hurte, perswaded her to take that
farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides they went to
recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.
CHAP. I.

The love-complaintes of Gynecia, Zelmane, and Basilius. Her, and his wooing of Zelmane, and her shifting of both, to bemone her selfe

In these pastoral pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessous, while the cup of poison (which was deeply tasted of this noble companie) had left no finewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet never manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angrily, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of louers) had no sooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames upon the tops of the mountainees, but that the wosfull Gynecia (to whom rest was no eale) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places those de-
The Countesse of Pembrokes

certs were full of, going vp and downe with such vnquiet motions, as a grieved & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered vnto the eies of her judgemen the euils she was like to run into, with ougely infamie waiting vpon them: she felt the terrous of her owne conscience: she was guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The vtermost of the good she could aspire vnto, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her euils was, that she was wise to see her euils. In so much, that having a great while throwne her countenaunce ghastly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting vp her warrie eyes to heauen, O Sunne (said she) whose vnspotted light directs the steps of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy presence to such a dust-creepe ing worme as I am? O you heauens (which continuallly keepe the course allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile so much vpon the miserable Gynecia, as to make her preserue a course so lôg embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my hart can people you with wild rauenous beastes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart never but a vaine name, and no essentiaall thing, which hast thus left thy professed servant, when she had most need of thy louely presence? O imperfect proportio of reason, which ca too much forsee, & too little preuent. Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, & my euiill desernuing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing els did my husband take this straunge resolution to live so solitarrily: for nothing els have the winds delierced this straunge guest to my country: for nothing els haue the destinies referued my life to this time, but that only I (most wretched I) should become a plague to myself, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my desire (how vninst so euer it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths followed it, and euery death were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not my sepulcher receive me without some contentment. But alas, though sure I am, that Zelmaue is such as can answere my loue; yet as sure I am, that this disguising must needs come for some foretakè cousin. And then, wretched Gynecia, where cast thou find any final ground-plot for hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is Philoclea his hart is set vpon: it is my daughter I haue borne to supplant me. But if it be so, the life I haue giuen thee (vngratefull Philoclea) I will sooner with these handes bereave thee of, then my birth shall glory, she hath bereaued me of my desires. In shame there is no comfort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

Hauing spokè thus, she began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when she might heare (not far fro her) an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering note, that she could not conceave the wordes distinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find some companio of her misery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a number of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of the
The Countesse of Pembroke's

The lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to understand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceau a Lute excellently well played vpon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

**In vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende**
With flowing scares your fault of hasty sight:
Since to my hart her shape you so did sende,
That her I see, though you did lose your light.

**In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burn'd,**
With sighes you seeke to coole your hotte desire:
Since sighes (into mine inward fornace turn'd)
For bellowes servue to kindle more the fire.

**Reason, in vaine (now you have lost my Hart)**
My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte:
Since there mine eyes have played so false a parte,
That to your strength your foes have sure resorte.
Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,
To this strange death I vainely yeeld my life.

The ending of the song servued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (opressed with too heauy a burthe of cares) was faine to discharge it self of al sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in al fortes of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had euill joined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please...
please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the
time is changed; and no more did my joyfull minde
then receive every thing to a joyful consideration, then
my carefull mind now makes each thing tast like the bit-
ter iuyce of care. The euill is inward, my Lute, the euill
is inward; which all thou dost doth serue but to make
me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the
more cause I finde of thinking, but lesse of hoping. And
alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of
sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth
ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not
ashamed to leave thy master, since he is not afaide to
forfake himselfe.

And thus much spoké (in stead of a conclusion) was
closed vp with so harty a groning, that Gynecia could not
refraigne to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could
serue sedy for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she
came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke,
her eyes met with the eyes of Zelmane, which was the
party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie; so that
either of them remained confused with a sodaine asto-
nishment. Zelmane fearing, lest shee had heard some
part of those complaints, which shee had risen vp that
morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe.
But Gynecia a great while stoode still, with a kind of dull
amalement, looking steadfastly upon her: at length re-
turning to some vse of her selfe, shee began to ask Zel-
mane, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if
the opening of her mouth to Zelmane, had opened some
great flood-gate of sorrow (wherof her heart could not
abide the violet issue) she sanke to the ground, with her
hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, Zelmane helpe
The Countesse of Pembroke's

me, O Zelmae haue pittie on me. Zelmae ranne to her, maruelling what sodaine sickness had thus possessed her: and beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offering her service to be imploied by her: Gynecia opening her eyes wildly upon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the torments of her owne conscience; O Zelmae, Zelmae, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poyson? Or wilt thou doo me service, which haft alstedie brought me into eternall flauerie? Zelmae then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (saiied she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fittte. Retire my selfe? (said Gynecia) If I had retyr'd my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (unfortunate guest) camest to draw me from my selfe; blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counfaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee iudge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mishiefe. Zelmae the more astonished, the more she understood her, Madam (saiied she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selfe? Or wherein may I freed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered Gynecia, what shall I say more? Take pitty of me, O Zelmae, but not as Zelmae, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell. Zelmae was much troubled with that word, finding her selfe brought to this streight. But as shee was thinking what to answere her, they might see olde Basilius passe harde by them, without ever seeing them: complayning likewise of loue verie freshly, and ending his com-
complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

Et not old age disgrace my high desire,
   O heavenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflamde, doth yeeld the brauest fire,
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.

Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
   Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull hewe:
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes doo honour unto you.

Old age is wise and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed from raunging humor liues:
Old age hath knowne what euer was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour gines.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiously uppon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had saied, his strength had not yet forsaken him. But Zelma-ne hauing in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answere, looking vpon Gynecia, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquaintance with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an Amazon, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed. If my seruice may please you, impoy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me. Alas Zelmane (said Gynecia) I perceiue you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true louer.

There
The Countesse of Pembrookes

There is no one beame of those thoughts you have planted in me, but is able discerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seek not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was Zelmane brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceived his wife and mistres togetherso that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for having entertained Zelmane,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Ladie Zelmane. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ielousie in that point) obeyed the kings commanuement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all loyning meanes to winne Zelmane, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an overthrow given to her best resolutions, that euene her bodie (where the fielde was fought) was opprest withall: making a languishing sickness waite vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ielousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and Zelmane; hauing euery one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

Butas soone as Baslins was ridde of his wiuues presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which haft onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie; which can make old
old age come to advice cantaine of youth; and a Prince
vncouered, to become a slave to a stranger. And whe
you see that power of yours, louse that at first in me,
since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be
loued. Worthy Prince (answered Zelma, taking him
up from his kneeling) both your manner, and your
speech are so strange vnato me, as I know not how to
answer it better then with silence. If silence please you
(said the king) it shall neuer displease me, since my heart
is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would
vouchsafe mine eares such happiness, as to heare you,
they shall convey your words to such a mind, which is
with the humblest degree of reverencne to receive them.
I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said
Zelma,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which
may bring my honor into question. And therewith,
with a braue counterfeited scorne she departed from
the king, leaving him not so forie for his short answere,
as proud in himself that he had broken the matter. And
thus did the king (feeding his minde with those
thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making
more of himselfe, then he was wont to doo: that with
a little helpe, he would haue growne into a prettie kind
dotage.

But Zelma being ridde of this lough, but little-lo
ued company, Alas (said she) poore Pyrocles, was ther
ever one, but I, that had received wrong, and could
blame no body: that hauing more then I desire, am still
in want of that I woulde: Truly Louse, I must needes
say thus much on thy behalfe; thou hast imploied
my louse there, where all louse is deserued; and for re-
compence hast sent me more louse then ever I desired.

But
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But what wilt thou doo Pyrocles? which way canst thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I live in darkenesse: and to her am revealeed, from whom I would be most secret. What shift shall I finde against the diligent loue of Basilus? what shield against the violent passions of Gynecia? And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, wel, sweete Philoclea, my whole confidence must be builded in thy diuine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

CHAP. 2.

* Dametas his instructing of Dorus. * Zelmanes discourse to Dorus of her difficulties; & his to her of his succeffe in love. * His loue-suits made to Mopla, meant to Pamela: with their answers.

Vt as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieve them, & yet hauing company do finde it noysome; changing willingly outward objectes, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore Zelmane was no more weery of Basilus, then she was of her selfe, when Basilus was gone: and euer the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her owne judges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her friende Dorus; that vpon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of sorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches she found Dorus, apparelled in flanen, with a goats skin cast vpon him, & a garland of Laurell mixt
mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, wayting on his master Dametas, who at that time was teaching him how with his sheep-hooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a little clod at any one that strayed out of company. And while Dorus was practising, one might see Dametas hold his hand under his girdle behind him, nodding from the waist upwards, & swearing he never knew man go more awkwardly to work: & that they might talk of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he never saw more unseatie fellowes, then great clerks were.

But Zelmaus comming saued Dorus from further chiding. And so she beginning to speake with him of the number of his masters sheepe, and which Province of Arcadia bare the finest wool, drewe him on to follow her in such countrey discourses, till (being out of Dametas hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her hart would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, sauing so much worfe, as continuance of cuill dooth in it selfe increase cuill. Alas my Dorus (said she) thou seest how long and languishingly the weakes are paste over vs since our laste talking. And yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the insupportablenes of her desires, that Dorus cares (not able to shew what woundes that discourse gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue testimonie, how much they suffered for her
her suffering: till passion (a most cumbersome guest to it selfe) made Zelmaire (the sooner to shake it off) earnestly intreate Dorus, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mappe of his little worlde, vpon her, that she might see, whether it were troubled with such inhabitable climes of colde despaires, and hotte rages, as hers was. And so walking under a fewe Palme trees, (which being loving in their own nature, seemed to giue their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of loue) Dorus thus entred to the description of his fortune.

Alas (said he) deare Cousin, that it hath pleas'd the high powers to throwe vs to such an estate, as the one-ly entercourse of our true friendshipp, must be a bar-tring of miseries. For my parte, I must confessindeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitiff may the better remember the light, of which he is depriued : or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selfe ytterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serue in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the seruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleas'd the Princesse (in whom indeedestatelines shines through courtesie) to let fall some gratious looke vpon me. Sometimes to see my ex-
exercises, sometimes to heare my songes. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable Pamela, see how much extraordinary devotion I bare to her service: and withall, strange to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, joyned to so great affection, might prevaile something in the wisest Lady. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepeheards service was but considered as from a shepeheard, and the acceptation limitted to no further proportion, then of a good servant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I sawe straight, Maiestie (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sworde of lust disdain, that I remayned as a man thunder-striken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowne, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspitionlines of Dametas, Misio, and my young Mistresse, Mopsa. For, Dametas (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wise, then by suspecting euery thing in his way. Which suspition Misio (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine') and Mopsa (for a very unlikely enuie the hath stumbled vpon, against the Princesses unspeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my service by this means lightlie regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe vnknowne) remayned no fuller of desir, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desir. Which (alas) if these trees could speake, they might well witnesse. For, many times haue I stoode here, bewailing my selfe vnto them: many
many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palmc, admired the blessednes of it, that coulde beare Loue without fence of paine. Many times, when my matters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull teftifie his loue. But how? with proud lookes, and joyfulnes. O wretched mankind (sai d I then to my fel t e) in whom witte (which should be the gouernor of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inherite her blessings quietly; we, like bastards, are layd abroad, even as foundlinges to be trayned vp by griefe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their fences are letted from enjoying their obie cts: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truely in such cogitatios haue I somtimes so long stood, that me thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with such a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might easilie haue bene perswaded to haue resigned ouer my very essence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pull ed vp my harte to remeber, that nothing is achieved before it be throughlie attempted, and that lying still doth neuer goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or neuer, to sha rpen my inuention, to perce thorow the hardnes of this enterprise, neuer ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other; how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at laft, I lighted and resolued on this way, which yet perchaunce you will think was a way rather to hide it.

I began to counterfeite the extremest loue towards

Mopsh
Mopsa, that might be: and as for the loue, so lively it was indeed within me, (although to another subject) that little I needed to counterfeit any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fownnes I beheld Pamela's fayrenesse; still looking on Mopsa, but thinking on Pamela; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but Mopsa: to Mopsa my attendance was directed: to Mopsa the best fruites I could gather were brought: to Mopsa it seemed still that mine eye conveyed my tongue. So that Mopsa was my laying; Mopsa was my singing; Mopsa, (that is onely suteable in laying a foule complexion upon a filthy fauour, setting foorth both in fluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, the the blessing of mine eyes, she the ouerthrowe of my desires, and yet the recom pense of my ouerthrowe; she the sweetnesse of my harte, even sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon me. In summe, what foeuer I thought of Pamela, that I saide of Mopsa; whereby as I gatte my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing left I should winne the Princesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certayne sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely foeuer she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of Mopsa's worthinesse, she perceived well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Where-
Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tell (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne loue, and estate, finding Mopfa (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with Pamela, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of cloudy fancies, take a harpe, and fonge this fonge.

Since so mine eyes are subiect to your sight,  
That in your sight they fixed have my braine;  
Since so my harte is filled with that light,  
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,  
That where you are no wished good can want;  
Since so your liuing image liues in me,  
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant;  
How can you him unworthy then decree,  
In whose chiefeste parte your worthes implanted be?

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the middelt with grievous sighes, which ouertooke euery verse I sang, I let fall my harpe from me; & casting my eie sometime vpon Mopfa, but setting my sight principally vpon Pamela, And is it the onely fortune most bewtiful Mopfa (said I) of wretched Dormus, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of cruelty against me? Alas excellent Mopfa, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subiect, and the heavely
ly Sunne disdaines not to give light to the smallest worme. O Mopsa, Mopsa, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is uncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteranaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet uniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that all these are but ornamentes of that diuine sparke within you, which being descended from heauen could not else-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercifulness to such a one, as is in his soule devoted to those perfections. Mopsa (who already had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most commonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in stead of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you left with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the ever-pleasing Pamela (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe Mopsa to her parte) was content to vrage a little further of me. Maister Dorus (said the faire Pamela) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require Mopsa to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers seruaunt; since she is not worthy to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staid a good while after her words,
The Countesse of Pembroke

in hope she would have continued her speech (so great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body) I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebellious handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you have a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) have leau to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; shall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I faie, lifted vp to such a height, be counteved base? O let not an excellent spirit doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loud, there can be any vnhorthy, since the weakest mist is not easilier driven away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gratioust Pamela) but that the loue you beare to Mopsa, hath brought you to the consideracion of her vertues, and that consideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But euen that then (you must confesse) you have received of her, and so are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to press any further, till you bring something of your owne whereby to claime it. And truely Doris, I must in Mopsaes behalfe
behalfe say thus much to you, that if her beauties have so over-taken you, it becomes a true Love to have your harte more set upon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madam(e said Mopsla, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euyn touched mine owne minde to the quicke fortooth. I finding that the policie that I had vised, had at left wise procured thus much happiness vnto me, as that I might euyn in my Ladies preference, discouer the fore which had deeply settered within me, and that she could better conceaue my reasons applied to Mopsla, then she would haue vouchsafed them, whilst her selfe was a partie thought good to pursue on my good beginning, vsing this fit occasion of Pamela's wit, and Mopsla's ignorance. Therefore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon Pamela, as if I had rather bene cödemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to Mopsla, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire Mopsla (said I) well doo I finde by the while knitting together of your answere, that any disputation I can vse is as much too weake, as Ivnworthy. I finde my loue shalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a vessell in whö so high thoughts should be engraved. Yet since the loue I beare you, hath so ioyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one can not depart, but that th'other will follow, before I seeke to obeye you in making my last passage, let me know which is my vnwor-thines, either of mind, estate, or both? Mopsla was about to say, in neither, for her hart I thinke tumbled with euyn much kindnesse, when Pamela with a more fauourable counte:
countenance the before (finding how apt I was to fall into despair) told me, I might therein have answered myself; for besides that it was granted me, that the inward feeling of Mopsaes perpetius had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could deny, but that my minde and bodie deserved great allowance. But Dorus (sayd she) you must be so farre maister of your loue, as to consider, that since the judgement of the world stands vpon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to have regardfull eie to mens judgements, it is not for vs to play the philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise prince would be couted wisdom, in vs will be taken for a light-grounded affection: so is not one thing, one, done by divers persons. There is no man in a burning feuer feele so great contentment in cold water greedily received (which assoone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronounced words; & newly, & more violently againe enflamed, assoone as she had closed vp her delightfull speach, with no lesse wel graced silence. But remémbring in my self, that as well the Soulltier dieth which standeth still, as he that giues the brauest onset: & seeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel witnessing how deeply my soule was possesed, & with the most submissiue behauior, that a thrall'd hart could express, euë as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at length spake to this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princesse (said I) & do not then your owne sweet words sufficiently testify, that there was neuer ma could have a iustera action against
against filthy fortune, the I, since all other things being
granted me, her blindness is my only let. O heavenly
God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to
discerne my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily
cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured
Lady, if my miserable speeches have not already cloied
you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch be-
come not hatefull in your eyes; let me reply thus much
further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a
storie, which happened in this same country long since
(for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby
you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible,
but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like up-
on him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a
mightie Princesse. Pamela gratiously harkened, and I
told my tale in this fort

CHAP. 3.

Dorus-his tale of his owne education, travaile, enamoring,
metamorphosing, saving from sea, and being Musidorus.
His octave, Pamela and Mopsas answere to his suit.
His present to them, and perplexitie in himselfe.

N the countrey of Thessalia, (alas why name I that accursed coun-
try, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but
name it I must) in Thessalia (I say) there was (well may I say, there
was) a Prince (no, no Prince, who bondage wholly possessed; but
yet
yet accounted a Prince, and named Musidorus. O Musidorus, Musidorus, but to what ferue exclamations, where there are no eares to receive the sounde? This Musidorus, being yet in the tendre stage, his worthy father paid to nature (with a violent death) her last dueties, leaving his childe to the faith of his friends, and the proofe of time: death gave him not such pangs as the foresight-full care hee had of his silly successor. And yet if in his foresight he could haue seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sones miseries, which his knowledge could neither haue prevented, nor reliued. The young Musidorus (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, deprevied of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starrs would breath themselves for a greater mischiefe) lulled vp in as much good luck, as the heedfull loue of his dolefull mother, and the flourishing estate of his country could breed vnto him.

But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I think there was a conspiracy in all heavenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraigne matters in fortime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowehead life, desiring the same her subiectes did, for the increase of her sones worthinesse. And here-to did Musidorus owne vertue (see how vertue can be a minister to mischiefe) sufficiently prouoke him: for indeed
indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likeness of our mishaps makes me presume to pattern my selfe unto him) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this together, was his uncle the king of Macedon; who having lately before gotten such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought vp together, to avoid the warres, with Musidorus) and for Musidorus himselfe, that his joy might be the more full, having such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, till Pamela shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfy the king, tooke their way by sea, towards Thrace, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to succour him: he being at that time before Byzantium with a mighty Army besieging it, where at that time his court was. But when the conspir'd heauens had gotten this Subject of their wrath upon so fit a place as the sea was, they straight began to breath out in boyfrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Nauie, he onely with the Prince his cofin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would have guided them. O cruell winds in your vnconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittifull mishaps fell to the young Prince of Macedon his cofen, I should
should too much fill your ears with strange horrors; neither will I stay upon those laborious adventures, nor loathsome misadventures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speech hathneth itself to come to the full-point of Musidorus his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestilent diseases do gather into themselves all the infirmity, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace the extreme of itself all his former mischiefs.

3 Arcadia, Arcadia was the place prepared to be the stage of his endless overthrow. Arcadia was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for ever should be enchantcd. For here (and no where else) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heauenly beauty hath to throw it downe to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the Arcadian Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed all his hopes of joy, and joyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleue, whom seeing cannot perswade: Those paines must be felt before they can be understood, no outward utterance can command a concept. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seek her. And such was the state of his captiued wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he cloathed himselfe in a shep-heards weede, that under the basenesse of that forme, he might at least haue free accesse to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate vp his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this estate is not always to be rejected, since under
der that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast vp his eyes to the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter; and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon thercfor, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be understand, I haue said enough, for the defence of my basencce; and for that which after might befall to that pattern of ill fortune, (the matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their owne worke-manship.

Thus having deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse might judge that he ment himselfe, who spake so feelingly; her answer were was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? She hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant prince Plangus, and particularly of our casting away; which she (following my owne stile) thus delicately brought foorth. You haue told (said she) Dorus, a prettie tale; but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the prince Mesidorus with his cosen Pyrocles did both perish upon the coast of Laconia; as a noble gentleman, called Plangus (who was well acquainted with the historie) did assure my father. O how that speech of hers did poure ioyes in my hart; o blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou haft bene in that toong, and passed through those lips, though
though I can never hope to approach them. As for Mnesicles (said I) I will not deny it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspicion might arise of your being, then your selfe would have it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it. But for Musidorus (said I) I perceiue indeed you haue neither heard or read the story of that unhappy Prince; for this was the verie objection, which that peerelesse Princesse did make vnto him, where he sought to appeare such as he was before her wisdome: and thus as I have read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might answere her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a treason was perished; and therefore that Plan-gus might easely be deceaued: but that he himselfe was cast vpon the coast of Laconia, where he was taken vp by a couple of shepheardes, who lived in those dayes famous; for that both loving one faire maide, they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was sone before you by the shepheard Lamon, and brought by them to a noble-mans house, neere Mantinea, whose sonne had a little before his marriage, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, Musidorus (though naming himselfe by another name) was deliuered. Now these circumlocutions I did use, because of the one side I knew the Princesse would knowe well the parties I ment; and of the other, if I should haue named Strephon, Claius, Kalander, and Clitophon, perhaps it would haue rubb'd some conjecture into the heauie heade of Missesse Mopfa.

And therefore (said I) most divine Lady, he justly was to argue against such suspicions; that the Prince might easilie
easily by those parties be satisfied, that upon that wreck such a one was taken vp: and therefore that Plangus might well erre. who knew not of anies taking vp againe: that he that was so preferred, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wrecked company: which two since Plangus knew to be Musidorus and Pyrocles, he must needs be one of them, although (as I said) upon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needs judge, that no lesse then a Prince durst undertake such an enterprise, which (though he might gette the favour of the Princesse) he could never defend with lesse the a Princes power, against the force of Arcadia. Lastly, (said he) for a certain demonstration, he presumed to shew vnto the Princesse a mark he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare Mopsa: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may ascertaine her selfe, that I am Menaclus brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into Thessalia, secretely to be aduertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince Musidorus. Doe you not know further (saide she, with a settled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for even here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke vpon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind
The Countesse of Pembroke

kind of shepheard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and sang these few verces.

7 My sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serue:
Their pasture is faire hilles of fruitlesse Loue:
On barren sweetes they feede, and feeding serue:
I waile their lotto, but will not other prove.
My sheepe hooke is warne hope, which all upholdes:
My weedes, Desire, cut out in endless foles:
     What wooll my sheepe shal beare, whilsts thus they live,
     In you it is, you must the judgement give.

And then, partly to bring Mopsa againe to the matter (left she should too much take heed to our discourges) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answeares, I kneeled downe to the Princeffe, and humble besought her to moue Mopsa in my behalfe, that she would vnarme her hart of that steely resistace against the sweet blowes of Loue: that since all her parts were decked with some particular ornamet, her face with beautie, her head with wisdome, her eyes with maieftie, her countenance with gracefulnes, her lippes with louelines, her tongue with victorie, that she would make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

Pamela, without shew either of fauour or disdaine, either of heeding or neglecting what I had said, turned her speech to Mopsa, and with such a voice and action,
as might shee she spake of a matter which little did concern her. Take heed to your selfe (saideshe) Mopsa, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely, if he doo fully prooue himselfe such as he faith, I mean, the honest shepheard Menalchas his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde thinke forme of him. Mopsa though (in my conscience) she were euen then farre spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my queint speeches, she would keepe her honestie close enough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she would steppe neuer a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole word him selfe, no she would not. But euery and anon turning her muzzel towards me, she threwe such a prospect upon me, as might well haue giuen a surfeit to any weake louers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that druida speeches among my noble thoughts: but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a full knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from vs, I tooke a jewel, made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to Mopsa, but bending to Pamela: The word about it was, By force, not choice; and still kneeling, besought the Princesse that she would vouchesafe to giue it Mopsa, and with the blessednes of her hande to make acceptable unto her that toye which I had founde, following of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (sayd I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-share lighted vpoun a great stone: we poud that vp
The Countesse of Pembroke's

wp, & so found both that, and some other pretty things which we had deuided betwixt vs.

10 Mopfa was benummed with joy when the Princesse gaue it her: but in the Princesse I could finde no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calme carelesnesse letting each thing slide, lastly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong unto vs) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall maiestie, is of all others most terrible vnto me: for yet if I found she contemned me, I would desperately labour both in fortune and vertue to overcome it; if she onely misdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I woulde bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of desert I would take away the tewell from that fire; or if nothing would serue, then I would give her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to fauour, grattious, but grattious still after one maner; all her courtseyes hauing this engraven in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties; ever keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayers, nor curses, will spare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heauenlines of hers, (for how so euer my miserie is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach vnto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyranny of despaiere, not knowing any way of perswasiso, where wiselome seemes to be vnsensible. I haue appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a deuice I vsed with my maister, perswading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparel I had provided, and so practife some thing
thing on horseback before Par CEOs, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at Athens: my horse indeed was it I had left at Menalces house, and Dametas got one by friendship out of the Princes stable. But how sooner I show, I am no base bodie, all I do is but to beate a rocke and get some.

CHAP. 4.

Basilius his hauling. Gynecias hurte by Dametas overturning her coache. Her icelousie over Zelmane. Philocleas loutpassions, vowe of chastitie, renocation; lamentation.

Vt as Dorus was about to tell further, Dametas (who came whistleing, & counting vpon his fingers how many loade of hay his seuenteen fat oxen eat vp in a yeare) desired Zelmane from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said Dorus, taking his leave) the sum is this, that you may wel find you have beate your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your sorrow stronger. But Zelmane turning her speach to Dametas, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I haue often conference with your seruuant. In sooth (answered Dametas with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may prove well enough, if he overfoon thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he heareth
ruth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make Zelmann find the might havest pet her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne over all the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore Zelmann yeldeed her cares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answer, till they came to Basilius, and Gynecia, who atted for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. Basilius and Gynecia sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to Philoclea. Zelmann was mowed in her minde, to haue kissed their feete for the favoure of so blessed a scate: for the narrownesse of the coach made them joine from the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch whereof though it were barred by their enuous apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an iuorie boxe, will thorow the boxe fend forth his imbraced vertue to a beloved needle; so this imparadisled neigbourhood made Zelmannes soule cleauie unto her, both thorow the iuory cafe of her body, and the apparell which did owre-clowd it. All the bloud of Zelmannes body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastely put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetnes of the beloved guest, her hart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but striving violently (if it had bene possible) to haue leapt into the lappe of Philoclea. But Dametas, even then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a little proud in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of Arcadia, draue the coach (the couer
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

whereof was made with such joints, that as they might (to avoid the weather) pull it vp close when they lifted, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horfebacke) till vp on the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Ycmen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe vnto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule ouer a riuer. But the sporte which for that daie Basilus would principallie shewe to Zelmaei, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to fly thorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to giue example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should shew: where a Ierfaulcon was cast of after her, who streight spying where the pray was, fixing her eie with desyre, & guiding her wing by her eie, vfed no more streth then industry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his flayre vpright, but winding almost the ful copasse about, that the steepnes be the more unsensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursued chase, went circkling, & copassing about, rising so with the lesse fence of rising; & yet finding that way scantily serue the greedines of her haft, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite out another way, but
but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once
gotten, she would either beate with cruel assaults the
Heron, who now was driuen to the best defence of
force, since flight would not serue; or els clasping with
him, come downe together, to be parted by the ouer-
partiall beholders.

Diuers of which flights Basilius shewing to Zelmene,
thus was the richesse of the time spent, and the day
deceased before it was thought of, till night like a de-
generating successful made his departure the better
remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they wil-
led Dametas to drive homeward, who (halfe sleeping,
halfe musing about the mending of a vine-presse) gui-
ded the horses so ill, that the wheeles comming over a
great stub of a tree, it overturned the coach. Which
though it fell violently upon the side where Zelmae &
Gynecia sat, yet for Zelmanes part, she would have bene
glad of the tall, which made her beare the sweete bur-
then of Philoclea, but that she feared she might re-
ceaue some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor a-
y of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs
within the coach, saveing Gynecia, who with the onely
bruise of the fall had her shoulder put out of joint;
which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it
was set well againe, yet with much paine was she
brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary
companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine
them both in her bedde.

But neither was the feuer of such impatient heate,
as the inwarde plague-lore of her affection, nor the
paine halfe so noysome, as the jealousie she conceaued
of her daughter Philoclea, left this time of her sickness
might give apt occasion to Zelmane, whom she much doubted. Therefore she called Philoclea to her, and though it were late in the night, commanded her in her care to go to the other lodge, and send Misfo to her, with whom she would speak, and she lie with her sister Pamela. The meantime Gynecis kepte Zelman with her, because she would be sure she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced Zelmane. Philoclea not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torch-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete Philoclea) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which having caused in others, thou didst feel in thy selfe.

The sweete minded Philoclea was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill or eueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an unspotted simplicitie, then many, who rather cunningly secke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselves the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heavenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; so now the Ladye Philoclea (whose eyes and senses had receaued no-thing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required, which fro the tender youth had obedi-ently liued under her parents behests, without framing
The Countesse of Pembroke's

out of her own will the fore-choising of any thing wherewith she came to appoint, wherein her judgment was to be practiced, in knowing faultiness by his first tokés, she was like a yong faune, who coming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that Zelmane had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her coming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conversatiō, her wit & behauiour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, joined with the extreme shewes she made of most deuout honouring Philoclea, (carying thus in one person the only two bads of good will, louelines & louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most friendly affection; which when it had gotten so ful possession of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no message fro her sense, without that affection were the interpreter; the streight grew an exceeding delight stil to be with her, with an unmeasurable liking of all that Zelmane did; matters being so turned in her, that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-will, now good-will became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while Zelmane was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was Zelmanes. The followed that most natural effect of coforming ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be herself such an other in all things, but to ground an imitation upon so much an esteemed authoritie: so that the next degree was to marke all Zelmanes dooings, speeches,
and fashions, and to take them into herself, as a pattern of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not only by the comminaltie of Passions, but agreed unto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it self (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thoroughly observed. Then grew on that not onely she did imitate the sobernes of her countenance, the gracefulnesse of her speech, but even their particular gestures: so that as Zelmane did often eye her, she would often eye Zelmane, & as Zelmanes eyes would deliver a submissiuue, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answer in like pearcing kindnessse of a looke. Zelmae as much as Gynecias jealousie would suffer, desired to be neere Philocea; Philocea, as much as Gynecias jealousie would suffer, desired to be neere Zelmane. If Zelmane tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnes) shew she was loth to part from it. And if Zelmane sighed, she would sigh also; where Zelmane was sad, she deemed it wisdome, and therefore she would be sad too. Zelmanes languishing countenance with crost armes, and sometimes cast-up eyes, she thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenance: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not onely the band, but the seruice, not onely the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in continuance did finde, that Zelmanes friendship was full of impatient desire, having more the ordinarie limits, & therefore she
The Countesse of Pembroke

she was content to second Zeilmane, though herself knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-loue (well considered) have an infective power. At last she fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wishing. First she would wish, that they two might live all their lives together, like two of Dianas Nimphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nimphes besides them, who also would have their part in Zeilmane. The would she wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered, that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or Zeilmane a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displayed his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battle of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreams by night beganne to bring more vnto her, then she durst wish by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to be cured: so the sweete Philocles, while she might prevent it, she did not feele it, now she felt it, when it was past preventing, like a river, no rampiers being built against it, till alreadie it have overflowed. For now indeed, Loue puld of his malke, and shewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that she was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her
her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie coulor was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of paleness; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more jealous her mother was, the more she thought the Jewell precious, which was with so many lookes garded. But that prevailing so far, as to kepe the two louers from private conference, then began she to seeke the sweetnesse of a louers solitariness, when freely with words and gestures, as if Zelma were present, shee might giue passage to her thoughts, and so as it were utter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull gestures and uncertaine paces, shee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood; where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set together, as with the shade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of devotion to looke upon it. But true thoughts of loue banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade beguil-
but of looking upon her: There had the enjoyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the Silvan gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before Zelmas comming, had written these words vpon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspition her captiuictie made her thinke she liued in. The writing was this.

You living poore enclosed in stately shrine
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield
Your scepters here, fit to your eares divine
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yield:
   This vowe receaue, this vowe o Gods maintaine;
   My virgin life no spotted thought shall slaine.

Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth shewe
My tempred hart, by thee my promise sent
Vnto my selfe let after-tiers know.
   No fancy mine, nor others wroigne suspeet
   Make me, o vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.

O Chastitie, thechiefe of heavenly lightes,
Which maketh most immortall shape to weare,
Hold thee my hart, esstablish thou my sprights:
To onely thee my constant course I bcare.
But now that her memorie servèd as an accusing of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to bare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the topes together, as they might seeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceive the goodly stone, which servèd as an altar in that woddie devotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was already foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaved, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which never receiuedst spot but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she haue chaunged since. Enjoy, enjoy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancia. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which, if she had had present commoditie, she would haue adjoyned as a retracation to the other. They were to this effect.

My words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde,
This marble house, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words desaide, my fancyes blinde,
Blots to the stone, shame to myselfe I finde:
And wittnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A woman's hand with constant marble stone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;
The Counteſfe of Pembroke

My words in store, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;
My words vnſee, the marble still in ſight,
May witneſſe beare, how ill agree in one,
A woman's hand, with constant marble ſtone.

But seeing she could not see meanes to ioyne as the
this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire
length ynder one of the trees) for a while she did no-
thing but turne vp and downe, as if she had hoped
to turne away the fancie that maſtred her, and hid her
face, as if she could haue hidden her ſelfe from her
owne fancies. At length with a whifpring note to her
ſelfe; O me unfortuneate wretch (ſaid ſhe) what poyno-
ous heates be these, which thus torment me? How
hath the ſight of this strange ſtate intruaded my ſoule?
Alas, what entraſe found this desire, or what ſtrength
had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud paſſing be-
tweene her ſight and the moone, O Diana (ſaid ſhe) I
would either the cloud that now hides the light of my
vertue would as easily paſſe away, as you will quickly
overcome this let, or els that you were for euer thus
darkned, to ſerue for an excuse of my outrageous folly.
Then looking to the ſtarres, which had perfittly as then
beautified the cleere ſkie: My parëts (ſaid ſhe) haue told
me, that in these faire heavenly bodies, there are great
hiddë deities, which haue their working in the ebbing
& flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars)
judge rightly of me, & if I haue with wicked intet made
my ſelfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle luſtes I fra-
med my harte fit for ſuch an impreſſion, then let this
plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made
odious
odious to womankind. But if extreme and irresistible violence haue oppressed me, who will ever do any of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot help me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish objections (simple Philoclea) it is the impossibilitie that dooth torment me: for, unlawful desires are punishd after the effect of enjoying; but impossible desires are punishd in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times unhappie that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth love, in me despair should be the bellowes of my affection: and of all despaire the most miserable, which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most courrous man longs not to get riches out of a groud which never can beare any thing: Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heauen; Why? because it is impossible. Alas then, ô Loue, why dost thou in thy beautifull sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemnne my Fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What doo I, Sille wench, knowe what Loue hath prepared for me? Doo I not see my mother, as well, at left as furiously as my selfe, loue Zelmane? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible, or els impossible loues neede not misbecome me. And doo I not see Zelmane (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdome and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to loue me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes dep ofe it to be true, what then? and if she can loue
The Countesse of Pembroke

love poore me, shall I thinke scorne to love such a woman as Zelmaine? Away then all vaine examinations of whyn and how. Thou louest me, excellent Zelmaine, and I loue thee: and with that, embracing the very grounde whereon she lay, she said to her selfe (for euene to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my Zelmaine, gouerne and direct me: for I am wholly giuen ouer vnto thee.

CHAP. 5.

The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela.

Pamelas narration of her shepheardes making love, of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe, of his hotspur suite, and her colde acceptance. His letter. Her relenting, and Philocleas sole complaint.

In this depth of muzes, and divers sorts of discourses, would she haue rauingly remained, but that Dametas and Miso (who were rounde about to secke her, understanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; Dametas saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or save a chicken from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And Miso swearing that if it were her daughter Mopsa, she woulde giue her a leson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But
But their iangling made Philoclea rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed Miso to waite upon her mother) to the lodge, where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serve her selfe) she went alone vp to Pamela's chamber: where meaning to delight her eyes, and joy her thoughts with the sweet conversation of her beloved sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a charie, lying backward, with her head almost over the back of it, & looking vp on a wax-candle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchief, which had lately dronk vp the teares of her eyes, leaning in stead of them, crimson circles, like reddle flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which Philoclea finding (for her eyes had learned to know the dges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But Pamela, rather seeming forie that she had perceiued so much, then willing to open any further, O my Pamela (said Philoclea) who are to me a sister in nature a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our cou-try, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your favoure, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you love your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I shall not love a ladde Pamela, so well as a joyfull? Or be my eares vnwoorthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yet and servant Philoclea?
The Countesse of Pembroke

These wordes wanne no further of Pamela, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impoverisht their cloathes to inrique their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of Venus: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaffe embracements, with sweet, though cold kisses; it might seeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreffe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But Philoclea carresfully againe intreated Pamela to open her griefe; who (drawing the cur- tain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stoppt by her, and turned into fighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete Philoclea, let vs talke offsome other thing: & tell me whether you did euer see any thing so ammended as our Pastoral sports be, since that Dorus came hether? O Loue, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? Philoclea had straignt found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (said she) I haue often wonndered to my self how such excellecies could be in so meane a perion; but belike Fortune was atraide to lay her treasures, where they should be staind with so many perfections: onely I maruaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare giftes vnnder such a block as Dametas. Ah (said Pamela) if you knew the cauie: but no more doo I neither; and to say the trueth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while Dametas reades his rusticke lecture vnto him (how to feeede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger handsome for
for his oxen, when to vse the goade, & when the voice: giving him rules of a hearde, though he pretended to make him a shepheard) to see all the while with what a grace (which seemes to set a crowne vpon his base estate) he can descended to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serues this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my Pamela (said Philoclea) I haue caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disjointed speeches: you loure, dissemble no further. It is true (said Pamela) now you haue it; and with lesse ado should, if my hart could haue thought those words utelable for my mouth. But indeed (my Philoclea) take heed: for I thinke Virtue it self is no armour of proofe against affection. Threfore learne by my example. Alas thought Philoclea to her selfe, your sheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then Pamela being once set in the streme of her Loue, went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawn her liking towards him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, & so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & euer kept from it (as el because she shund it, seing and disdaining his mind, as because of her jealous iaylours) he had at length vsed the finest pollicie that might be in counterfaiiting loue to Mopsha, & saying to Mopsha what soever he would haue her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore Mopsha beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shall know my teares come not, neither of repetance nor misery, who thinke you, is my Dorus fallen out.
out to be: even the Prince Musidorus, famous over all Asia, for his heroical enterprizes, of whom you remember how much good the stranger Plangus told my father; he not being drowned (as Plangus thought) though his cousin Pyrocles indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or scene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his love was, you would have matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to doo virtuously) can I without the detestable staine of ungratefulnesse abstaine from louing him, who (far exceeding the beautifulnesse of his shape with the beautifulnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his acts) is content so to abase himselfe, as to become Dametas servant: for my sake you will say, but how know I him to be Musidorus, since the handmaid of wisdome is slow belief: That consideratio did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receive belief, then it is hard to ground belief: For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that have I had of him, not alone by necessary arguments to any of common sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would have me send to Thessalia: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Love so much wrong: as so far to suspect him; yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For every day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe unto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

A few daies since, he & Dametas had furnished thence
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

felues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see Dametas, like rich Tissew surd with lambe skins. But o how well it did with Dorus to see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me on horseback, making maiestie wait vpon humblenes: how at the first, standing stil with his eies bent vpó me, as though his motiōs were chained to my looke, he so staide till I caused Mopsa bid him doo something vpon his horse: which no looner said, but (with a kinde rather of quick gesture, then shew of violēce) you might see him come towards me, beating the ground in so due time, as no daunce can obserue better measure. If you remember the ship we saw once, where the Sea went hie vpon the coast of Argos, so went the beast: But he (as if Cētaurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was no more moued, then one is with the going of his owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both spurres and wande,they seemed rather markes of soueraintie, then instruments of punishment;his hand and legge. (with most pleasing grace) commading without threatning, & rather remēbring then chastising, at lest if sometimes he did, it was so stolēn, as neyther our eyes could discerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did cōplaine of it, he ever going so just with the horse, either foorth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hand somthing gently flir, but indeed so gently, as it did rather distill vertue, then vse violence. Himsel{w} (which me thinkes is strange) shewing at one instant both steadines & nimblenes, somtimes making him turne close to the ground,
like a cat, when scratchingly she wheeles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Rauen leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of Dametan kiddes bound over the hillocks: and all so done, as neither the lustie kindes shewed any roughnesse, nor the easter any idlenes: but still like a well obeyed maister, whose becke is enough for a discipline, euer concluding each thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not only the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sporte was to see Dametan, how he was tost from the sadle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giving his gay apparell almost as foule an outide, as it had an inside. But as before he had euer said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as braue a courtier as the best, so now brused with prowe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisedome, to put himselfe vnder the tuition of a beast; so as Dorus wasayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at left my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, the descending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at left (if they were divers motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed Dametan found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

But how delightfull soever it was, my delight might well be in my foule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more
more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppress it, or at least to conceal it. Indeed I must confess, as some Physicists have told me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; so truly the cold ashes layed upon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my breast swollen with keeping my sighs imprisoned; full often have the tears, I drawe backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore Dorus? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) could have carried unto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one invention he would appeare vnto me to testify his loue. One time he daunced the Matabine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexterity!) I thinke to make me see, that he had bene brought vp in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play Priamus while he plaide Paris. Thinke (sweet Philoclea) what a Priamus we had: but truely, my Paris was a Paris, and more then a Paris: who while in a saugie apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made loue to Oenone, you might wel see by his chaunged countenance, and true tears, that he felt the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet Philoclea) did you euer see such a shepheard? tell me, did you euer heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or unworthy affaulte have conquered me. Truely I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But since my parents deale so cruellly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my owne judgement. Yet hetherto have my lookes bene as I told you, which
which continuing after many of these his fruitful trials, have wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that word she laid her hand upon her quaking side) I do not a little fear him. See what a letter this is (then drew she the curtain and took the letter from under the pillow) which to daies (with an affli ed humblenesse) she delivered me, pretending before Mopsa, that I should read it vnto her, to mollifie (fortho) her iron stomache; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

M ost blessed paper, which shalt kiss that had, where to all blessednes is in nature a servat, do not yet disdain to carry with thee the woful words of a mifer now despairing; neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the base title of the sender. For no sooner shall that divine hande touch thee, but that thy bafeness shall be turned to most hie preferment. Therefore mourne boldly my Inke; for while she lookes vp o you, your blacknes will shine: crye out boldly my Lametatio; for while she reads you, your cries will be musick. Say then (O happy messenger of a most vnhappy message) that the too soone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe, vnto her heavenly highnesse) onely presumes to desiere thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and in this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much vnto her sacred judgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by Loue, desie him that armed you, in this high estate wherein you haue placed me, yet let me remember him
to whom I am bound for bringing me to your presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how mean so euer it be) it is reaſſo you have an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his grave, and will you suffer a temple (how poorely-built, euer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be raved? But he dyeth: it is moſt true, he dyeth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whercof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dyes, because in wofull language all his fenses tell him, that such is your pleafure: for since you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the moſt ruined Dorus, but his ende? Ende then, euill destined Dorus, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it suffiſeth her wifedome to know, that her heauenly will ſhalbe accomplished.

O my Philoclea, is hee a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had feene, when with trembling hand he had deliuered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to his Sepulcher. Two times I muſt confesse I was about to take curteſie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolutionflopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindneſſe. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I lookeſſed to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him euer ſince hath put me into ſuch perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my Pamela (saiſd Philoclea) leaue forrow. The riuer of your teares will ſoones looſe his fountain;
The Countesse of Pembroke's

it is in your hand as well to stitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-grieved mind) she comforted her sister, till sleep came to bath himselfe in Pamelaes faire weeping eyes.

Which when Philoclea found, wringing her hands, O me (said she ) indeed the onely subiect of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more vnp" fortunate, then my sisters greatest vnpfortunatenesse. Alas she weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weep because I can never be happy; her teares flow from pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare Pamela, I do not enuie thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

The Ladies vprising, and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus. His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies, his entry on a most corrupt estate, and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions. His, and Dorilaus cross marriage to ech others sister, having by ech a sonne; their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.

Vt the darkenessse of sorrow overshadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselves vnder the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before
fore the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked from dreams, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent vnto. For then they were called vp by Mifo, who hauing bene with Cynecia, had receiued commandement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let Zelmane and Philoclea haue any private conference, but that she should be present to heare what pass'd. But Mifo hauing now her authoritie encreased, came with skowling eyes to deliuer a flattering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexion, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would haue made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainment, and obeying her direction, covered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as Pamela was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of Dorus giving a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to Mopfa, and willed her to fetch Dorus to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further judgement of him, before she would move Dametas to graunt her in marriage vnto him. Mopfa (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with Dorus to Pamela, who entended both by speaking with him to giue some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which altho' she had alreadie deliuered vnto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to haue it from so beloved an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition
The Countesse of Pembroke's
disposition jealous, even over it itself, suffered her not to enter abruptly into questions of Musidorus (whom she was half ashamed she did love so well, and more then halfe for she could love no better) but thought best first to make her talk arise of Pyrocles, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (said she) you told me the last day, that Plangus was deceased in that he affirmed the Prince Musidorus was drowned: but withall you confessed his son Pyrocles perished, of whom certainly in that age there was a great loss; since (as I have heard) he was a young Prince, of who alme expected as much, as man's power could bring forth, & yet virtue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceived. Most excellent Ladie (said Dorus) no expectation in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, the to be thought worthy to be praised by your judgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no means get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leaving your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subject of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him; of shape most lovely, and yet of mind more lovely, valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete Pyrocles, excellent Pyrocles, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequethed to him that ever must haue thy vertues in admiration; that makst at least in them, I might have found some more gratious acceptation: with that he imprisOne his looke for a while ypon Mopsa, who thereupon fell
fell into a verie wide smiling. Truely (said Pamela) Do-
rus I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of
so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating
so excellent a Prince, as Pyrocles was. Who shotes at
the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall neuer
hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shote higher,
then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you Do-
rus (said she) tell me (since I perceau you are well ac-
quainted with that storie) what Prince was that Euar-
chus father to Pyrocles, of whom so much fame goes,for
his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that
opinion. And then so descend to the causes of his fending
first away from him, and then to him for that ex-
cellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and
loffe: and therein you may (if you lift) say something
of that fame Mulidorus his cosen, because, they going
togither, the story of Pyrocles (which I onely desire)
may be the better understanded.

Incomparable Lady (sai[d] he) your commandement
doeth not onely giue me the wil, but the power to obey
you, such influence hath your excellencie. And first,
for that famous King Euarchus, he was (at this time you
speake off) King of Macedon, a kingdome, which in elder
time had such a soueraintie ouer all the provinces of
Greece, that euë the particular kings therin did acknow-
ledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some
kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest euë this
now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of
Arcadia. But he, whë he came to his crowne, finding by
his later ancestors either negligence, or misfortune, that
in some ages many of those duties had bin intermittted,
would neuer flure vp old titles (how apparant soueret)
where-
whereby the publike peace (with the losse of manie not guiltie soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heauens had placed him, shewed no lesse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despisong, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdoms: for the earth hath since borne enow bleeding witnesses, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was moft wise to see what was best, and moft iust in the perworkflow what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrary: so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and contenme daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatening upon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loued greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercise his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the more goodly by a graue maistie, where with his mind did decke his outward graces; strong of body, and so much the stronger, as he by a well disciplined exercise taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew Musidorum tooke on such shepherdish apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphane both of father and mother, (whose father & grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his estate, when he came to age (which allowed his authoritie) so disioynted even in the noblest & strongest lims of gouvemment, that the name of a King was grown euë odious to the people, his authority having bin abused by those great Lords, & little kings: who in those betweene-times of raigning (by vnjust fauoring.
ring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing them that would defend their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then seene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of oligarchie; that is, whé men are governed in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they hauing the power of kings, but not the nature of kings, vfed the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a yeere they shal goe out: making the Kings sworde strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loued: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serve to undermine the Royall soueraintie. For the Subjects could taste no sweeter fruites of hauing a King, then grievous taxations to serve vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to preuent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priviledged place of vnbrideled licentioufnes, then as a biding of him, who as a father, should giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very dissoluition of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition never satisfied) grew factious among themselues: and the vnderlings, glad indeede to be vnderlings to them they hated left, to preuerue them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, left their shining should discover the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nusled in corruption, scorning them that would secke reformation; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els
The Countesse of Pembroke's
celt, by the custome of selfe-guitle euill, glad to change
tho(u)gh oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and to
townes decayed for want of iust and naturall libertie;
offices, euen of judging soules, folde; publique defen-
ces neglected; and in summe, (left too long I trouble
you) all auirie, and (which wried it to the most wrie
course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason
why it should be amisse, then how it should be amen-
ded.

In this, and a much worse plight then it is fitte to
trouble your excellent eares withal, did the King. Enar-
chus finde his estate, when he tooke vpon him the regi-
ment: which by rea(on of the long streame of abuse,
he was forced to establiish by some euen extreme feve-
ritie, not so much for the very faultes themselves,
(which he rather fought to preuent then to punish) as
for the faultie ones; who strong, euin in their faultes,
scorned his youth, and could not learne to digeft,
that the man which they so long had vfed to maske
their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of
them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in
deede notable) examples, had thundred a duetie into
the subiects hartes, he soone shewed, no basenes o(ut-
pition, nor the basest basenes of enuie, could any whic
rule such a Ruler. But then shined forth indeede all
love among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by
justice, did make that love most louely: his first & prin-
cipall care being to appeare vnto his people, such as he
would haue them be, & to be such as he appeared; ma-
king his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his ac-
tions arising out of his deedes. So that within small
time,
time, he wanne a singular love in his people, and engraffed singular confidence. For how could they chuse but love him, whom they found so truely to love the? He even in reason disdaining, that they that have charge of beasts, should love their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to govern the most excellent creature, should not love so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to build upon false grounds of government) make themselves (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter balances, that their estate goes hieft when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselves most Kings, when the subiect is most basely subiected: he contrariwise, vertuouslie and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himselfe was the head; even so cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: neuer restrayning their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousnes, norpulling from them their goods, which they found were not imployed to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, brought that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their love he had all. In summe (peereleffe Princeffe) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of government, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sorte he flourished in the sweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an action of leaving his Countrie, he was forced to bring forth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of justice.

He
He had onely one sister, a Ladie (left I should too
casifie fall to partiall prayles of her) of whom it may be
iustly faid, that she was no vnfit brach to the noble flock
wherof she came. Her he had giuen in mariage to Dorilaus,
Prince of Theßalia, not so much to make a frendship,
as to confirm the frendship betwixt their posteritie, which
betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long
before made: for certainly, Dorilaus could neede no
amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who
hath not heard (sait Pamela) of the valiat, wife, and iust
Dorilaus, whose vnripe death doth yet (fo many yeares
since) draw teares fro vertuous eyes: And indeede, my
father is wont to speake of nothing with greater admira-
tion, then of the notable friendhippe (a rare thing in
Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was
observed to the laft, of those two excellent men. But
(said she) goe on I pray you. Dorilaus (sait he) hauing
maried his sister, had his mariage in short time blest (for
fo are folke woont to say, how vnhappie the
children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named
Musidorus: of whom I must needes first speake before I
come to Pyrocles, because as he was borne first, so upon
his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others
birth. For scarcely was Musidorus made partaker of this
oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of
Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things
should be performed by that childe; whether the heav-
uens at that time lifted to play with ignorant mankind,
or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as even at times to
borow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly, so did the
boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes
of what they did affirme (euen descending to particula-
rities,
rities, what kingdomes he should over come) that the
King of Phrygia (who ouer-superstitiously thought him selfe touched in the matter) fought by force to de-
stroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: be-
cause a skilful man (having compared his nativity with
the child) so told him. Foolish maj, either vainly fearing
what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it
were a worke of the superiour powers, the heauens at
length are never children. But so he did, & by the aid of
the Kings of Lydia and Crete (ioining together their ar-
mies) inuaded Thessalia, & brought Dorilas to some be-
hind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & bro-
ther Euarchus came so mightily to his succour, that
with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they be-
gan of a iust war, the best child, peace. In which time E-
urarchus made a croffe marriage also with Dorilas his si-
ter, & shortly left her with child of the famous Pyrocles,
driven to returne to the defence of his owne countrie,
which in his absence (helped with some of the ill con-
tented nobilitie) the mighty King of Thrace, & his bro-
ther, King of Pannonia, had inuaded. The successe of
those warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your
cares, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to
come vnto. But there was Dorilas (valiantly requiting
his frends helpe) in a great bataille deprevt of his life,
his obsequies being no more solenised by the teares of
his partakers, the the bloud of his enimies; with so pear-
cing a sorrow to the constant hart of Euarchus, that the
newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance
with no shew of comfort, although al the comfort that
might be in a child, truth it selfe in him forthwith deli-
uered. For what fortune onely southeayers foretold of
Musidorus, that all men might see prognosticat in Py-
S
rocles,
Pyrocles, both Heauens & Earth giuing tokes of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfectio in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therein did acknowledge: onely loue was threatened, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and hauen of their best yeares. But as death may have preuented Pyrocles, so vnworthinesse must be the death to Musidorus.

**CHAP. 7.**

*The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus.* Their friendship, navigation, and first shipwrecke. The straunge gratitude of two brothers to them, upon their liberallitie to those two brothers.

Vt the mother of Pyrocles (shortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cause that Euarchus recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & those euil neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that Pyrocles taught admiration to the hardest conceats: Musidorus (perchaunce because among his subiectes) exceedingely souered: and by the good order of Euarchus (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought vp, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in the, were so blowne to giue forth their uttermost heate that
that justly it may be affirmed, they enslaved the affections of all that knew the. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receaue Cookeits not unworthy of the best speakers: excellent devises being vsed, to make euen their sports profitable; images of battailes, & fortificacions being then delivered to their memory, which after, their stronger judgement might dispense, the delight of tales being couerted to the knowledge of all the stories of worthy Princes, both to move them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Gramatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffering, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with dangers; & in sum, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no scurile feare vsed towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but stil as to Princes: so that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature having done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the nereenes of their bloud could aspire vnto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betwenee them, by reason that Musidorus being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken
taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past over the humour of such contentions. For Pyrocles bare reverence ful of love to Musidorus, & Musidorus had a delight full of love in Pyrocles. Musidorus, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to Pyrocles; and Pyrocles was so glad to learne of none, as of Musidorus: till Pyrocles, being come to sixtene yeares of age, he seemed so to ouerrun his age in growth, strength, and all things following it, that not Musidorus, no nor any man living (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliver that strength more nimbly, or become the deliery more gracefully, or employal more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subject.

At which time understanding that the King Eurichus, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all Pannonia, and almost Thrace, had now brought the conclusion of all to the siege of Bizantium (to the raising of which siege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practice of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of Musidorus nobly yielding over her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to the both) the rather that they might helpe her beloved brother, they brake of all delays, which Musidorus for his parte thought already had devoured too much of his good time, but that he had once granted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend Pyrocles; that he would never secke the adventures of armes, vntil he might go with him: which having fast bound his hart (a true slave to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne
owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding
him able every way to go thorow with that kinde of
life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to
enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they
might go like themselves, and not onely bring the
comfort of their presence, but of their power to their
deere parent Enarchus, they recommended them-
selves to the Sea, leaving the shore of Thessalia full of
tears and vowes; and were receiued thereon with so
smooth and smiling a face, as if Neptune had as then
learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was
like a servaunt, wayting behind them so iust, that they
might fill the sailes as they lifted; and the best saylers
shewing themselves lesse couteous of his liberalitie,
so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beau-
tiful flocke, which so well could obey their maistres
pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies,
some two or three of them would striue, who could (ei-
ther by the cunning of well spendinge the winde
breath, or by the aduantageous building of their moo-
ing houses) leave their fellowes behind the in the
honour of speed: while the two Princes had leasure to
see the practic of that, which before they had learned
by bookes: to consider the arte of catching the winde
prisoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it;
to see how beautie, and use can so well agree together,
that of all the trinkets, where with they are attired,
there is not one but serves to some necessary purpose.
And (o Lord) to see the admirable power & noble ef-
fects of Loue, whereby the seeming insensible Load-
stone, with a secret beauty (holding the spirit of iron in
it) can draw that hard harted thing vnto it, and (like a
S 3
virtuous
The Countesse of Pembroke's

...not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring foorth the noblest deeds, that the children of the Earth can boast of. And so the Princes delighting their coceats with confirming their knowledge, being wherein the Sea-discipline differed from Land-service, they had for a day & almost a whole night, as pleasing entertainment, as the falsest hart could giue to him he meanes worst to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilten shewe of a good meaning, there arose even with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inck powred into water) had blacked over all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mornesfull stage for a Tragedie to be plaid on. For forth with the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest instruments of commandement, and blowing whole stormes of bayle and raine upon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they coulde almost bethinke themselves of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea began to swell in pride against the afflicted Naue, under which (while the heauen favoured them) it had layne so calmy, making mountaines of it selfe, over which the tossed and tottring ship shoulde clime, to be streight carried downe againe to a pit of hellish darkenesse; with such cruell blowes against the sides of the shippe (that which way sooner it went, was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay, nor way to escape. And shortly had it so disserued the louing companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that most of them neuer met againe;
but were swallowed vp in his never-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne) after long wandring returned into Thessalia; other recovered Bizantium, and served Euarchus in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all industrie to saue themselves, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as if it would prevent the nights comming, vsurped the dayes right: which (ac companied sometimes with thunders, always with horrible noyeses of the chafing winds) made the masters and pilots so astonisht, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the seastraue with the winds which should be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastful noise to them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazd them, as hauing those powers for enimies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdoms. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terriblenesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutio of the faire being from comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euere before it, doth still vex the minde, cuen when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storne, as they thought it best with striking failes to yeelde to be gouerned by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the scare-

\[ S 4 \]
The Countesse of Pembroke

fullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to euery most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselves the best, and yet not to despife the worst. But so were they carried by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treason of the sea; all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe to wards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glasfe, then by the day cleerenesse) haung runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe euer was painted, left the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driuen vp on a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waues, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruel mind, till with an vnbeleeued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the shipper ranne vpon it; and seeming willinger to perishe then to haue her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selfe iueces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diuerse manner of minds in distresse: some fate vp on the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swalowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heavens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie, begotten of manie roaring vowes
vowes, was able to infect with fear a minde that had not prevented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes vsing the passions of fearing euill, and desiring to escape, onely to serve the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones selfe, leapt to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to doo service, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne seruants of theirs, and straignt they foure were carryed out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the peace they were on sinking by little and little vnder them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was Leucippus, the younger Nelsis) shewed themselves right faithfull and grateful seruants vnto them; gratefull (I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of Phrygia made vpon Thessalia, in the time of Musidorus his infancy; and hauing bene folde into another countrie (though peace fell after betwene these Realmes) could not be deliver'd, because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found means both by selling all the Jewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so
The Countesse of Pembroke's

so much treasure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselves to the seas rage, & euen when they went to dye, themselves praying for the Princes lines. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so mowed the Princes hartes as the tendernessse of that loyning part, farre from glorie, hauing so few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, since themselves were sure to perish.

CHAP. 8.

Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia led prisoner to the King. That suspicioues tyrant naturalized. His intent to kill Pyrocles. Musidorus his escape from sea, and offer to dye for his friend. Their contention for death. Preparation for Musidorus execution. His straunge deliverie by Pyrocles, and a sodeine mutinie. Their killing the bad King, and creating a better.

Bt now of all the royal Nauie they had left but one piece of one ship, whereon they kept themselves in all trueth, hauing enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and counsellng how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were carried by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceedingly swifdy) Musidorus
Mnufidorus seeing (as he thought) Pyrocles not well upon the board, as he would with his right hand have helped him on better, he had no sooner unstayed his hold, but that a wave forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But Pyrocles (then careless of death, if it had come by any means, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euén in it selfe to be vnto him.

For being cast on land much bruised & beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and even almost deadly tired with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walling up to discover some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came freight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne;) by appointment watched (with manic others) in diverse places along the coast: who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence, to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuilitie (though with much more busines then those vnder-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner, to put interrogranties vnto him. To which he (vntused to such entertainment) did shortly and plainly answer, what he was, and how he came thither.

But
But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe) he was lent to the Kings court, which as then was not aboue a dayes journey off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne servisucable diligence in discouering so great a personage, adding with all more then was true of his coniectures, because he would endear his owne service.

This country whereon he fell was Phrygia, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was lent, a Prince of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly sad, ever musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, because his minde had no eye to epic goodnesse: and therefore accusing Sycophantes, of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming Sycophantes, because of no euill they said, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing vnto him, but such as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofes of his wisedome: fearefull and neuer secure, while the seare he had figured in his minde had any possibilitie of event. A tode-like retyrednesse, and closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse of poyson, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discouered) made him somethings the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous.

But after that yeares beganne to come on with some, though more seldom shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of Musidorus destitie came to his cares (delivered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardest interpretation, as though
his subiectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gave he himselfe indeede to the full currant of his disposition, especially after the warre of Thessalia, wherein (though in truthe wrongly) he deemed, his unsuccesnings proceeded of their unwillingnes to hate him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned, (knowing no countermine against contempt, but terror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault, without sharpe punishment: & when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it selfe servicable, so were there enow of those desperate ambitious, who would build their houses vpon others ruines, which after shoulde fall by like practises. So as servitude came mainly vpon that poore people, whose deedes were not only puni- shed, but words corrected, and even thoughts by some meane or other puld out of the: while suspicio bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie stirred a new cause of suspition. And in this plight (ful of watchful fearefulness) did the storme deliuer sweete Pyrocles to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenaunce deserued both pitie and admiration) condemning the- selues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloudy King knew what he was, and in what order he and his cosin Musidorus (so much of him feared) were come out of Thessalia, assuredly thinking (because euer thinking the worste) that those forces were prouided against him; glad of the perishing (as
The Countesse of Pembrookes

(as he thought) of Musidorus, determined in publique
foot to put Pyrocles to death. For having quite lotte the
way of nobleneses, he strae to clime to the height of ter-
rribleneses, and thinking to make all men adread, to make
such one an enemie, who would not spare, nor feare to
kill so great a Prince; and lastly, having nothing in him
why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make
him away, for being his enemie. The day was appoint-
ted, and all things appointed for that cruel blow, in so
solemane an order, as if they would set foorth tyranye in
most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of innuinc-
cible voluer, yet so vnjustly subiect, to such outrageous
wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanor so
constatly, abiding extremity, that one might see it was
the cutting away of the greatest hope of the world, and
destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was prevented by a
rare example of friendshipe in Musidorus: who being
almost drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fisherman
belonging to the kingdome of Pontus, and being there,
and understanding the full discourse (as Fame was very
prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case Pyro-
cles was, learning withall, that his hate was farre more
to him then to Pyrocles, he founde means to acquaint
him selfe with a noble-man of that Countrie, to whom
largely discovering what he was, he found him a most
fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-
man had bene one, who in many warres had scrued
Enarchus, and had bene so mind-striken by the beautie
of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne
his Subject) he even professe himselfe his senaunt.
His desire therefore to him was, to keepe Musidorus
in a
in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of Phrygia understand, that if he would deliver Pyrocles, Musidorus would willingly put him selfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirstie so euer he was of Pyrocles bloud, he would rather drinke that of Musidorus.

The Nobleman was loath to preferue one by the losse of another, but time urging resolution: the importunitie of Musidorus (who shewed a minde not to ouer-lie Pyrocles) with the affection he bare to Euar-ces, so prouayled, that he carried this strange offer of Musidorus, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And so vpon securitie of both sides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omitte that worke of friendshipe in Pyrocles, who both in speache and countenance to Musidorus, well shewed, that he thought himselfe injured, and not releued by him: asking him, what he had euer seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man: and why he shoulde enuie him the glorie of suffering death for his friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession? But in this notable contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and saftie the punishment of the conquered) Musidorus prouayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the vniuste King, that wisth none well, to them worse then others, and to him worsle of all: and as chearefully going towaides, as Pyrocles went frowardly fromwarde his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inough sure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one,
The Countess of Pembroke's

one, whom he had begun to fear, as soone as the other began to be.

7 Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostenta-
tion of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most
feared enemie was fallen) and withall cut of such hopes
from his suspected subiects (when they should knowe
certainly he was dead) with much more skilful cruelty,
and horrible solemnity he caused each thing to be pre-
pared for his triumph of tyrannie. And so the day be-
ing come, he was led forth by many armed men (who
often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the
place of execution: where coming with a mind com-
forted in that he had done such service to Pyrocles, this
strange encounter he had.

8 The excelling Pyrocles was no sooner deliuered by
the kings servants to a place of liberty, then he bent his
witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to
pasle:) how ether to deliuer Musidorus, or to perishe with
him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no for-
ces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe
to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put
himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some
few crownes he tooke of that noble man, (who full of
sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent,
suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (eu
en he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest
bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to
be servant to the executioner that should put to death
Musidorus: a farre notabler proove of his friendship,
considering the height of his minde, then any death
could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being a-
raied fit for such an estate, & having his beautie hidden
by
by many foule spots he artificially put vpon his face, gave him leave not onely to weare a sworde himselfe, but to beare his sworde prepared for the justified murder. And so Pyrocles taking his time, when Musidorus was vpon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest, as allowed to say something) he stept vnto him; & putting the sworde into his hande not bound (a point of civility the officers vsed towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) Musidorus (said he) die nobly. In truth, neuer ma betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after considering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw Pyrocles so neare me But with that Dorus blushed, and Pamela smiled: and Dorus the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembrance of that plight he was in,) forgotten in speaking of him selfe to vse the third person: But Musidorus turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (said he) when they were with swordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making that a pretention in not hoping to be preferued, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst the all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the scaffold to annoy them. Wherein Pyrocles (the excellent Pyrocles) did such wonders beyond beleefe, as was hable to leade Musidorus to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, intreague & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sorte of the beholders began to be almost super-
The Countesse of Pembroke

Superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from out a window (where he was not ashamed, the worlde should behold him a beholder) commanded his garde, and the rest of his souldiers to haften their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were stil fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (commanded to go vp after his fellowes against the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more wouded in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him vp on the face, reviling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight requited by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers, which seene, and not understood by the people (vsed to feares but not vsed to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason: and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set vpon him, fled away. Where-with a brutt (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such things often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was flaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the brauest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them,
them, set upon the garde, and soldiers as chiefe instruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none of them alioe, nor any other in the citie, who they thought had in any parte set his hand to the worke of their servitude, and (God knowes) by the blindnesse of rage, killing many guiltes persons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) prevailed with the rest to make Musidorus their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp. Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coro-
nation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neere had, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this mutiny. But now they had run themselues too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to forget such an injury; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute to obey Musidorus. Who seing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the Tyrant, while they were in this heat, before praetises might be vised to disleuer them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to preuaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him selfe was slaine by Musidorus, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of great courage
The Countesse of Pembroke's
courage & beautie, but fostered in bloud by his naughty Father) slaine by the hand of Pyrocles. This victorie obtained, with great, and truly not undeserved honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gave the crowne and all other marks of soueraignty to Musidorus; desiring nothing more, then to live under such a government, as they promised themselves of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatness to give a kingdom, then get a kingdom; understanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, & next to the succession, an aged Gentleman of approved goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his counsins power, but danger from him, and odiousnes for him) having past his time in modest secrecy, & as much from entermedling in matters of government, as the greatness of his bloud would suffer him, did (after having received the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the noble-men: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure the people (with as much assurance as worldly matters beare) that not onely that government, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the government, should be no way apt to decline to Tyrany.

CHAP. 9.

The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus. Incostancy, and envy portrayed in the King & his Counsellor. The advancement & overthrow by them of those two brothers. The revenge thereof by the two Princes. The cruelties of two revengeful Giants, and their death by the Princes. Their honours, and their honourable mindes.

This
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

His dooing set forth no lesse his magnificence, then the other act did his magnanimity: so that greatly prayed for al, and justly beloved of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behauiour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge those two seruants of theirs, of whose memorabile faith, I told you (most excellenc Princeffe) in willingly giuing themselves to be drowned for their fake: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull swimming vpon a rocke: frō whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine lande of Pontus; the same country vpon which Musidorus also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspition, greedines, or vnreuegefulnes, as he of Phrygia, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choise of friends, or rather neuer hauing a friēd, but a playfellow; of whom when he was weary, he could not otherwise rid himself, the by killing the: giuing somtimes prodigally, not because he loued them to whom he gaue, but because he lufted to giue: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at first for those vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like judgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.
He chaunted at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to have next in vse about him, a mā of the most enuious disposition, that (I think) euer infected the aire with his breath: whose eies could not looke right vpon any happie mā, nor eares heare the burthen of any bodies praise: contrary to the natures of all other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happiness the ground of his vnhappiness, & good newes the argument of his sorrow: in sum, a man whose favour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull servants of theirs came in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apt enough at first to favour them; and the King understanding of their adventure, (wherein they had shewd so constant a faith vnto their Lordes) suddenly fallas to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praying him selfe in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of missions, when aduauncement (the most mortall offence to enuy) stirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occasion upon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of Phrygia destroied by their two Lordes, who hauing bene a neere kinsman to this Prince of Pontus, by this enuious Coucclour, partly with suspition of prattise, partly with glory of in-part reuēging his cousins death, the King was suddenly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in prison, as servants to his enimies, whom before he had never knowne, nor (til that time one of his own subiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of.

But
But now earnest in every present humour, and making himselfe braue in his liking, he was content to give them just cause of offence, when they had power to make just revenge. Yet did the Princes send vnto him before they entred into war, desiring their servants liberty. But he dwelling in thier hublenes, (like a bubble swollen vp with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or never knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be striken off, by the aduice of his envious Councellor (who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the happines in hauing such, and so fortunate masters) and sent them with vnroyall reproches to Musidorus and Pyrocles, as if they had done traiterously, and not heroically in killing his tyrannical Cofen.

But that injury went beyond all degree of reconciliation; so that they making forces in Phrygia (a kingdom wholly at their commandement, by the loye of the people, and gratefulnesse of the King) they entred his country, and wholly conquering it (with such deeds as at left Fame said were excellent) tooke the King; and by Musidorus commandement (Pyrocles hart more enclined to pitie) he was slaine vpon the tombe of their two true Servants; which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserve their deade lives. For his wicked Servant he should haue felt the like, or worse, but that his harte brake euue to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There might Pyrocles quietly haue enjoyed that crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well esteemed Ladie) looking for no-

T.4 thing
The Countesse of Pembroke's

thing more, then to be oppressed with her brothers' ruin, gave her in marriage to the noble man his father's old friend, and endowed them with the crown of that kingdom. And not content with those public actions, of princely, and (as it were) governing virtue, they did (in that kingdom and some other neere about) divers acts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruel monsters, monstrous men: all which in short time by private combats they delivered the countries of.

Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatness & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept their elues in a castle seated upon the top of a rocke, impregnable, because there was no coming vnto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while serv'd the King of Pontus, and in all his affaires (especially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they had shewed, as unconquered courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit, not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of injury, then delighted with more then ordinary curteisies; and in injuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly Iewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that vnworthy Prince after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more evident to them; because it sodainly fell from an excesse of favor; which (many examples having taught them)
them) never stopp'd his race till it came to an headlong overthrow: they full of rage, retied themselves vnto this castle. Where thinking nothing iust the revenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward brauery and fiercenes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gave themselves to make all the countrey about them (subject to that King) to smart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with use of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleasing themselves in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a servicable power of the minde to doo priblike good, so now vnbridled, and blinde judge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiesse; almost to the ruine of the countrey, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and louelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in cruelty, as not to be reclaimed, secretly undertook the matter alone: for accompanied they would not have suffered them to have mounted; and so those great fellows scornfully receiving them, as foolish birds false into their net, it pleased the eternall justice to make the suffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the savers of that countrey.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the numbers of well-deuised honors done vnto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine,
and daunger, but must be nurt by the like, or els va-
nisheth as loone as it appeares to the world: so the na-
turall hunger thereof (which was in Pyrocles) suffered
him not to account a refrang feate of that, which ever
either riseth, or falleth, but still to make one action be-
get another; whereby his doings might send his praise
to others mouthes to rebound against true content-
ment to his spirite. And therefore having well establi-
shed those kingdomes, under good gouernours, and
rid them by their valure of such giants and monsters,
as before time armies were not able to subdue, they
determined in unknowne order to see more of the
world, & to imploie those gifts esteemed rare in them,
to the good of mankind: and therefore would them-
thes (understanding that the King Eutarchus was pas-
led all the cumber of his warres) goe privately to feeke
exercises of their vertue; thinking it not so worthy, to
be brought to heroical effect by fortune, or necessitie
(like Phylses and Aeneas) as by ones owne choice, and
working. And so went they away from verie vnwillig
people to leaue them, making time haste itselfe to be a
circumstance of their honour, and one place witnesse
to another of the truth of their doings.) For scarcely
were they out of the confines of Pontus, but that as they
ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one seruing
the other) they mette an adventure; which though
not so notable for any great effect they persoumed,
yet worthy to be remembred for the vn-vsied examples
therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched
vngratefulnesse.

CHAP.
T was in the kingdom of Galacia, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely grown to so extreme and foule a storme, that neuer any winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: so that the Princes were euene compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it vnto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputation which made them steppe out; yet in such fort, as they might see vnseene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extremely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both these seemed
The Countesse of Pembrokes

seemed to appeare a kind of noblenesse, not futable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well Leonatus (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to lead me to that which should end my griefe, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing become me but miserie; feare not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (answred he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I have power to doo you seruice, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groned, as if sorrow straue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse vpbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreeable by a certaine noble kind of pitiousnes) I see well you are strangers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. In deede our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our selues so knowne as may stirre pittie. But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not ouer-runne hate. And if it did, in truth our state is foncke below the degree of feare.

This
This old man (whom I lead) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of Paphlagonia, by the hard-harred vngratefulnes of a sonne of his, deprevied, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraine forces were ever able to spoyle him) but of his sight, the riches which Nature graunts to the poorest creatures. Whereby, & by other his unnaturall dealings, he hath bin driuen to such griefe, as euery now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this rocke, thence to cast himselfe headlong to death: and so would haue made me (who receiued my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble Gentlemen (said he) if either of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull affection is engraffed in a sonnes hart, let me intreat you to conuey this afflicted Prince to some place of rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie actes it shall be none of the least, that a King, of such might and fame, and so unjustly oppressed, is in any sort by you relieved.

But before they could make him answere, his father began to speake, Ah my sonne (saiid he) how euill an Historian are you, that Ieau out the chiefe knotte of all the discouer: my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou dost it to spare my eares, (the onely sense now left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou dost mistake me. And I take wittes of that Sunne which you see (with that he cast vp his blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light,) and with my selfe in worse case then I do with my selfe, which is as euill as may be, if I speake vntruely; that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I with that it may not proue ominous foretoké of misfortune
The Countesse of Pembrokes

to have mette with such a miser as I am) that whatsoever my sonne (God, that truth binds me to reproch him with the name of my sonne) hath said, is true. But besides those truths, this also is true, that having had in lawful marriage, of a mother fite to beare royall children, this sonne (such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe by my shorte declaration) and so enjoyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growe to justify their expectations (so as I needed envy no father for the chiefe comfort of mortality, to leaue an other ones selfe after me) I was caried by a bastard sonne of mine (if at least I be bounde to beleeeue the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to mislike, then to hate, laftly to destroy, to doo my best to destroy, this sonne (I thinke you thinke) undeserving destruction. What waies he vied to bring me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much poysnous hypocristie, desperate fraude, smoothe malice, hidden ambition, & smiling envyne, as in any liuing person could be harbored. But I lift it not, no remembrance, (no, of naughtines) delights me, but mine own, & me thinks, the accusing his traines might in some manner excuxe my fault, which certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gaue order to some servants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forreft, & there to kill him.

But those theues (better naturcd to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorely: which he did, giuing himselfe to be a private fouldier, in a countrie hereby. But as he was redy to be greatly aduanced for some noble pee-
cases of service which he did, he heard newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that unlawful and unnatural sonne of mine) suffered my self to be governed by him, all offices, and places of importance, distributed to his fauourites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King; which he shortly weare of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid upon me) threw me out of my fear, and put out my eyes; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, neither imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me seele my miserie; miserie indeed, if ever there were any, full of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so vniust meanes, as vniustlie he kept it, by force of stranger souldiers in Cittadels, the nestes of tyrannie, & murderers of libertie, disarming all his own countrimen, that no man durft shew himself a wel-willer of mine: to say the truth (I think) few of the being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my vnkinde bastard:) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of vnstained duety lefte in them to wardes me, yet durft they not shewe it, scarcely with giving me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenance of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende mea hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came
The Countesse of Pembroke's
came hether to doo this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my unspeakable griefe: not onely because his kindnes is a glasse eué to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that aboue all griefes, it greeues me he should desperately aduenture the losse of his soule descruing life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deserts, as if he would cary mudde in a chest of chrystall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much foeuer (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slippe any advantage to make away him, whose iust title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a neuer secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craued of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient vnito me. And now Gentlemen, you haue the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischieuous proceedings may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for fo great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my sonne denies me: for neuer was there more pity in sauing any, then in ending me; both because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you preserue this excellent young man, who els wilfully followes his owne ruine.

The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expresed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs with-
without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came therewith forty horse, only of purpose to murder this brother; of whose coming he had soone aduertisement, and thought no eyes of sufficient credite in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selue to be act or, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commanded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sword) how falsely soever he was dealt with by others, would not betray himselfe: but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warne his fellowes to come more warly after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorm* were quickly become parties (so iust a defence deferring as much as old friendship) and so did behaue them among that company (more iniurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their liues for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at laft preuailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made so) had not come vnlooked for to their succour. Who (having had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently upon some great daunger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most deereely loued) was come in all haft, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundredth horses in that Countrie, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had been so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, & worse gotten honour should have tumbled
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Tumbled together to destruction, had there not come in Tydew & Telenor, with fortie or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of Plexirus. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought vp fro their infancy with Plexirus: men of such prowess, as not to know fear in themselves, and yet to teach it others that should deal with them: for they had often made their liues triumph over most terrible dangers; never dismayed, and ever fortunate; and truely no more settled in their value, then disposed to goodnesse and justice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could have learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing vp (rather than choice) having first knit their minds vnto him, (indeed craftie enough, eyther to hide his faultes, or never to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to satisfy him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: so as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not counsellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this fodeaine going out, with so small a company, in a country full of euil-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him, till they found him in such case as they were to venture their liues, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may ingly say, Pyrocles & Musidorus had never till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the scates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they ouercame not, yet were they not ouercome, but caried away that vngratelfull maister.
maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoever the
Princes laboured to the contrary. But this matter being
thus far begun, it became not the constacie of the Prin-
ces so to leave it; but in all haste making forces both in
*Pontus* and *Phrygia*, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him
but only that one strong place where he was. For feare
hauling bene the onely knot that had fastned his peo-
ple vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they
all scattered from him; like so many birdes, whose cage
had bene broken.

In which seafon the blind King (hauling in the chief
cittie of his Realme, set the crowne vpó his sonne *Leon-
atus* head) with many teares (both of joy and sorrow)
setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his
sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sonne
to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become sub-
ject) cuè in a moment died, as it should seeme: his hart
broken with vnkindnes & affliction, stretched so farre
beyond his limits with this excessse of comfort, as it was
able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new
King (hauling no lesse louingly performed all duties to
him dead, then aliue) pursued on the siege of his unnatu-
ral brother, asmuch for the reuenge of his father, as
for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege
truly I cannot but acknowledge the provessse of those
two brothers, then whom the Princes neuer found in
all their travell two men of greater habilitie to per-
forme, nor of habler skill for conduct.

But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing els, sominwould
at last bring him to destrucfió, thought better by hule-
nes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For
certainely so had nature formed him, & the exercife of
*V 2*
craft conformed him to all turnings of sleights, that
though no man had lefse goodnes in his soule then he,
no man could better find the places whence arguméts
might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man
felt lefse pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie:
no man more impudé to deny, where proofes were not
manifest; no man more ready to confesse with a repen-
ting manière of aggravating his owne euil, where denial
would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this
way, that hauing gotten a paipport for one (that preten-
ded he would put Plexirtus alieue into his håds) to speake
with the King his brother, he himselfe (though much
against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather
wished to die in braue defence) with a rope about his
necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of Leonatus. Where what submission he vised, how
cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the
faultines the leffe, how artificielly he could set out the
torments of his owne conscience, with the burdensome
comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how
finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed
to live, he begd life, in the refusing it. I am not cunning
enough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that
though at first sight Leonatus law him with no other cie,
then as the murderer of his father; & anger already be-
gan to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had
not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse
of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amédment:
while the poore villaines (chiefe miniters of his wic-
kednes, now betraied by the author therof,) were deli-
uered to many cruell forts of death; he so handling it,
that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the de-
fence
fence of an unremediable mischief already committed, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left those valiant brothers (Pleziurtus in all his behaviour carying him in far lower degree of service, then the euer-noble nature of Leonstus would suffer him) & taking likewise their leaves of their good friend the King of Pantus (who returned to enjoy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdom) they privately went thence, having onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accompmie them, through divers places; they foure doing acts more daungerous, though leffe famous, because they were but priuat chialties: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Quene Erôna of Lyca, besieged by the puissant King of Armenia, they bent themselues to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Lady,) & partly because they heard the King of Armenia had in his company three of the most famous men living, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince Plangus, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerleffe Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) Barzanes and Euardes, men of Giant-like both hugenies and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie was reposed. And of them, those two brothers Tydeus and Telenor (sufficient judges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had euene a youthfull longing to have some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into Lyca they joyned theielues with them that faithfully servied the
The Countesse of Pembrokes

the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and ere long, animated in such sort their almost overthrowne harts, that they went by force to releue the towne, though they were deprivèd of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all haste to returne to their old friend and maister, Plexirrös: who (willingly hood-winking themselves from seeing his faultes, and binding themselves to beleue what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his owne vice of injustice. But now they were sent for to aduaunce a conquest he was about; while Pyrocles and Mufidoros pursued the deliuerie of the Queene Erôna.

CHAP. 11.

• Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsea making.
• The sisters going with Zelmane to washe themselves.
• The pleasantries of the riper. • The pleasure Zelmane had in seeing them, uttered in speech, and song: She led by a spaniel, to know, and hurte her noble rival. • The parting of that fray.

I haue heard (saide Pamela) that parte of the story of Plangus wher he passe through this country: thenerfore you may (if you list) passe ouer that ware of Erônaedes quarrell, lest if you speake too much of ware matters, you shoulde wake Mopsea, which mighte happily breed a great broyle.

• He looked, and saw that Mopsea indeede was swallowing of
offleepe with opè mouth, making such a noise withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to vie that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-hartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) divine Lady, who haue wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the baseft) to thinke all principalities base, in respect of the sheephooke, which may hold him vp in your fight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble sute, while this dragon sleepe, that keepe the golden fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my selfe any thing which may be the least spoyl to that heavenly vertue, which shines in all your doings, I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speak may be deadly poylons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confusion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, seeke onely that favoure of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which cannot mil-become your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue said further, but Pamela calling aloud Mopsy, she sodainly start vp, staggering, and rubbing her eyes, ran first out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked Pamela, why she had called her. For nothing (said Pamela) but that you might heare some tales of your servants telling: and therefore now (said she) Dorus go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the story of himselfe, Philocles came in, & by and by after her, Miss; so as for that time, the
they were faine to let Dorus depart. But Pamela) delighted euè to preserve in her memory, the words of so wel a beloved speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselves something, (euen tyred with the noysomenes of Misos conversation) they determined to goe (while the heate of the day lasted) to bath themselves (such being the maner of the Arcadian nymphes often to doo) in the riuerc of Ladon, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder some shadow. But they could not stir, but that Miso with her daughter Mopsa was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, Zelmae out of her window espied them, and so stole downe after them: which she might the better doo because that Gynecia was sicke, and Basilius (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was busie about his devotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with Philoclea: but not a word could she beginne, but that Miso would be one of the audience, so that she was driven to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they came to the riuers side; which of all the riuers of Greece had the price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was accounted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easely judge, whether the Riuerc did more wash the grauell, or the grauell did purifie the Riuerc; the Riuerc not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the Riuerc had a delight to play with itselfe. The banckes of either side seeming
feeming armes of the louing earth, that faine would embrace it; and the Riuuer a wanton nymph which stil would stirre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which resisted the sunnes dartes from over-much pearcing the naturall coldnes of the Riuuer. There was the

But among the rest a goodly Cypres, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it seemed she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running Riuuer. There the Princesses determining to bath themselues, though it was so priuiledged a place, vpon paine of death, as no bodie durft presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the riuuer, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdainning that his smelling force coulde not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting vp againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the riuuer, & shaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further caute to vfe it) in-weeded himself, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulness: and inviting Zel mane also to wash her selfe with them, and she excusing her selfe with hauing taken a late cold, they began by piece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their apparell.

Zel mane would haue put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a quivering, that she thought it more wisdome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while Mifo and Mopsa (like a couple of foreswat melters)
The Countesse of Pembroke's

towers] were getting the pure siluer of their bodies out
of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went
of to receaue kisses of the ground, Zelmane enuied the
happinesse of all, but of the smocke was even jealous,
and when that was taken away too, and that Philoclea
remained (for her Zelmane onely marked) like a Dya-
mond taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun
getting from under a cloud, and shewing his naked
beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much
for a patient sight, the delight too strong for a stayed
concept: so that Zelmane could not choose but runne,
to touch, embrace, and kiss her. But conscience made
her come to her selfe, & leave Philoclea, who blushing,
and withall smiling, making shamefastnesse pleasant,
and pleasure shamefast, tenderly mowed her feete, vn-
wonted to seele the naked ground, till the touch of the
cold water made a prettie kinde of shrugging come o-
er her bodie, like the twinkling of the fairest among
the fixed stars. But the Riuere it selfe gaue way vnto her,
so that she was steight brest high; which was the dee-
pest that there-about she could be: and when cold La-
don had once fully imbraced them, himselfe was no
more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold com-
plexion had bene heated with loue, so seemed he to
play about every part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest Ladon (said Zelmane) why
doest thou not stay thy course to haue more full tast of
thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the upper
streames make such haste to haue their part of embrac-
ing, that the nether (though lothly) must needs give
place vnto them. O happie Ladon, within whom she
is, vpon whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye
perceth.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

perceth. O happie Ladon, which art now an vnperfect mirror of al perfection, canst thou ever forget the blessednes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine grauel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let some vnjust niggards make were to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater river fal into thee, to take away the name of Ladon. Oh Ladon, happie Ladon, rather slide then run by her, lest thou shouldst make her legs slippe from her; and then, O happy Ladon, who would then call thee, but the most cursed Ladon? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, somtimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to have the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he would in ech of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

But Zelmane, whose sight was gaine-said by nothing but the transparent vale of Ladon, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heat increased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that nowe all her parts grudged, that her eyes should doe more homage, then they, to the Princesse of them. In somuch that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a divine furie inspired; her voice would in so beloved an occasion second her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes musick to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musick; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the Queene which shoule be delighted. And so together went the utterance and the
The Countesse of Pembroke's

the invention, that one might judge, it was Philocles beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend utterance. The song was to this purpose.

What tongue can her perfections tell
In whose each part all pens may dwell?
Her hairie fine threds of finest gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head sayes in me
A whiter beautie you may see.
Whiter indeed; more white than snow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.
That doth present those euene browes,
Whose equall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moone when after chaunge
Her horned head abroad doth raunge:
And arches be to heavenly lids,
Whose winke each bold attempt forbids.
For the blakee barres those Spheares containe
The matchlesse paire, euene praise doth staine.
No lampe, whose light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Sawe one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus unhappie be,
Because themselves they cannot see.
Her cheekes with kindly claret spred.
Aurora like new out of bed,
Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,
Blushing at sight of Phoebus pride.

Her
Her nose, her chinne pure inorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares.
So that therein appeares some blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled sould
In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Lovers maze.
But with such turns the voice to stray,
No talke untaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.

But who those ruddie lippes can misse?
Which blessed still themselfes doo kisse.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roses now,
In worth, in taste, in perfitte heve:
Which neuer part but that they showe
Of preitious pearle the double rowe,
The second sweetly-fenced warde,
Her heav'nly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.

Faire under these doth stately grove,
The handle of this preitious worke,
The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bower:
So good a say invites the eye,
A little downward to espie,
The luelie clusters of her breests,
Of Venus bābe the wanton nests:
Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeare.
With deareft tops of porphyrie.
Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
The Countesse of Pembroke

Away more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leads into the ioyous field,
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies such whose native smell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste
Mens liues, untill it be imbraste.

There may one see, and yet not see
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes somie face,
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.

In those delights the wandring thought
Might of each side astray be brought,
But that her navel doth unite,
In curious circle, busie sight :
A daintie scale of virgin-mace,
Where nothing but impression lackes.

Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,
In sheepe entitiled Cupids hill.
A hill most fitte for such a master,
A spotlesse mine of Alabaster.
Like Alabaster faire and svereke,
But soft and supple sattten like.
In that sweete seate the Boy doth sert:
Leath, I must leav his chiefest resort.

For such a use the world hath gotten,
The best things shal must be forgotten.
Yet never shall my song omitte
This for Quids song more sitte:
Which sunked with two sugred flanke,
Lift up their flately swelling bankes;
That Albion cliues in whitenes passe:
With banches smooth as looking glasse.
   But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.
The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of love,
Whose motion makes all graces move.
Whose bought inca'd doth yeeld such sight,
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
The gartring place with child-like signe,
Sheves easie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the flesh doth rise
In her brane calues, like christall skies.
Whose Atlas is a smalles small
More white then whitest boxe of all.
Throughout scales out that round cleane soote
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In sheve and sent pale violetts,
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.
   But back unto her back, my Mule,
Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,
Along whose ridge such bones are met,
Like combs round in marching pane set.
   Her shoulders be like two white Doves,
Pearching within square royall roones,
Which leaded are with siluer skinne,
Pasing the hate-shoort Ermelin.
And thence those armes derived are;
The Phoenix wings are not for rare
For faultlesse length, and stainlesse hewe,
   Ah woe is me, my woees renewe;
Now course doth lead me to her hand,
Of my first love the fatall band.

Where
The Countesse of Pembroke

Where whitesethes doth for ever sitt:
Nature her self enameld it.
For there with strange compait dooth lie
Warme snow, most pearl, softe sionie.
There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Sweete Islands make in that sweete land.

As for the fingers of the hand,
The bloody shaftes of Cupids warre,
With amatists they headed are.

Thus hath each part his beauties part,
But how the Graces doo impart
To all her limmes a special grace,
Becoming every time and place.
Which doth even beautie beautifie,
And most bewitch the wretched eye.

How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer guestes, which dwell within.
Of whose high praise, and praiseful bliss,
Goodnes the penne, heauen paper is.
The inke immortall fame dooth lende:

As I began, so must I ende.
No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whose each part all tongues may dwell.

But as Zelmane was coming to the latter end of her song she might see the same water-spaniell which before had huted, come and fetch away one of Philocles gloues; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to Zelmane, to see that the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who quickly
quickly carried it out of sight among certaine trees and
bushes, which were very close together. But by & by he
came againe, & amongst the raiments (Mifio and Mopsa
being preparing sheets against their comming out) the
dog lighted upon a little booke of foure or five leaves
of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then Zelmane
(not knowing what importance it might be of) ran after
the dog, who going straignt to those bushes, she might
see the dog deliver it to a Gentleman who secretly lay
there. But she hastily coming in, the Gentleman rose vp,
& with a courteous (though sad) countenance presented
himselfe vnto her. Zelmane's eies straight willed her
mind to marke him: for she thought, in her life she had
never seene a ma of a more goodly presence, in whom
strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie
fierceneffe: being indeed such a right manlike man, as
Nature often ening, yet shewes she would faine make.
But when she had a while (not without admiration)
viewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the gloue
& paper, because they were the Ladie Philocles; telling
him withall, that she would not willingly let the know
of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they
were bathing the selues; because she knew they would
be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered
he) the worst of the complaint is already past; since I
feele of my fault in my selfe the punishmet. But for these
things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse,
not my presumption. With that he gave her backe the
paper: But for the gloue (said he) since it is my Ladie
Philocles, give me leave to keepe it, since my hart canot
persuade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the
Lady (I ady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that

X

I
I will direct my life to honour this glass with serving her. O villain (cried out Zelma), madded with finding an unlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (said he) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I will make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drew out her sworde, which (Amazon-like) she ever ware about her. The Gentleman retired himself into an open place from among the bushes; & the drawing out his too, he offered to deliver it vnto her, saying withall, God forbid I should vse my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceived) you are the same famous Amazon, that both defended my Ladies iust title of beautie against the valiant Phalanctus, & saved her life in killing the Lion: therefore I am rather to kisse your hands, with acknowledg- ing my selfe bound to obey you. But this courtesie was worse than a bastonado to Zelma: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no leffe then his life should answer it. A hard cafe (said he) to teach my sworde that lesson, which hath ever vsed to turne it self to a shield in a Ladies presence. But Zelma harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursuie him with blowes & thrusts, that Nature & Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet stil courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart, would not be persuaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand vpon the best defensie gard he could; sometimtes going backe, being content in that respect to take on the figure of cowardise; sometimte with strong and well-met wards; sometimte cunning a-voidings of his body; and sometimes faining some blowes, which himself puld backe before they needed
to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of Zelmane, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet disposition, determining to kill him if he fought no better; so redoubling her blowes, drew the stranger to no other shift; then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate respects, who standes onely vpon defence, stands vpon no defence: For Zelmane seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, with all stept backe as he was accustomed, she stopp'd her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breast, so as he was driuen with the pommell of his sworde (hauling no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholy beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But Zelmane retirIng her sworde, and seeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie, and hartily forie, and even ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could have done more. In so much that she said, truly I am forie for your hurt, but your selfe gaue the cause, both in refusing to deliver the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could have done. But (faide shee) because I perceau you disdain to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinsman of mine, Pyrocles Prince of Macedon, and I giue you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this
this quarrell against you. I would (answered Amphialus) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I loue & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person. But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to whose Mopsa (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed & seene Zelmane fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselfes, & the water (with some drops) seemed to woepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of Zelmane (assuring themselfes that any Arcadian would beare reverence to them) Pamela with a noble mind, and Philoclea with a louing (hastily hiding the beautyes, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to faue Zelmane. But already they found them in talke, & Zelmane careful of his wound. But whē they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous Amphialus, whom yet with a sweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselves were in such fort retired. But he craued pardon, protesting vnto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possed him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, while where the dog hunted in the riuere, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his ouer-watched eyes; till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the sinart of his owne doings. But Philoclea (that was euen icelous of herselfe for Zelmane) would needs have her gloue, and not without so mighty a loure as that face
face could yield. As for Zelmane when she knew, it was
Amphialus, Lord Amphialus (said she) I have long desired
to know you, heretofore I must confess with more
good will, but still with honoring your virtue, though
I love not your person: & at this time I pray you let us
take care of your wound, upon condition you shall here-
after promise, that a more knightly combat shall be per-
formed between us. Amphialus answered in honora-
ble sort, but with such excusing himself, that more and
more accused his love to Philoclea, & provoked more
hate in Zelmane. But Mopsa had already called certaine
shepherds not far of (who knew & well observed their
limits) to come and help to carry away Amphialus,
whose wound suffered him not without danger to
strain it; and so he leaving himself with them, depar-
ted from them, faster bleeding in his heart, then at his
wound: which bound vp by the sheets, wherewith Phi-
loclea had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound,
and bleste the sword for that favour.

CHAP. 12.

How Basilius found Plangus: his lamentation. Philoclea
entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.

E being gone, the Ladies (with merry anger talking, in what naked sim-
plicitie their cousin had seene the) returned to the lodge-warde: yet
thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so
pleasing a company, with going to
performe a tedious obedience.

X 3 Zelmane
Zelmae invited them to the little arbour, only reserved for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, Pamela having a while made the lute in his language, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, Zelmae delivered up the paper, which Amphialus had at first yielded unto her: and seeing written upon the backside of it, the complaint of Plangus, remembering what Dorus had told her, and desiring to know how much Philoclea knew of her estate, she took occasion in the presenting of it, to ask whether it were any secret, or no. No truly (answered Philoclea) it is but even an exercise of my fathers writing, upon this occasion: He was one day (somewhat before your coming hither) walking abroad, having vs two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of Megalopolis, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the properst and best-graced men that ever I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then ynder a tree, while his seruaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme travaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hastily he was upon his journey: and withall so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, even groanes, teares, and passionate talking to him selfe, moued my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of grieue, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare vnto you. Zelmae willingly opened the
the leaves, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus.  Basilius.

A Las how long this pilgrimage doth last?
What greater ills have now the heavens in store,
To couple coming harms with sorrows past?
Long since my voice is hoarse, and throte is sore,
With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I see my woes the more.
As where was first that cruel cunning sound,
To frame of Earth a vessel of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruction bound?
What needed so high spirits such mansions blind?
Or wrap in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humane-kind?
Bales to the starrs, and thrallles to Fortunes raigne;
Turned from themselves, infected with their cage,
Where death is feared, and life is held with paine.
Like players plaft to fill a filthy stage,
Where change of thoughts one foole to other shewes,
And all but essays, save onely sorrowes rage.
The child feeleth that, the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but servis, to have true taste of woes.
A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this boan so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall sirisc.
So divers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can never be
Made uniforme to any state reposed.
Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see

X 4
The Countesse of Pembrokes
(Even like a topppe which nought but whipping mouses)
This man, this talking beast, this walking tree.
Grief is the stone which finest judgement proves:
For who grieues not hath but a blockish braine,
Since cause of griefe no cause from life remoues.

How long wilt thou with monesfull musicke stain
The chearesfull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
Where all goodhaps a perfect state maintaine?

Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire
For all these certaine blowes the purest shield.
Shall I that saw Eronaes shinning haire
Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
With losse of purest blood themselves to teare?
Shall I that saw those breast, where beauties flow,
Swelling with sighes; made pale with minde's disease,
And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to show,
Shall I whose cares her mournefull words did seaze
Her words in syrup laid of sweeetest breath,
Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?
No, no: Despaire my dayly lesson faith,
And faith, although I seke my life to flie,
Plangus must line to see Eronaes death.

Plangus must line some helpe for her to trie.
Though in despaire, so Lone enforceth me;
Plangus doth line, and must Erona dye?
Erona dye? O heaven (if heaven there be)
Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
Serve all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?
Let doltes in haste some altars faire erect.

To
To those high powers, which idly sit above,
And vertue do in greatest need neglect.

O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do move
To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.
Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do prone.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
Of our selfe-love (so passions do decease)
We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.
To harme vs wormes should that high Justice leaue
His nature? nay, himselfe? for so it is.
What glorie from our losse can he receaue?

But still our daZeled eyes their way do misse,
While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
The kindly way to beate us to our blisse.
If she must dye, then hath she past the line
Of lossome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
That dost so well their miseries define?
But such we are with inward tempest blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in wavrs of will:
We mone that lost, which had we did bemente.

And shall shee dye? shall cruell fier still
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
Hath she not force euens death with love to kill?
Nay euens cold Death enflamde with hot desire
Her to enjoy, where joy it selfe is thrall,
Will spoile the earth of his most rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a rivall to vs all,
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whose decay Vertues faire shrine must fall.
O Vertue weake, shall death his triumph see
The Countesse of Pembrokes.

Upon thy spoil, which never should by waste?
Let Death first dye, both his worthy let.
By what eclipse shall that Sunne be destashe?
What sunne hath erst throwne downe so faire a tower?
What sacrifice hath such a saint disgraft?
The world the garden is, she is the flower
That sweetens all the place, she is the guest
Of rarest price, both heauen and earth her bower.
And shall (ome) all this in ashes rest?
Alas, if you a Phoenix now will have
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would save
Such beams so like his owne, which might have might
In him, the thoughts of Phaetons damme to grave.
Therefore, alas, you use vile Vulcans spight,
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while st is, it is all Alas light.
O Mars, for what doth serve thy armed axe?
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?
O Venus (if her praise no envy frames,
In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.
Sweete speaking off a currish hart reclaimes.
O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,
Her face which was more lively in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her bath onely place;
O hand, which touchd her hand when she did part;
O lippes, that kissd her hand with my teares spent;
O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart;
O soule, whose love in her is onely spent,
What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or love,
Let all for her, and unto her be bent.

Thy
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Thy wailing words do much my spirits move,
    They uttered are in such a feeling fashion,
    That sorrowes worke against my will I prove.
Me-thinks I am partaker of thy passion,
    And in thy case do glasse mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guilty folke most prone to feel compassion.
Yet Reason saith, Reason shoule have abilitie,
    To hold these worldly things in such proportion,
    As let them come or go with even facilitie.
But our Desires tyrannicall extortion
    Doth force vs there to set our chiefe delightfulness,
    Where but a bating place is all our portion.
But still, although we faine of perfect rightfulness,
    Seake me to tame the childish superfluitie:\n    Let vs not winke though void of purest sightfulness.
For what can breed more pecuious incongruitie,
    Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
    Let vs some grammar learne of more congruitie.

If through mine cares perceare any consolation
    By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I ceaze these hideous exclamations,
While that my soule, she, she lyes in affliction;
    Then let my life long time on earth maintaine be,
    To wretched me, the last worst maladiction.
Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,
    For any joy, know fortunes vile displacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
    With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with unlasing her?
Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulnes

With
The Counteſse of Pembrokes
With Diamond in window-glaſſe she grau'd,
Erona dye, and end thy ongly painfefulnes ?
Can I forget in how ftrange phraſe she grau'd
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or fmoother,
As if by death fhe onely might be fau'd?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am fomne to my mother,
But if my memory muſt thus be thrall'd
To that ftrange stroke which conquer'd all my fenses,
Can thoughts still thinking fo reft enappalled?

Basilius. Who ftil doth feeke againft himſelfe offenfes,
What pardon can auale? or who employs him
To hurt himſelfe, what fhiſels can be defenfes?
Woe to poore man : erh outward thing annoys him
In divers kinds, yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward grieſfe, which moft deſtrues him .
Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled :
Thus be our nobleſſ parts dried up with sorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding filled.
One day lays up ſtuffle of griefe for the morrow :
And whose good haps do leave him unprovided,
Condoling caufe of friendfhip he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and ſhafe of good divided,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation flied.
But Plangus left I may your fickneſſe misſe
Or rubbing hurt the more, I here doo end,
The asſe did hurt when he did thinke to kiffe.

When
When Zelmae had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the speeche of Eronas death, and therefore desirous to know further of it, but more desirous to heare Philoclea speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading the Dialogue, since it nether sets foorth what this Plangus is, nor what Erona is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, and him with sorrow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to understand the particular discourse thereof: because (I must confesse) some thing in my trauaille I haue heard of this strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered Philoclea) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrey, while he hoped to pruevaile something with him in a great request he made vnto him, he was content to open fully vnto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie, which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and first of Erona, (being the chiefe Subiect of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I liste to spende about it) he recounted.

CHAP. 13.

Erona, irreligious against Love, must love the base Antiphilus, is loved, pursu'd, and beleaguered by the great Tiritades. The two Greeke Princes ayde her. They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. Eronas hard choice to redeem him. Tiritades slaine, Antiphilus deliver'd, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, and her hate to them.
The Comteffe of Pembrokes

1. If late there raigned a King in Lycia, who had for the blessing of his marriage, this only daughter of his, Erona; a Princesse worthie for her beautie, as much praiseworthy. This Princesse Erona, being 19. yeres of age, seeing the countrey of Lycia so much devoted to Cupid, as that in everyplace his naked pictures & images were superstitiously adored (ether moved theruto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefalt consideration of such nakednes) procured so much of her father, as utterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terriblie he punished (for to that the Lycians impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not liued a yeare longer, when she was striken with most obstinate Love, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named Antiphilus: so meane, as that he was but the sonne of her Nurse, & by that meanes (without other desert) became known of her. Now so euill could she concelde her fire, and so wilfully perfouerd she in it, that her father offering her the marriage of the great Tiridates, king of Armenia (who defired her more then the ioyes of heauen) she for Antiphilus sake refused it. Many wayes her father sought to withdrawe her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding Antiphilus, & giving her to understand that he was fled the countrie: Lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, vnder the name of Antiphilus, whom he kept in prison. But neither she liked perswasions, nor feared threatenings, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him dead,
dead, she sought all means (as well by poison as by
knife) to send her soul, at least, to be married in the eternal
course with him. This to brake the tender father's
hart, that (leaving things as he found them) he shortly
after died. Then forthwith Era (being seazed of the
crowne, and arming her will with authority) sought to
advance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before she could accomplish all the solemnities, she
was ouertake with a war the King Tiridates made upon
her, only for her person; towards whom (for her ruine)
Loue had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruel & tyrannous:
for (being far too strong in the field) he spared not
man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be
found no foil to set forth the extremity of his love,
but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of
his Loue, in the blood, & tuned the in the cries of her
subjects; although his fair sister Artaxia (who would ac-
ccompany him in the army) sought all means to appease
his fury: till lastly, he besieged Era in her best citie,
vowing to winne her, or lose his life. And now had he
brought her to the point either of a wofull consent, or a
ruinous denial; where there came the other (following the
course which Vertue & Fortune led the two excellent
young Princes, Pyrocles and Musidorus, the one Prince of
Macedo, the other of Thessalia, two princes, as Plagus said,
(and he witnessed his laying with sighes & tears,) the
most accomplished both in body & mind, that the Sun
courser lookt vpon. While Philoclea spake those words, O
sweete wordes (thought Zelmane to her self,) which are
not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe,
which out of that mouth issueth.

These two princes (saw Philoclea) as well to help the weaker
The Countesse of Pembroke

(especially being a Ladie) as to saue a Greeke people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest Lycians, as woulde venture their liues to succour their Prince: giuing order by a secrete message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set vpon Tiridates campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be overthrown: but that this Plangus (being Generall of Tiridates hors-men) especially ayded by the two mightie men, Euardes and Barzanes, rescued the foot-men, euen almoft defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succoures both of men and vietaull) to enter the Citie.

Which when Tiridates found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and Antiphilus: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his felow: but of whose side the more overcame, with him the victorie should remaine. Antiphilus (though Erroue chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he saue it like enough, that the people (were of the miseries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they saw him shrinke, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selfe. So it was agreed vpon; and against Pyrocles was Euardes, King of Bithinia; Barzanes of Hircania, against Musi-
Musidorus, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against Antiphilus he placed this same Plangus, being his own cousin germain, & sone to the King of Iberia. Now so it fell out that Musidorus slewe Barzanes, & Pyrocies Enardes; which victory those Princes esteemed above all that ever they had: but of the other side Plangus tooke Antiphilus pruloner: under which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being overcome of his side) Tiridates continued his war: & to bring Evora to a compelled yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walls of the town strike of Antiphilus head; without his suite in that space were graunted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectiō) that if in the mean time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be devised should be layed vpon Antiphilus.

Then lo if Cupid be a God, or that the tyranny of our own thoughts feeme as a God vnto vs. But whatsoever it was, then it did set foorth the miserablenes of his effectes: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the loue of him commaundd her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him commaundd him to preferue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that Loue in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doost thou loue Antiphilus, O Evora? and shal Tiridates enjoy thy bodie: with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon Antiphilus, when he shall know that another possessest thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Think, with thy selfe, if this man haue thee, thou shalt never haue more part of Antiphilus the if he were dead.

Y But
The Countesse of Pembroke

But thus much more, that the affection shall be gnawing, and the remorse still present. Death perhaps will cool the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt ever love, and ever lacke. Thinke this besidé, if thou marrie Tiridates, Antipholus is so excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place married: canst thou suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shall die. But it shallbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him liue to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said he) O Erone, and is thy Loue of Antipholus come to that point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but loue of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide Tiridates: this is but loue of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed to looke vpó him afterward; this is but feare of shame, & loue of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy selfe: he shallbe married; if he be well, why shoulde that grieue thee, but for loue of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, let Antipholus die. Then the images of each side stood before her understanding; one time she thought she saw Antipholus dying: an other time she thought Antipholus saw her by Tiridates enjoyed: twenty times calling for a seruanent to carry message of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting; she was pale, whé she
the remembred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her hands, & tearing her hair, were indifferent of both sides. Easily she wold have agreed to have broken all disputations with her owne death, but that the fear of Antiphilus further torments staid her. At length, cue the evening before the day apointed of his death, the determination of yeelding prevailed, especially growing vpó a message of Antiphilus, who with all the conjuring termes he could devise, besought her to saue his life, upon any condition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to Tiridates, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, Pyrocles & Musidorus, & falling downe at their feet, desired the to trie some way for her deliverance; shewing her selfe resolued, not to ouer-liue Antiphilus, nor yet to yeeld to Tiridates.

They that knew not what she had done in private, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it falls out, that what is incostancy, seemes cunning, so did this change indeed stand in as good stead as a witty dissimulation. For it made the King as reckles, as them diligent: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne, with who she would needs go, either to die her selfe, or reskew Antiphilus, hauing no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what devise (though Plangus at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so prevailed, that Antiphilus was succoured, and the King slaine. Plangus was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedie, coueted in safety into her country Artaux, now Queene of Armenia; who with truelametations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way comfort
The Countesse of Pembrkes

cōfort her in respect of her brothers losse, who she stud-
died all means possible to reuenge vpon euery one of
the occasioners, hauing (as she thought) ouerthrown
er brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch,
that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to a-
ny priuate man, and her selfe in marriaige to any Prince,
that would destroy Pyrocles and Musidorus. But thus
was Antiphilus redeemed, and (though against the con-
sent of all her nobility) married to Erone; in which case
the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an o-
ther adventure) left them.

CHAP. 14.

Philocleas narration broken of by Misof. * Her old-wiues
tale, * and ballad against Cupid. * Their drawing cuts
for tales. * Mopfas tale of the old cut: * cut of by the La-
dies to returne to their stories.

Vt now me thinkes as I haue read
some Poets, who when they intèd
to tell some horrible matter, they
bid men shun the hearing of it: so
if I do not desire you to stop your
cares frō me, yet may I well desire
a breathing time, before I am to
tell the execrable treason of Anti-
philus, that brought her to this misery; and withall wish
you al, that frō al mankind indeed you stop your cares.
O most happy were we, if we did set our loues one up-
on another. (And as she spake that worde, her cheekes
in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.)
And therefore since I haue named Plangus, I pray you
sister
sister (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I haue helde the stage long inough ; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done Eronas, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falsihood: & so betweene vs both, my Ladie Zelmane shall vnderstand both the cause and partics of this Lamentation. Nay I beshow me then (said Mifo) I wil none of that, I promise you, as lôg as I haue the gouernmet, I will first haue my tale, & the my Lady Pamela, my Lady Zelmane, & my daughter Mopsa (for Mopsa was then returned fro Amphius) may draw cuts, & the sshortest cut speake first. For I tel you, and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil haue first, and laft word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestneffe she lookt, hauing threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shacking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & Mifo (sitting on the groud with her knees vp, & her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quauering cough, thus discoursed vnto the. I tel you true (said she) whatsoever you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennisie as good siluer, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hafty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husbâd, the Dametas. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of Cupid: here is Cupid, & there is Cupid. I will tell you now, what a good old woman told me, what an old wife ma'told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you Y3 (said
(said Philoclea) let vs see it, & read it. No hast but good
(said Mif) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a
young girle of a seuen and twenty yeare old, & I could
not go thorow the streate of our village, but I might
heare the young mē talkte; O the pretie little eies of Mif;
O the fine thin lips of Miso; O the goodly fat hands
of Miso: besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of
my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke
with one eye, & the other cast daileys at me: I muft co-
feffe, seing so many amorous, it made me set vp my pea-
cocks tayle with the hieft. Which when this good old
womā perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may
the bones rest of the good wold womā) she cald me to
her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the
lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew
her, there was a great losse of her: she cald me to her,
and taking first a topp of wine to comfort her hart (it
was of the same wine that comes out of Candia, which
we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good
worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her; Min-
nion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies
though I say it) I see a nuber of lads that loue you; Wel
(said she) I say no more: doo you know what Loue is:
With that she broght me into a corner, where ther was
painted a foule fiēd I trow for he had a paire of hornes
like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bo-
die, as my gray-mare liath dappels, & for all the world
so placed. This mōster fat like a hāgman vpo a paire of
gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a
crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, &
out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a
mā & a womā, & such a couetenance he shewed, as if he
would
would persuade folks by those allurements to come thither & be hanged. I, like a tender harted wench, striked out for fear of the diuell. Well (sayd she) this same is even Loue: therefore do what thou list with all those fellowes, one after another; & it recks not much what they do to thee, so it be in secrete, but upon my charge, never love none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come from the belly of the faire Venus? for a few dayes before, our (priest betweene him & me) had tolde me the whole storie of Venus. Thus (said she) they are all deceived: and therewith gaue me this booke, which she said a great maker of ballats had giuen to an old painter, who for a little pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false Argus his father. And so she gaue me this booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weeppe, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carcke of sorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling upon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her prayer booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poore Painters oft with silly Poets ioyne,
To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:
One brings the stiffe, the other stamps the coine,
Which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.

Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that ever flies the light?
Or naked he, disguis'd in all untruth?
The Countesse of Pembrokes

If he be blind, how hitteth he so right?
How is he young, that sam’d e old Phoebus youth?
But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:
Some hurt accuse a third with hony head.
No, nothing so, an old false knave he is
By Argus got on Io, then a cow:
What time for her Iuno her Ioue did misse,
And charge of her to Argus did allow.

Mercury kill’d his false fire for this act
His damme a beast was pardon’d beastly fact.
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,
With Ioues disdaine at such a riuals seed;
The wretch compell’d a runnagate became,
And learn’d what ill a miser state doth breed,
To lyse, saine, gloze, to steale, pry, and accuse;
Naught in himselfe each other to abuse.
Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,
A horned head, clouen foote, and thousand eyes,
Some gazing still, some winking wilie shiftes,
With long large eares where never rumour dyes.
His horned head doth seeme the heauen to spight:
His clouen foote doth never treade aright.
Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth’d in the shape which soonest may deceaue:
Thus halfe a beast, ech beastly vice he plants,
In those weake harts that his advice receive.
He proules eech place stil in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.
To narrow brests he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeving to eech with flattering of desire.
Arcadia. Lib. 2. 165

But for that Loues desire most rules the eyes,
Therein his name, there his chiefest triumph lies.
Millions of yeares th' old druell Cupid liues;
While still more wretch, more wicked be doth prove:
Till now at length that Loue him office giues,
(At Iunos suite who much did Argus loue)
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all those fooles that will have all they see.

These Ladies made sport at the descriptio and storie of Cupid. But Zelmane could scarce suffer those blasphe mies (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly besought Pamela she would performance her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered she, beautifying her face with a sweete smilling, and the sweetnes of her smilling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of disobedience. My gouernesse will have vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do so: and so perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliver. I will thinke (answered Zelmane) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But Pamela pleasantly persisting to haue fortune their judge, they set hands, and Mopsa (though at the first ffor squeamishnes going vp & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulor of them) gave her the preeminence: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cause) she thus tumbled
The Countesse of Pembroke's

tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there
was a King, the mightie man in all his country, that
had by his wife, the fairest daughter that euer did eate
pappe. Now this King did kepe a greathouse, that eue-
ry body might come and take their meat freely. So one
day, as his daughter was sitting in her window, playing
upon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her
head with a combe all of preuisous stones, there came in
a Knight into the court, vpon a goodly horse, one haire
of gold, & the other of sliuer; and so the Knight casting
up his eyes to the window, did fall into such loue with
her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many
a sorry day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence
and Grilly Grones, he wan her affection, so that they a-
greed to run away togither. And so in May when all true
barnes reioyce, they stale out of the Castel, without stay-
ing so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as
they went togither, often all to kisving one another, the
Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water
Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were
euer askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and
therefore charged her vpon his blessing, that she neuer
aske him what he was, nor whether he would. And so
a great while he kept his commandement, til once, pas-
sing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her
mouth so watred, that she could not chosse but aske
him the question. And then, he making the greenuest ef
coplaints that would have melted a tree to haue heard
them, vanish't quite away: & she lay down, casting forth
as pitifull cries as any shrich-owle. But hauing laien so,
(wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) fïue dayes, &
five nights, she gat vp and went ouer many a high hil, &
many
many a deepe riuier; till she came to an Aunts house of
hers; and came, & cried to her for helpe: and she for pit-
tie gaue her a Nut, and bad her never open her Nut, til
she was come to the extremest misery that ever tongue
could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & never
rested the euening, wher she wet in the morning; til she
came to a second Aunt, and she gaue her another Nut:

Now good Mopsa (said she sweete Philoclea) I pray
thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day,
& I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day
shalbe thine. Mopsa was very glad of the bargaine, espe-
cially that it fhould grow a festiuall Tale: so that Zelmae,
who defired to finde the vttcrmost what thef Ladies
understood touching her selfe, and hauing understood
the danger of Erora (of which before she had never
heard) purposing with her selfe (as foone as this purfuit
she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour
her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the
story of Plangus, as of Erora. Philoclea referred it to her
sisters perfect remembrance, who with so sweet a voice,
and so winning a grace, as in themselues were of most
forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner
to their earnest request soone condiscended.

CHAP. 15.

"Plangus-his parentage." His trick of youth, espied, & tur-
med ouer by, and to his old father. An inuagling-woman;
arts. A guilty stepmothers dissellish practises against Plang-
gus. Her ministers false informations. Plangus perplexi-
tes. His fathers iclonies. The Queenes complots to finde
the ones suspicion, & work the others ouerthrom. Plang-
gus taken; delivred fith: is pursuied with old hate, &
new treason. Yet must he serve abroad, while a new heir
is made at home. This story broken off by Basilius.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

He father of this Prince Plangus yet liues, and is King of Iberia: a man (if the judgement of Plangus may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himselfe mistake the euill, seeing it disguised vnder some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princesse (who both from her ancessters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, Plangus. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had performed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again vnto her maker. The King (sealing vpon al thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after, recompencing the griefe of that disioyning from her, in conioyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, Plangus. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may judge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it selfe) loued a private mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly, then by which he was taken forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man persuaded himselfe he loued her; she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possible, that the outside onely can iustly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectio with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorse in her harte, & to paint shame vpon her
her face. And so possesst he his desire without any interruption; he constantly favouuring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue seene one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his minde (unworthie so to be loste) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leaving of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes cares be manifolde) from one to another came into the King; who (carefull of his onely sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie euill seruauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diuerted.

Whereupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow) vsed such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be ever lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as he could possible, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set forth her chastitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie prevailled, his father beleued; and so beleued, that ere long (though he were alreadie stept into the winter of his
The Countesse of Pembroke's

his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gaue himselfe ouer vnsto it; and (because he would auoide the odious comparison of a yong riuail) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Province lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse work, the of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him so worthilie, as euen to his country the fame therof came, long before his own coming; while yet his father had a speedier success, but in a far vnobler conquest. For while Plangu was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectiō) followed his suite with all meanes of vnhonest seruants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vn louelines.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent Plangu, or at left not hoping of him to obtaine so aspiring a purpose, lest no arte vnused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the time was already taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself upon the hooke, which he had greedely swallowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenaunce, yet neither forgetting handsomes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenaunce; her wordes were euers seasoned with sighes; and any tawour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might perswade cause of affection. And being grown skilfull in his humors, she was no leffe skilfull in applying his humors: neuer suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to haften to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loued him, and a certaine
taine stole a looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he straight was encountered with a make of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible unto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as Plangus tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo; & weep when she would, as they say some can doo; but (being most impudent in her hart) she could, when she would teach her chekes blushing, and make shamefastnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely vie fo the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but fo the bit, that it ran on; eué in such a careere as she would have it; that within a while, the king seeing with no other eyes but such as she gaue him, & thinking no other thoughts but such as she taught him; having at the first liberal measure of fauors, then shorned of the, when most his Desire was inflamed; he saw no other way but marriage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) loving, but chastly loving. So that by the time Plangus returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he found his father, not only maned, but already a father of a sonne & a daughter by this womake. Which though Plangus (as he had every way just cause) was grieved at; yet did his grief neuer bring forth either cōtemning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was grown a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence carie her condénation: so much the more, as that she (vischaftly attempting his wōred facies) found (for the reverence of his fathers bed) a bitter refusal: which breeding rather spite then shame
The Countesse of Pembroke

in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not only (as hating him) thirst for a revenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeavoured to doo harme vnto him. Therefore did she see the uttermost of her wicked wit, how to overthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the favour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and descent, it required the more cunning how to undermine it. And therefore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her aduancings him, to be his ruine. For first with words (never admiration then liking) she would extoll his excellencies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his succesess: so as the father might finde in her a singular loue towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe sparkes of ielousie in him. Thus having gotten an opinion in his father, that she was farre from meaning mischiefe to the sonne, then fell she to praise him with no lesse vehementie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets forth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the sinnerlue in him to beare rule, the singular loue the Subiects bare him, that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their favours, or his courage in employing their favours: that he was not borne to liue a subiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maiestie, such a Kingly entertainment, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprises: especially remembering those vertues, which in a succesor are no more honoured by the subiects, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by
by putting of obiectiōs, bring in obiectiōs to her husbands head, already infected with suspitio. Nay (would she say) I dare take it upon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might haue bene, who loued greatnes so well, as to build their greatnes vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, & euer vrgeth on his own successes; hating nothing, but what may stop the. But the Gods forbid, we should euer once dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praise, that he will not hurt. Then euer remembring to strengthein the suspition of his estate with priuate icloufie of her loue, doing him excessive honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speaches and graces in his absence, besides, causing him to be imploied in all such dangerous matters, as ether he should perish in them, or if he preuailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to woud him, vntill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into every accident.

Then tooke she help to her of a servaunt neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hafty ambitiō, and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raiie him, would make a ladder of any mischief. Him she v-feth to deale more plainly in alleaging causes of icelousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with divers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musitians, that singinge divers parts, make one musick. He sometime with fearefull countenaunce would de-
The Countesse of Pembroke

fire the King to looke to himselfe; for that all the court
and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation
of some suddaine change, vpon what ground himselfe
knew not. Another time he would counsell the King
to make much of his sone, and holde his favoure, for
that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now see-
ming to feare himselfe, because (he said) Plangus lo-
ed none of them that were great about his father.
Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful
countenance, & an humble gesture beare false witness
for his true meaning) that he fould, not only southerly,
but people weary of his gouernment, & al their affecti-
ons bent vpon Plangus. Both he and the Queene con-
curring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a
mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment:
so that within a while, all Plangus actions began to be
translated into the language of suspition.

Which though Plangus fould, yet could he not auoid,
ceuen co"traries being druen to draw one yoke of argu-
meth: if he were magnificet, he spent much with an aspi-
ring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspi-
ring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peo-
ples harts: if he were silent, he mused vpon some daun-
gerous plot. In summe, if he could haue turned himself
to as many formes as Proteus, euery forme should haue
bene made tedious.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gave the occasion
of further proceeding. The King one morning, going
to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle
stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe bro-
ken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of an-
other thing, and tied it about the place broken. The
King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I
make
make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding
the King already superstitious through suspition) amazed
him straights, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that,
returning, and breaking with his wife how much he
misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-laying an-
swers, as while they straue, straue to be overcome.
But even while the doubts most boiled, she thus nour-
ished them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall me of that
countrie, that at the great Parliamet (which was then to
be held) they should in the name of all the estates per-
swade the King (being now stept deeply into old age)
to make Plangus, his associate in governmet with him:
affuring the, that not only she would joine with them,
but that the father himself would take it kindly, charge-
ing the not to acquaint Plangus withal, for that perhaps
it might be harmful unto him, if the King should find,
that he were a party. They (who thought they might do
it, not only willingly, because they loved him, & truly,
because such indeed was the minde of the people), but
safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed ther-
to) accomplished her counsel: she indeed keeping promise
of vehement persuading the same: which the more she
& they did, the more she knew her husband would fear,
& hate the cause of his fear. Plangus found this, & humbly
protested against such desire, or will to accept. But the
more he protested, the more his father thought he dis-
ssembled, accounting his integrity to be but a cunning face
of falsity; and therefore delaying the desire of his sub-
jects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands upon his
sonne: which his wife thus brought to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go vnto Pla-
gus, & (enabling his words with great shew of faith, &
endearing them with desire of secretie) to tell him,
that he found his mine conspired by his stepmother,
with certain of the noble men of that country, the King
himselfe giving his consent, and that few daies should
pass, before the putting it in practice: with all discove-
ring the very truth indeed, with what cunning his step-
mother had proceeded. This agreeing with Plangus his
owne opinion, made him give him the better credit; yet
not so far, as to die out of his country (according to the
naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see
further. Whereupon the fellow (by the direction of his
mistresse) told him one day, that the same night, about
one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his
wife, & those noble me together, to deliberate of their
manner of proceeding against Plangus: & therefore offe-
red him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring
him into a place where he should heare all that passed;
& so haue the more reason both to himselfe, and to the
world, to seeke his saftetie. The poore Plangus (being sub-
ject to that only disaduantage of honest harrs, creduli-
tie) was persuaded by him: & arming himself (because
of his late going) was closely conduièd into the place
appointed. In the mean time his stepmother making
all her gestures cunningly counterfeit; a miserable affli-
tiè, she lay almost groueling on the flower of her cha-
ber, not sufferieng any body to comfort her; vntill they
calling for her husband, & he held of with long en-
quiry, at length, she told him (even almost crying out
every word) that she was very of her life, since she was
brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husband
murther, or accuse her sonne, who had euer bene more
deare.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

deare, then a sonne unto her. Then with many inter-
ruptions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne
Plagus (soliciting her in the old affection betweene
them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the
death of the King; assuring her, that though all the
lawes in the world were against it, he would marrie her
when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitiful
digressios, where in comes the same fellow, that brought
Plagus: & running himself out of breath, fell at the Kings
feet, beseeching him to save himself, for that there was a
man with sword drawn in the next roome. The King
affrighted, went out, & called his gerd, who entering the
place, found indeed Plagus with his sword in his hand,
but not naked, but standing suspiciously enough to one
already suspicious. The King (thinking he had put vp
his sworde because of the noise) never tooke leasure to
heare his answer, but made him prifoner, meaning the
next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the cies & cares
of his friends & followers, but that there was a little
army of them, who came, and by force delivered him; al-
though nubers on the other side (abused with the fine
framing of their report) tooke armes for the King. But
Plagus, though he might haue vfed the force of his
friends to revenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet
the naturall love of his father, and hate to make their
suspition seeme iust, caused him rather to choose a vo-
lutarie exile, the to make his fathers death the purchase
of his life: & therefore went he to Tiridates, whose mo-
ther was his fathers sister, living in his Court eleuen or
twelue yeares, ever hoping by his intercession, and his

owne
The Countesse of Pembroke

owne desert, to recover his fathers grace. At the end of which time the warre of Erona happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discoursed vnto you.

But his father had so deeply engraved the suspicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a searefull guiltines, than of an humble faithfulnes; & therefore continued his hate, with such vehemencie, that he did ever hate his Nephew Tiridates, and afterwards his neece Artaxia, because in their Court he received countenance, leaving no means unattempted of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked seruant of his, who vndertook to empoyson him. But his cunning disguised him not so well, but that the watchful seruants of Plagus did discover him. Whereupon the wretch was taken, & (before his wel-deserved execution) by torture forced to confess the particularies of this, which in generall I haue told you.

Which confession autentically set downe (though Tiridates with solemne Embaflage sent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the government into his wiues hande, neuer did so much as reade it, but sent it fright by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon Plagus, for the death of their seruant. And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the wavering peoples affection towards Plagus, with aduancing fit persons for faction, and graunting great immunities to the commons, they prevailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called Palladius, to be proclaymed succeffour, and Plagus quite excluded: So that Plagus was druen to continue his seruing Tiridates, as he did in the warre
warre against Erota and brought home Artaxia, as my father tolde you; when Erota by the treason of Antiphilus, But at that word she stopped. For Basilius (notable longer to abide their absence) came so dainly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling Zelmane he was afraid she had stollen away his daughters) invited them to follow the Sunnes counsel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was ready to set. They yielded, Zelmane meaning some other time to understand the storie of Antiphilus treason, and Eronas daunger, whose case she greatly tendered. But Mifs had no sooner espied Basilius, but that as spitefully, as her rotten voice could utter it, she set forth the sav- cineffe of Amphialus. But Basilius onely attended what Zelmanes opinion was, who though she hated Amphialus, yet the nobilitie of her courage prevailed over it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he governed himselfe, as one remembring his fault. Basilius giuing the infinite tearmes of praises to Zelmanes both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

CHAP. 16.

O brought he them vp to visite his wife, where betweene her, & him, the poore Zelamane receaved a tedious entertainement, oppressed with being loued, almost as much, as with loving. Basilius not so wise in covering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Louer thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But Gynecia (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vse the advantage of her sexe in kissing Zelamane, as shee vpon her bedde-siide by her, which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast vpon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once Zelamane could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whose motion stooode onely vpon her pleasure) Basilius with serviceable steppes, Gynecia with greedie eyes would follow her. Basilius mind Gynecia well knew, and could haue found in her harte to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all Gynecia actions were interpreted by Basilius, as proceeding from icelousie of his amorousnesse. Zelamane betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beats him, will make him beleeue it is for loue; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tafting wallowish medicin he proffers, is of a good taste) their loue was hatefull, their courtseie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisteth. Alas (thought she to her selfe) deare

Desus.
Dorus, what odds is there between thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to do in thy pursuit but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little envious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I have now Miso, the worst of thy diuels, let loose vpon me) am wait ed on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and Jealousie. Alas, incomparable Philo- cera, thou euer left me, but doft neuer see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was imprisoned in libertie, and banished being still present? To whom but me haue louers bene iailours, and honour a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her silent steps vp

2

on the, they parted ech from other (is at left they could be parted, of whom euery one did liue in an other) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally vpon such eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in left measure vpon Cynecia, who (when Basilius after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheerful comfort of the lights removed from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renue the curfes of her birth, & the in a manner embracing her bed; Ah chaste

bed of mine (said she) which neuer heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receaue this desastred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feele, that thou haft no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here & forgotten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice, while my soule was clothed with mode-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

flue, that was a comely ornament; now why should nature erowne that head, which is so wicked, as her onely despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would haue said, but that Basilius (awaked with the noise) tooke her in his armes, & bega to cõfort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a jealoust loue of him: which humor if she would a little have maintained, per-chance it might have weaken'd his new conceaved fanci-ies. But he finding her answeres wandring frõ the pur-pose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the aduïtage of a sleepe, which a little before day, over-watched with sorrow, her teares had as it were sealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with Zelmane, who baited on this fashion by these two louers, & ever kept from any meane to declare her selfe, found in her selfe a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a river the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

3 The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was sometime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her vnhap. There would she kiss the ground, and thanke the trees, blisse the aier, & do dutifull reuerence to every thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; sometimes despaire dark-ning all her imaginations, sometimes the active passion of Loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-mat-ched louers. But this morning Basilius himself gaue her good occasion to go beyond them. For hauing combd and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, coming where Zelmane was, he found her giuen ouer to her muscall muses, to the great plea-
sure of the good old Basilius, who retired himself behind a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did utter these passionate verses.

Loved I am, and yet complaine of Love:
As loving not, accus'd, in Love I die.
When pitie most I crave, I cruell prove:
Still seeking Love, loves found as much I fly.
Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
What I call wrong, I do the same, and more:
Bard of my will, I have beyond desire:
I wail for want, and yet am choke with store.
This is thy worke, thou God for ever blinde:
Though thousands old, a Boy entitl'd still.
Thus children do the silly birds they finde,
With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
Yet thus much Love, O Love, I crave of thee:
Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Basilius made no great haste from behind the tree, till he perceav'd she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to loose the precious fruit of time, he presented himselfe unto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old gouerneffe of Da-nine is painted, when she sodainly saw the goldé shoure, O heauenly woma, or earthly Goddesse (said he) let not my presence be odious vnto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend vpon this miserable old-ma, whose life hath hither to bene maintained but to serue as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only have over throwne me, & in my bondage confess my glory. Suffer not.
not your owne worke to be despised of you: but looke
upon him with pittie, whose life serues for your præife.
Zelmane (keeping a couetenace alances she vnderstood
him not) told him, It became her euil to suffer such ex-
cessiuæ reuerence of him, but that it worfe became her
to correct him, to whom she owed duetie: that the
opinion she had of his wisedome was such, as made
her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words
themselfes founded so, as she could not imagine what
they might intend. Intend's (said Basilius, proud that
that was brought in question) what may they intend,
but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat,
and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life
is vpheild, and my death threatned: Zelmane lifting up
her face as if she had receaued a mortall iniurie of him.
And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene
bent vnto? said she: Is it the dislaigne of my eftate, or
the opinion of my lightnesse, that haue emboldned
such base fancies towards me?: enjoying quoth you:
now little joy come to them that yeeld to such en-
joying. Poore Basilius was fo appalled, that his
legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he
would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to
his hart, a generall shaking all over his bodie possessed
him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to
giue a stammering answere, when it came into Zelmanes
head by this deuise to make her profite of his folly; and
therefore with a relented counterance, thus said un-
to him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnsuit either
for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large
testimonie I see of your affectiōn makes me willing to
supprese a great number of errors. Onely thus much
I thinke
I thinke good to say, that the same words in my Ladie Philoclea mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Basilius (whose senses by Desire were held open, and concept was by Loue quickned ) heard scarcely halfe her an{were out, but that (as if speedie flight might saue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speede his bodie would suffer him, towards his daughter Philoclea: whom he found at that time duetifullly watching by her mother, and Mipio curiouslie watching her; ha{ing left Mopsa to doo the like service to Pamela. Basilius foorthwith calling Philoclea aside, (with all the conjuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie vttter) besought her she would preserue his life, in whom her life was begonne; she would saue his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth over-burdened with him, she would coole his fiercie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleased Zelman; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continuall absince. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdain any service (though never so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. Philoclea more glad then euer she had knowen herselfe, that she might by this occasion, enjoy the private conference of Zelman, yet had
The Countesse of Pembroke

had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast over her faire thoughts, but with humble grace answered her father. That there needed neither promise nor perswasion to her, to make her doo her uttermost for her fathers service. That for Zelmanes fauour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she would not pearce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interprete all his doinges to be accomplished in goodnes: and therefore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he would not imparte it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather performing his generall commandement, which had ever beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, strong out of passion, and contrarie to the former. Basilius content to take that, since he could have no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free access into Zelmane) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer thankfully, desiring onely a speedy returne of comfort. Philoclea was parting, and Mips freight behind her, like Alecto following Proserpina. But Basilius forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharps set upon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in ouer-looking. Philoclea: and so said to Basilius, that she did as she was comanded, and could not answer it to Cynegeia, if she were any whitte from Philoclea: telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But Basilius, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stirr a foote to trouble his daughter) gaue her a stoppe for that while.  

CHAP.
Zelmares teares, and tearcfull distie. Philoclea enters conference with her. She shes, and shews her selfe Prince Pyrocles. Philoclea feares much, but loves more. Their conclusion, with reuertrie to their intermitted historio-logic.

O away departed Philoclea, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well she saw, her father was grown her aduersie partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must fauour her Riuall; and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But she walkt but a little on, before she saw Zelmane lying upon a banke, with her face so bent over Ladon, that (her teares falling into the water) one might have thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the vnder-running riuier. But by and by, with speech she made knowne, as well that she liued, as that she sorrowed. Taire stremes (said she) that do vouchsafe in your eieerenes to reprent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleasure doo not flye away from me. But if the violence of your spring command you to haste away, to pay your duceties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you these fewe wordes, and let the uttermost ends of the world know them. A Loue
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Loue more cleer then your selues, dedicated to a Loue
(I feare) more cold then your selues, with the cleerenes
layes a night of sorow vpon me, and with the coldenes
enflames a worlde of fire within me. With that she
tooke a willowe stick, and wrote in a sandie banke these
fewe verses.

O

ver these brooke, trusting to ease mine eyes,
(Mine eyes euen great in labour with their teares)
I layde my face, my face wherein there lys

Clifters of cloudes, which no Sunne euer cleares.

In matry glasse my matrie eyes I see:
Sorrows ill easde, where sorrows painted be.

My thoughts imprisond in my secret woe,
With flamie breathes doo issue oft in sound:
The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes force rebound.

And make me heare the plaints I would restraine:
Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.

Now in this sande I would discharge my minde,
And cast from me part of my burdinous cares:
But in the sand my tales for tolde I finde,
And see therein how well the writer fares.

Since furreume aier sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:
What hope to quench where each thing blowes the fire?

And afsoon as she had written them (a new swarme
of thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her
foot to giue the new borne letters both death and bur-
rial. But Philoche (to whom delight of hearing and see-
ing
ing was before a stay from interrupting her) gave her self to be seen unto her, with such a lightning of Beauty vpó Zelmae, that neither she could looke on, nor would looke of. At last Philoclea (having a little mused how to cut the three dee euen, betwene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each fange their parte, to make vp the harmonie of bashfulnesse) began to say, My Father to whom I owe my self, & therefore, When Zelmae (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giving vp her life to the lippes of Philoclea, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for a while within the Paradise of her minde. For well she knew her fathers errād, who should soon receive a sufficient answere. But now she demaunded leave not to loose this long sought for commoditie of time, to eafe her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her des- tinie was to be condemned by Philoclea's mouth, at least Philoclea might know, whom she had condemned. Philoclea easily yeelded to grant her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the ri- uer the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Na- ture, Zelmae doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthinesse of every worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

Most beloved Ladie, the incomparable excellen- cies of your selfe, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremo-
The Countesse of Pembrokes

nies before the beginning, and many circumstances in the uttering my speech, both bolde, and fearfull. But the small opportunitie of envious occasion (by the malicious sic hateful Loue doth cast upon me) and the extreme bento of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by respects due vnto you, in respect of your poore ca-
tifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preserved. I doo therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to o-
mit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If euer the sound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue understood, what force it hath had to con-
quere the strongeest hartes, and change the most set-
led estates: receiue here an example of those strange Tragedies; one, that in him selfe conteneth the par-
ticularities of all those misfortunes: and from hence-
forth beleue that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see (I say) a living image, and a present storie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whether goest thou my tongue? or how doth my harte consent to aduenture the revealing his nearest touching secrete? But peace Feare, thou com-
mest too late, when already the harme is taken. There-
fore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a mi-
serable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes Pyrocles, Prince of Macedon, whome you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnued Metamorphosis: whome you onely haue made neg-
lect his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake
to be Pyrocles: the same Pyrocles, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, Pyrocles was drowned. O most true presage: for these traitors, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betrayed me, will never leave till they have drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whomc vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddess of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred upon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire; that my desire may be waied in the bal- lances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the highest Loue in no base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwise you be (alas but let it never be so) re- solved, yet shall not my death be comfortles, receiving it by your sentence.

The joy which wrought into Pygmalions mind, while he found his beloved image was softer, & warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accomplished his gladnes with a perfect womans shape (still beautified with the former perfections) was even such; as by each degree of Zelmanes wordes creepingly entred into Philo- cles: till her pleasure was fully made vp with the manifetling of his being; which was such as in hope did over-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine have playd
his parte in her minde, and cald in question, how she
should be assured that Zelmane was Pyrocles. But Loue
streight stood vp & deposed, that a lie could not come
from the mouth of Zelmane. Besides, a certain sparke of
honour, which rose in her well-disposed minde; made
her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone she
desired to be (with all the other contradictions growing
in those minds, which nether absolutly clime the rocke
of Vertue, nor freely sink into the sea of Vanitie) but
that sparke soone gaue place, or at least gaue no more
light in her mind, then a candle doth in the Sunnes pre-
sence. But euen sicke with a surfeit of joy, and fearefull
of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge
treasures, doubtes whether he sleepe or no; or like a
fearfull Deere, which then looks most about, when
he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of
tremor through all her principall partes, she gaue these
affectionate wordes for answere. Alas, how painefull
a thing it is to a deuided minde to make a wel-joyned
answere: how harde it is to bring inwarde shame to
outward confession: and what handsomnes trow you
can be observerd in that speeche, which is made one
knowes not to whom. Shall I say ô Zelmane: Alas your
wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince Pyrocles? wretch
that I am, your shew is manifect against it. But this, this
I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, Philocles,
you had either never bene, or ever bene Zelmane: you
had either never attempted this change; set on with
hope, or never discovered it, stopp with despaire. But I
feare me, my behaviour ill governed, gaue you the first
comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giue you
this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my
gouern-
gouvernement before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull vnto me: & my weaker gouernment since, makes you to pull of the visar. What shall I doe then? Shall I seeke far fetched inuentions? Shall I labour to lay marble coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is, Zelmane (for so I loue to call thee, since in that name my loue first began, and in the shade of that name my loue shall best lie hidden,) that euens while so thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sorry, or that my loue must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to Pyrocles? how may that well be, since when thou wert Zelmane, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: vse it with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preferue me. Doost thou loue me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-acusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affection, a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded to haue done. But Pyrocles so caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuie the Gods felicitie, presented her with some jewells of right princely value, as some little tokens of his loue, & qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King Euarchus, vnto him, which euens in the Sea had amongst his jewells bene preferued. But little needed those proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with her selfe, rather then make any contrarie conicestures to Zelmanes speeches; so that with such imbracements,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

as it seemed their soules desird to meete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faile Pyrocles would haue sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but Philocles commaundd the contrary: and yet they passd the promisse of mariage.

And then at Philocles entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occasions of remayne with Zelmae, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their departing from Erona, for the rest she had already vnderstood of her sister. For (faide she) I haue vnderstood, how you first in the companie of your Noble couin Musidorus parted from Thessalia, and of divers aduentures, which with no more daunger then glory you passd through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene Erona; and the ende of that warre you might perceiue by my selfe I had vnderstood of the Prince Planous. But what since was the course of your doings, untill you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof hauing rather shewed it by pieces, then deliuered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere Pyrocles (for what can mine cares be so sweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of those things which haue made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I haue you here out of them, euen the remembrance of them is pleaunt. Pyrocles easilie perceiued she was content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Loue shewed himselfe a cowardly boy, that durft not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue prooued him selfe valiant, that durft with the sword of reuerent dutie gaine-stand the force
force of so many enraged desires. But so it was, that though he knew this discourse was to entertain him from a more strict and pungent manner, yet he could not but kiss his rod, and gladly make such of the entertainment which he allotted unto him; and therefore with a desirous sign chastening his breast for too much desiring, Sweete Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophies, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories may euer make my fame yeele. So sweete a Musick to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching Pyrocles, onely therefore of value, because he is your Pyrocles? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to think it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to giue it hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of Tiridates, and setting Erona in her governement; for settled we left her, howsoever since (as I perceiued by your speech the last day) the vngrateful treason of her ill-chosen husband overthrew her (a thing in truth never till this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without having such a minde as Antiphilus, that so great a beautie as Eronas (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? so great goodnes could not haue bound gratelynesse? and so high advancement could not haue satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottomlesee pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my Cosen, and me, upon this cause we parted from Erona.
The Countesse of Pembroke

CHAP. 18.

'Anaxius-his surcuidrie; * and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted. 3 The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-lone. 4 Pyrocles-his intercession in the cause. * The lewd parts of that light lecher. 6 His scoffing excuses. 7 Didos revenge on him stopped, 8 and his revenge on her stayed by Pyrocles.

Evardes (the braue & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the cobar for Erona) had three Ne-
phewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set among the foremost rakes of Fame for great minds to at-tempt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; especially the eldest, by name Anax-
is, to whom all men would willingly have yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to be-
flow it upon himselfe, before any could giue it. For of so unsupportable a pride he was, that where his deede might well stirre envy, his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Cynists euer made war against heaven, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing vnjust, while his liking was his iustice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid, because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince Pligus was by his cosen Tiridates preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the sword & speare in judging of desert, how much he esteemed himselfe before
before Plangus in that, so much would he have had his allowance in his service.

But now that he understood that his uncle was slaine by me, I thinke rather scorne that any should kill his uncle, then any kindnesse (an vn-visd guest to an arrogant soule) made him seek his revenge; I must confess in manner gallant enough. For he sent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdom of Lycia; where he would proue upon me, that I had by some trecherie overcome his uncle, whom els many hundreds such as I, could not have withstood. Youth & success made me willing enough to accept any such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that your cosen Amphialus (who for some yeares hath unuerfally borne the name of the best Knight in the world) had divers times fought with him, & never been able to master him; but so had left him, that every man thought Anaxius in that one vertue of curtesie far short of him, in all other his match; Anaxius stil deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, because so I understood for certaine, he was; and (I must confess) desirous to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince Mufidorus, because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to any thing in my self, whatsoever before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as received, whatsoever there is, or may be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giuing me in him so luely an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist ouer mine eyes, as not to see, and to loue it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as(3 heauens)
The Countesse of Pembroke's

heauens)how can my life ever requite unto him; which made me indeed saw in my selfe such a kind of depending upon him, as without him I found a weakeenesse, and a mistrustfulness of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiving to ouer-rule me, I straue against it, not that I was vnwilling to depend upon him in judgement, but by weakeenesse I would not; which though it held me to him, made me vnworthy of him. Therefore I desired his leave, and obtained it: such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tenderness; and so privately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in secreat manner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to prevent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was Erona to let vs depart from her, (as it were) foreseeing the harnes which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from those commas of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes journey in my way toward Anaxius) met an aduenture, (though in it felte of small importance) I will tell you at large, because the occasion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

As I past through a Laund (eche side whereof was so barded both with high tymber trees, and copies of farre more humble growth, that it might easily bring a solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgeffes of the forrest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawses to mine cares from within the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voice, so to crie. But making
making mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I saw at the bottom of one of them a gentleman bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might tumble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Vpo him (like so many Eagles upon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such as one might well enough say, they were handsome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, hauing bene before-hand vnarmed of any defence from the waft vpward, but onely of his shirte: so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported themselves in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moued to compassion, and so much the more that he straight cald to me for succour, desiring me at left to kill him, to deliver him from those tormenters. But before my self could resolue, much lesse any other tell what I would resolue, there came in cholericke hast towards me about seue or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with so ouer-mastring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therfore (answering them, that how I would haue defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combat first with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) joyntly. But such was the end of it, that I kept the field with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ranne away, sauing onely one; who was so flesht in malice, that
The Countesse of Pembroke's

drag that neither during, nor after the fight, she gaue any

truce to her crueltie, but still used the little instrument

of her great spight, to the well-witnesse paine of the im-

patient patient: and was now about to put out his eies,

which all this while were spared, because they should
do him the discomfort of seeing who prevailed over

him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her
to some conference, (for some time it was before she

would harken, more before she would speake; & most,
before she would in her speech leave off that remem-

brance of her bodkin) but at length when I puld off my
head-piece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or

knowledge why she was cruel; out of breath more

with choller (which increased in his owne exercise) the

with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gaue

her griefe vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she)
much it is against my will to forbeare any time the ex-

ecuting of my iust reuenge vpon this naughtie creature,

a man in nothing, but in deceaung women; But be-

cause I see you are young, and like enough to haue the

power (if you would haue the mind) to do much more

mischicfe, then he, I am content vpon this bad subiect
to reade a lecture to your vertue.

This man called Pamphilus, in birth I must conffe

esse is noble (but what is that to him, if it shalbe a staime to

his deade auncestors to haue left such an offpring?) in

shape as you see not vncomely (indeed the fit maske of
his disguised falskhood) in conversation wittily plea-

fant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie

simplictie, his words of hartie companablenesse; and

such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed,
as to thinke mischicuously: delighted in all such things,

which
which by imparting their delight to others, makes the
yer therof welcome; as, Musicke, Daunting, Hunting,
Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a
one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede neuer
with a better companio. But vnder these qualities lies such
a poysonous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts
of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable)
he creepes, nay (to say truely) he flies to into the fauour
of poore sillie women, that I would be too much aha-
med to confess, if I had not reuenge in my hande, as
well as shame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholy
delighted in deceiuing vs, we could never be warned,
but rather, one bird caught, serued for a stale to bring
in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed,
that he (as it were) gane away to his new mistresse, whè
he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning
of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes
of his vows, were but among the weakeft threedes of
his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the
entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces;
there lay his Masters part of cunning, making vs now
jealous, now envious, now proud of what we had, de-
sirous of more, now giuing one the triumph, to see him
that was Prince of many, Subject to her; now with an
estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that
minde, which indeede could neuer be had: neuer cea-
sing humblenes and diligence, till he had embarked vs
in some such disaduantage, as we could not return dry-
shod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant.
For so would he vse his imperiousnes, that we had a
delightfuli feare, and an awe which made vs loath to
lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when some-
times
The Countesse of Pembrokes
dimes with late repentance I thinke of it) I must con-
tesse, even in the greatest tempest of my iudgment was
I never druen to think him excellent, and yet so could
let my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though
herein had lain my felicitie: like them I haue seene
play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde
haue the ball, and yet euer one knew it was but a ball.
But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we
had eather our hartes broken with sorrow, or our estates
spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for
euer lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by
his faultie vsing of our faults. For neuer was there man
that could with more scornefull eyes beholde her, at
whose feete he had lately laine, nor with a more vn-
manlike brauerie vfe his tongue to her disgrace, which
lately had song Sonets of her praises: being so naturally
inconstant, as I maruell his soule findes not some
way to kill his bodie, whereeto it had beene so long va-
nited. For so hath he deak with vs (unhappie foole,) as
we could neuer tell, whether he made greater haste
after he once liked, to enjoy, or after he once enjoyed,
to forfake. But making a glorie of his own shame,
it delighted him to be challenged of vnkindneffe: it
was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for:
and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were
painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Lo-
uers: yet so farre had we engaged our selues, (unfortu-
nate soules) that we lifted not complaine, since our
complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accusati-
on to our selues. But euerie of vs (each for her selfe,) laboured all means how to recouer him, while he
rather daily sent vs companions of our deceipt, then
euer
ever returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so vnworthie a changeablenesse; leaving vs nothing but remorse for what was past, and despaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in friendshipe, who till that time, had employed our endeavours one against the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the justifying of his loue to her by mariage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Revenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) devised how to get him among vs alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them, whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easily gaue vs opportunitie to doo.

And a man may see, euens in this, how soone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authoritie among vs, as if the Planets had done inough for vs, that by vs once he had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his vnkindnesse vnto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to justifie his cruell falshood, and all with such iestes, and disdainfull passages, that if the iniurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it.

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall never forgette, how he woulde prooue it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Loue to an other, but
but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I euer loued my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Louely: and where-soever I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly folowed it. But these constant fools you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will loue her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their loue from fairenes to soulenesse, and from soulenes to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will freight giue ouer himself to his mortall enemie: where I (whom you call inconstant) am euer constant, to Beautie; in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this iollie scoffing brauerie he went ouer vs all, saying, He left one, because she was ouer-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough; a fourth, because she was ouer-game some; the fifth, because she was growen with griefsubject to sicknesse; the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be jealous of him; the seuenth, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loued; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth, because she was not libe rall; but to me, who am named Dido, (and indeede haue mette with a false Aneas) to me, I say, (o the vn gratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to object, but that (perdie) he met with many sayrer.

But when he had thus plaide the carelesse Prince, we (having those servuants of ours in readines, whom you lately so manfully ouercame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that trifling reuenge, in which you found vs busie; but meaning afterwarwares to have
haue mangled him so, as should haue lost his credit for euer abusing more. But as you haue made my fellowes flie away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong ouershadowes in my judgement the greatnesse of any daunger. For was it not inough for him, to haue deceived me, & through the deceit abused me, & after the abuse forfaken me, but that he must now, of all the company, & before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge: Many fairer? I trow euë in your judgement, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many fairer; & now (who so ever faies the contrary) there are not many fairer. And of whom should I receive this reproch, but of him, who hath best cause to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how soever my fellowes pardon his injuries, for my parte I will euer remember, & remember to reuenge this scorne of all scornes. With that she to him afresh, & surely would haue put out his eies (who lay muet for shame, if he did not sometimes crie for feare) if I had not left from my horse, & mingling force with intreay, stayed her furie.

But, while I was perfwading her to meekenes, comes a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they should kill that woman, that had thus betrayed and disgraced him. But then I was faine to forfake the ensigne, vnder which I had before servued, and to spend my utmost force in the protecting of the Ladie; which so well preuailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of all sides. And so I leauing her in a place of securitie (as she thought) went on my journey towards Anaxius; for whom I was faine to stay two daies in the appointed place, he disdaining to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.

Bb  CHAP.
Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont to say too much) like a man whose courage was apt to clime over any daunger. And assoone as ever he came neere me, in fit distaunce for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skillfully guided) ran upon me; which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, having kept my selxe ready for him, because I had understood, that he observed but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite into him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit ech other upon the head with our Launces: I think he felt my blowe; for my parte (I must confesse) I never receiued the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonishe, my minde forced them to quicken them selves, because I had learned of him, how little fauour he is wont to shewe in any matter of aduantage.
And indeed he was turned, and comming upon me with his sworde drawne, both our staues hauing bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to answer him, that truely I know not who gaue the first blowe. But whosocuer gaue the first, it was quickly seconded by the second. And indeed (excellenteft Ladie) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought betwene vs; he undoubtedly being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much loftinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, wiuing and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horse happened to come vpon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand vpward; so as it lighting vpon his hart, the horse died. He druen to dismount, threatened, if I did not the like, to doo as much for my horse, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such sort, that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that vnconstant Pamphilus, whom I had deliuered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a do-fen armed men after him; but before him he had Dido (that Ladie, who had most sharply punished him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with most vn-manlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pitifull a sight vnto me, that it moued me to require Anaxius to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distressed Ladie.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But he that disdaineth to obey any thing but his passion (which he calls his mind) had me leave of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would be long betwixt us (longing in my hart to deliver the poore Dido) giving him so great a blowe, as somewhat flaited him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the company, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that we made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horse, Anaxius followed me: but his proude harte did so disdain that exercise, that I had quickly ouer-run him, & ouer-taken my horse; being (I must confesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that ever shewed his shoulders to his enimie. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, O see how feare giues him wings) I turned to Anaxius, & aloud promised him to returne thether again, as soone as I had relieued the injured Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the base wordes angry contempt could endite; I said no more, but, Anaxius, assure thy self, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so vsing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurres, I ranne in my knowledge after Pamphilus, but in all their conceipts from Anaxius, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testifi'd with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moused to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies misery ouer-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

my horse sometimes, then of my selfe, so sightly to hit the way) I ouergat the a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured castle, the place where I perceiued they meant to performe their vnknightly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the stird with a lauoe, the iustnesse of the cause so enhabed me against the rest (tallsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only Anaxis, deliuered her from those injuriuous wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left unpuished. As for Pamphilus, he having once scene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, even from the beginning began to be in the reaward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to give them thanks for their paines. But when I had deliuered to the Lady a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had layd so vehement apprehension of death vpon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcillement) Pamphilus had set vpon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such manner as I had scene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father, to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his castle windowe (for this castle, she said, was his) he might haue the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the
The Countesse of Pembroke

armour) had not warranted her from that nearest approaching cruelty. I was glad I had done so good a deed for a Gentlewoman not unhandsome, whom before I had in like forte helped. But the night beginning to persuade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, even out of countenance before she began her speach, much after this manner invited me to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but a

based by wordes, since the life I haue, I holde it now

the second time of you; and therefore neede not of-

fer service vnto you, but onely to remember you, that

I am your seruantaunt: and I would, my being so, might

any way yeeld any small contentment vnto you. Now

onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this

night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in

truth this countrie is very dangerous for murthering

theeues, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I

must confesse, that as the love I beare you makes me

thus invite you, so the same love makes me ashamed to

bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spoke but

ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With

that she tolde me, that though the speake of her father

(whom she named Chremes) she would hide no truth

from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all

that region the man of greatest posessions, and riches,

so was he either by nature, or an cuill received opinion,
given to sparing, in so unmeasurable a sorte, that he did not onely barre him selfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie use thereof; scarcely allowing him selfe fitte sustenance of life, rather

then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake

onely
only he seemed to ioye in life. Which extreme dealing (descending from himselfe vpon her) had driven her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that country, by which occasion she had stumbled vpon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deate to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserved, yet she could not deny, but she was driven thereby to receive more then decent souldours. She concluded, that there at leaft I should be free from injuries, & should be assured to her-wards to abound as much in the true causes of welcome, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of food and reft, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well store of both, did not abide long entertainie, but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, having a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose vnthriftie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faire to crie a good while before we coulde have anfweare, and to dispute a good while before anfweare would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a ioy to receive his daughter, whom hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his head by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take us in; for my part by that time growne so weareie of such entertainement, that no regard...
The Countesse of Pembroke's

regard of myselfe, but only the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this Chremes, a driueling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarcely would give me thanks for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulness might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a false welcome, I might perceave in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not ouer-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (serued onely by a company of rusticall villaines, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so fluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike lest I should haue proued a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not with him worse, then to be himselfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; ouer-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates vnder his rooffe: which she grieuing at, desired much to know my name, I thynke partly of kindnesse to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make euen his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demaundd my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Loue had not
not as then so robbed me of myself, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceave by some ill-fauoured cheerefulness; which then first began to wrinkle itselfe in his face.

But the causes of their ioyes were farre different, for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke vp on one sheepe with pleasing conceits, but the shepheard with minde to profite himselfe by preserving, the butcher with killing him: So she reioyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and louingly reioyced: but his ioy grew, (as I to my danger after perceived) by the occasion of the Queene ataxias setting my head to sale, for havinge slaine her brother Tidates; which being the summe of an hundreth thousand crownes (to whosoever brought me alieue into her hands;) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things lounting money, for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well deferuing of him, for to haue that which he was determined never to use. And so knowing that the next morning I was resolued to go to the place where I had left Anaxus, he sent in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it belonged to the King of Iberia, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it:) doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of
The Countesse of Pembroke's

of the fittest places where they might surprise me in the morning, the old caitiff was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompany me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apt to suspect; since a churlse curtesie ratherly comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clowunes, horse vpon such cart-iades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with myselfe, if that were thrift, I wist none of my friends or subjectes euer to thrive. As for his daughter (the gentle Dido) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

7 So we went on togethir: he so old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talk with me, whose life he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-side whereof men might easilly kepe themselues undiscovered, I was encompassed sodainly by a great troupe of enemies, both of horse and foot, who willed me to yeelde my selfe to the Queene Artaxia. But they could not haue vsed worse eloquence to haue perswaded my yeelding, then that, I knowing the little good will Artaxia bare me. And therefore making necessitie and justice my best sword and shield, I vsed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little case of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guildeinesse is not alwayes with ease oppressed. As for Chremes, he withdrew himselfe, yet so guilding his
his wicked conceits with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent Musidorus came to my succour; who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with Anaxius, came to the niggards Castell, where he found all burned and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leave monuments of their malice therein: which Musidorus not staying either to further, or impeach, came upon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cofen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath Musidorus by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not straunge for the number, then for the straunge blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserved death, might well delight me to speake off, but I should so holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth, there if euer, and euer, if euer any man, did Musidorus shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

Yet what the unmeasurable excedde of their number woulde haue done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable com-
The Countesse of Pembrokes

comming thither of the King of Iberia, that same father of that worthy Plangus, whom it hath pleased you sometimes to mention: who, (not yelding ouer to old age his country delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this injurie offer'd vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was straight known by the souliers that assaulted vs, to be their King: and so most of them with-drew themselves.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motiue of this mischietuous practise; misliking much such violéce should be offer'd in his countrie to men of our ranke: but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confesse wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne Plangus against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be striken off, and the old bad Chremes to be hanged: though truly for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chauncé slaine among his clownes, while she over-boldly for her weake sex sought to hold the from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

CHAP.
The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court. 
Andromanae omniregencie. 
Her parti-love to them both. 
Her faire and foule means to inueigle them. 
Palladius love to Zelmane. 
Zelmanes love to Pyrocles, and practife with her Louer to relese her beloued.

His iustice thus done, and we deliuered, the King indeede in royall forte invited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining vs so, as truely I must cwer acknowledge a beholdingnesse vnto him: although the stremes of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring.

For after some dayes being there (curing our selues of such wounds as we had receiued, while I, causyng diligent search to be made of Anaxius, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boastinge in euerie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receiue the fauour of acquaintance with this Queene Andromana, whom the Princesse Pamela did in so liuely colours describe the last day, as still me thinkes the figure therof posseseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rarenes of affection, and after with the very use of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a while he would
would not, and after, he could not tell how to govern, without being govern'd by her: but finding an ease in not understanding, let loose his thoughtes wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckily fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was neither guided by wisdom, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slippe insensiblie into such an estate, that he liued at her vn- discrete discretion: all his subjectes having by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely from her, that it should have needed a stronger ver- tue the his, to haue vnwound so deeply an entred vice. So that either not strining (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not strite) he scarce- lie knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

Now we being brought knowne vnto her (the time that we spent in curing some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were sooner then our selves expected) she continuallie almost haunted vs, till (and it was not long a doing) we discovered a most violent bent of affection: and that so strangely, that we might well see, an euill minde in au- thoritie, dooth not onely follow the sway of the desires alreadie within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected vs both: and so did her greatnes disdaine shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing many times torne the vaile of modestie) it see- med, for a laffe delight, that she delighted in infamy: which often she had vied to her husbands shame, filling
all mens cares (but his) with reproch: while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) left of al mē knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting forth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be misliked, but as much aduanced to the eye, as abased to the judgemēt by arte) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-diligēt ministers, who ofte cloyed our eares with her praifes, & would needs teach vs a way of felicitie by seeking her favor. But when she found, that we were as deaf to the, as dumb to her: then she listed no longer stay in the suburbs of her foolish desires, but directly entred vpō the; making her self an impudent fitter, authorizing her selfe very much with making vs see that all favor & power in that realm, so depēded vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep, or lose our liberty, at her discretion; which yet she so tēpred, as that we might rather suspect, thē she threatē. But whē our woulds grew so, as that they gaue vs leave to trauell, & that she found we were purposed to vse all meanes we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatnes) craued that, which in all good maners was ether of vs to be defird, or not grantēd. Truely (most faire & every way excellēt Lady) you would haue wondred to haue seene, how before vs she would confess the contentiō in her own mind, between that louely (indeed most louely) brōunes of Musidorus his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in the deceivable title of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her wordes would beginne halsē of the sentence to Musidorus, & end the other half
The Countesse of Pembroke's

to Pyrocles: not ashamed (seeing the friendship between us) to desire either of us to be a mediator to the other; as if we should have played a request at Tennis between us: and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendship might meet; and be the knot which might tie our hearts together. Which proceeding of hers I do the more largely set before you (most dear Lady) that by the foyle thereof, you may see the nobleness of my desire to you; & the warrantableness of your favour to me.

At that Philocles smiled, with a little nod. But (saide Pyrocles) when she perceived no hope by suite to preuaile, then (perswaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to do any thing) she founde means to haue us accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to overthrow him in his owne estate. Which, because of the strange successes we had in the kingdoms of Phrigia, Pontus & Galatia) seemed not unlikely to him, who (but skimming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leaue the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who foorthwith caused us to be put in prifon, having (while we slept) deprived us of our armour: a prison, indeede inhuman, because a prifon, but els well testifying affection, because in all respects as commodious, as a prifon might be: and indeede so placed, as she might at all houres (not seene by many, though she cared not much how many had seene her) come vnto us. Then fell she to faufe her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so vnworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by Loue, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claimes an
an answering. And how much that love might move vs, so much, and more that faultines of her mind removed vs, her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to grant, had been wickedly injurious to him, that faued our liues: and to accuse a Ladie that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we esteemed almoft as dishonorable: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be injurious to your cares, which should expresse the manner of her fuite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefaules, and wanton languishing borrowed of her eyes the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time far from louing her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes fauing of our liues; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende vs worde, that vpon our liues, we should doo whatsoever she commanded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preseruation of his estate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel she to servile entreating vs, as though force could have bene the schoole of Loue, or that an honest courage would not rather strive against, then yelde to injurie. All which yet could not make vs accuse her, though it made vs almost pine aweaie for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past, and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes}
The Countesse of Pembroke's

to poison me with roses, (sometimes to heale me with wormwood) brought forth a remedy vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the conclusion was such, as I must euer while I liue, think it wore then a wracke, so to haue bene preferued. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themselues, & already acceptation of the inconstant people, as sucessful four of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as vnworthie, in respect of the wrong was therby done against the most worthy Plan-gus: whose great deserts now either forgotten, or vngratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the fauourable winde, which blew on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giuing Plangus (who some yeares before was their only chapion) the poore cōsort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regio, by name Palladius, did with vehement affection loue a young Ladie, brought vp in his fathers court, called Zelmane, daughter to that mischieuously vnhappy Prince Plexirtus (of whom already I haue, and sometimes must make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene Andromana, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so felt it out that this Zelmane, (though truely reason there was inough to loue Palladius) yet could not euer perswade her hartē to yelde thereunto: with that paine to Palladius, as they feele, that feele an vnloved loue.

Yet
Yet loving indeede, and therefore constant, he vsed still the intercession of diligence and faith, ever hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought foorth this ende, whiche truely deserues of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie Zelmane (like some vwisely liberall, that more delight to giue presentes, then pay debtes) she chose ( alas for the pitty) rather to bestowe her loue (so much vnderuered, as not desir'd) vpon me, then to recopence him, whose loue (besides many other things) might seeme (euen in the court of Honour) iustly to claime it of her. But so it was ( alas that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preferue, and benefite doth follow vnsoiled affection) she felt with me, what I felt of my captiuitie, and staight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by vsing the helpe therein of Palladius: who (true Louer) considering what, and not why, in all her commandements, and indeed the concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his utmost credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued son with a mother, faultie otherwise, but not hard harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he sought to haue that by practisfe, which he could not by praiere. And so being allowed often to visit vs (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her
The Countesse of Pembroke

her passion was either in the fit, or intermission; he vied the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliver vs.

CHAP. 21.

The cause of the Iberian yearely infestes. 
Queene Helens prayses. The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reverse. The inventions and actions of seven tilters. Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it. Andromana pursuite of them to the death of her sonne and her selfe.

The time of the maryinge that Queene was every year, by the extreme love of her husband, & the serviceable love of the Courtiers, made notable by some publike honours, which indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then iufts, both with sword and launce, maintained for a seven-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to trieue, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that divers famous Knights came thither from the court of Helen, Queene of Corinth, a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to ioyne with
with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of Arcadia, they are farre beyond all conceit of comparison) so hath her gouernment bene such, as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens judgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to goure a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so vsed to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were drawne. Ye could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of contempt: & which was notable, even in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to Corinth were thought still would conclude there) yet so hadle she the matter, that the threatens ever smaried in the threatners, she vsing so strauge, and yet so well succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Loue, chaft. For by continuall martial exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her sportes were such as caried riches of Knowledge vpó the streame of Delight: & such the behauior both of her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not vpon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to have bene the mariage place of Loue and Vertue, & that her selfe was a Dian apparellled in the garments of Venus. And this which Fame onely delivered unto me, (for yet I have never seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere neigh-
neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her selfe wife, and of others beloued) that neither follie is the cause of vehement Loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more vnonremoueable determinatiō gaue her selfe to the coucell of Loue, after she had once let before her mind the worthines of your cousin Amphialus, & yet is neither her wisedome doubted of, nor honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisdom, then to discerne, what is worthy the louing: what more agre-able to goodnes, then to loue it so discerned: and what to greatnessse of hart, then to be constant in it once lo-ued? But at that time, that Loue of hers was not so pu- blikely knowne, as the death of Philoxenus, and her search of Amphialus hath made it: but then seemed to haue such leasure to sende thither diverse choyse Knights of her court, because they might bring her, at left the knowledge, perchaunce the honour, of that Triumph.

Wherein so they behaued themselves as for three daies they caried the prize, which being come from so farre a place to disgrace her servaunts, Palladius (who himselfe had neuer vnfe ed armes) persuaded the Queene Andromana to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horfe and armour, that he with vs might undertake the recouerie of their lost honour: which she graunted; taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, and neuer to abandon him. Which she did not more for sauing him, then kee- ping vs: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horfemen to haue eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the
the young Prince, who (we saw) loued vs. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the fielde: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the strangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a braue Knight, whose devise was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his Impresa was

Against him came forth an he- rian whose manner of entring was, with bagpipes in stead of trumpets; a shepheards boy before him for a Page, and by him a dozen apparelléd like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in stuffe, who caried his lances, which though strong to give a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mouth, that they pretily reprefeted shephooks. His own furniture was dreft over with wooll, so enriched with Jewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a mariage betwene the lowest and the highest. His Impresa was a sheepe marked with pitch, with this word Spotted to be knowne. And because I may tell you out his concept (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they say) that was the Star, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending vpó PHILISIDES went among the, & fag an eclogue; one of the answering another, while the other shepheards pulling out recorders (which possedt the place of pipes) accorded their music to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise:

Cc 4
The Countesse of Pembroke's

I onely remember fixe verses, while hauing questioned one with the other, of their fellow shepheardes sodaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

Me thought some staves he mist: if so, not much amisse: For where he most would hit, he never yet did misse.
One said he brake acrosse; full well it so might be: For never was there man more crostly crost then he.
But most cried, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest
Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I have digrest, because his maner liked me weel: But when he began to run against Lelius, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For Philisides breaking his staves with great commendation, Lelius (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne ever over his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, than others did in hitting. For with so gallanta grace his staffe came swimming close over the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of Mars. But Philisides was much moued with it, while he thought Lelius would shew a contempt of his youth: till Lelius (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so many course s tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose injuries he could never otherwise returne, then honours.

But so by Lelius willing-missing was the odds of the Iberian
Iberian side, and continued so in the next by the excellent running of a Knight, though so fretted so by the Muses, as many times the rustic people left both their delights and profits to harken to his songs; yet could he so well perform all armed sports, as if he had never had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildness, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaves, which though they fell not, still threatened falling. His Impresa was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, Data fata sequutus. But after him the Corinthian Knights absolutely prevailed, especially a great noble man of Corinth, whose device was to come without any device, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newness shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a bird was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a live bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure liuely representing the Phoenix: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the bird, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frozen Knight, frozen in despair; but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so liuely answering therto, as yet did I neuer see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing sights haue carried me too farre in an vn necessarie discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the Corinthians that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; Palladius neither suffering
The Countess of Pembroke's

rs, nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the after-
oone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing
otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the
weapons was taken away. But in the triall Palladisus (es-
specially led by Musidorus, and somewhat aided by me)
himselfe truely behauing himselfe nothing like a be-
ginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of
the Iberian side: And the next day, both morning, and
after-noone being kept by our party, He (that saw the
time fitte for that deliuerie he intended) called vnto vs
to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and wil-
ling by good-wil, obeyed: and so the gard not daring
to interrupt vs (he commanding passage) we went after
him vpon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by:
which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till
we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he
was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obay
Zelmere.

But his mother (as I learned since) understanding by
the gard her sonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her
greatnes, & refining modesty to more quiet thoughts)
flung out from her place, and cried to be accompanied,
for she her selfe would follow vs. But what she did (be-
ing rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of
reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne
confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently
she commanded, as a good while no body knew what
she commanded, so as we had gotten so far the start, as to
be already past the confines of her kingdome before she
ouertooke vs: and overtake vs she did in the kingdome
of Bythinia, not regarding shame, or danger of having
entred into anothers dominions: but (having with her
about
about a three score horse-men: straight commanded to
take vs alithe, and not to regard her sonnes threatening
therein: which they attempted to do, first by speache, &
then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor
fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a just
defence, able to resist any vnioft assaulters. And so Mu-
sidorus incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made
both me, and Palladius, so good way, that we had little
to doo to over come weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud,
when Palladius (heated with the fight, and angrie with
his mothers fault) so pursuued our assaylers, that one of
them (who as I heard since had before our comming
bene a speciall minion of Andromanas, and hated vs for
haung disposset him of her hart) taking him to be one
of vs, with a traiterous blow flew his youg Prince: who
falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had
deliuered, judge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might
not be called iustice in such a case: once, so it wroght in
vs, that many of his subiects bodies we left there dead,
to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while disdaine, strengthened by the surie of
a furious loue, made Andromana stay to the left of the
combat: & when she saw vs light down, to see what help
we might do to the helplesse Palladius, she came runing
madly vnto vs, then no lesse threatening, when she had
no more power to hurt. But when she perceived it was
her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so
deadly, as that alredy his life had lost the use of the
reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did
misfortune lay his owne ouglineffe vpon his faulte,
and make her see what she had done, and to what she
was come: especiallie, finding in vs rather detestation
they
then pittie (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to depart, which still she labour'd to stay. But deprived of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else could have stay'd it) strike her selfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her person, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while Mnisidorius labored about Palladius. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could but receaue some few of her dying words; which were curlings of her ill set affection, and wishing vnto me many croffes & mischances in my loue, where-foever I should loue, wherein I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from above granted. But the noife of this fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country peo- ple to some noble-me there-abouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let vs go on our jour- ney, we hauing recommended those royal bodies vnto the to be conveyed to the King of Iberia. With that Phi-locles, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remem- brance of Palladius, but much more of that which ther- upon grew, she would needs drinke a kiffe from those eyes, and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she blushed, & yet kiss'd him againe to hide her blushing. Which had almost brought Pyrocles into another dis- course, but that she with to sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebl, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie: for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know how to disobey.
CHAP. 22.

A new complaint of Pamphilus new change, to a graceless curstien. Zelmane loves, and as a Page serves Pyrocles. The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers. The unbrotherly brave combat of Tydeus and Telenoi. Plexirtus his viperine unkindnes to the kindest Leonatus. His conquest by the two brothers, and his dogtrick to destroy them by themselves. The regret of the dying brothers.

O (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sitting upon the drie sandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accucl her of much sorow; & every way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide under so much ago-nie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, and yet she not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might understand her at times, say, Thou dost kill me with thy vnkind falshood: and, It greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art the murderer: neither dooth mine owne paine so much xege me, as thy errour. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it tormentes me to be slaine by thee. Thou art vntrue, Pamphilus, thou art vntrue, and woe is me there-
The Countesse of Pembroke

therefore. How oft didst thou sweare vnto me, that the Sun should loose his light, and the rocks runne vp and down like little kiddles, before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for Pamphilus is false. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darkned, the rockes stand still, though thou change like the weethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graspe water, and binde the winde. I might well haue knowe thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my loue helped thy wordes to deceive me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise, when thou didst forfake thy vnfortunate Leucippe. But it is no matter, Baccha (thy new mistres) will reuenge my wrongs. But do not Baccha, let Pamphilus lye happie, though I die.

And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that Pamphilus) kept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the fame Leucippe, to whom the vnconstant Paphilus had betrothed himselfe, which had moused the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his mariage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that Baccha, of whom she complayned; one, that in divers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie vnchaste woman of all Asia; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them ( whom she made unhappie with her fauour) to draw
draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doe, of being followed by braue soldiers: wardly proud; and therefore bold, because extremely faultie: and yet having no good thing to redeeme both these, and other vnlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied speeches; yet had Pamphilus (for her) left Lenippe, and withall, left his faith: Lenippe, of whom one looke (in a cleere judgement) would have bene more acceptable, then all her kindneses so prodigallie bestowed. For my selfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to Dido, ioyned to this, stirred me to seeke some reuenge upon him; but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leauing him to be punished by his owne election) we convoyed Lenippe to a house thereby, dedicated to vestall Nunnes, where she resolued to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised should be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-doer.

But the next morning, we (hauing striuen with the Sunnes carlines) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there overtook vs a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to vs, but in-deede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire Zelmane, Plëxirtus daughter, whom vnconsulting affection (unfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leauie her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of Andromonas tumultuous pursuuing vs, had apperrellèd her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden hair, leauing nothing, but the short curles, to couer that noble head, but
The Countesse of Pembroke's

but that she ware vpon it a faire head-pieece, a shielde at her back, and a launce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horse, faire & lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did giue such a grace to what she did, that it did make hansom the vnhandsomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleev, that there was a prais in that vnskilfullnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borrowed the help of her countenance to make themselues vnderstood) she desired me to accept her in my seruice; telling me, she was a noble-mans sonne of Iberia, her name Daiphantus, who hauing scene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particulars of the maner of Andromana's following me, which by her I vnderstood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be) admitted this Daiphantus about me: who well shewed, there is no seruice like his, that seruices because he loues. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought vp with tendereft education, vnapt to seruice (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate,) yet Loue enioyned such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondmaske could euer be by feare more readie at all commandementes, than that yong Princesse was. How often (alas,) did her eyes lay vnto me, that they loued? and yet, I (not looking for such a matter) had not my conceipt open, to vnder-
Ynderstand them. How ofte would he come creeping to me, but weene gladnes to be neere me, & fearless to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I maruailing, to see her receive my commandements with sighes, & yet do them with cheerfulness: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experience: but since returning to my remembrance, they have come more neere vnto my knowledge: & pardon me (only deare Lady) that I vie many words: for her affection to me deserves of me an affectionate speech.

In such sort did she serve me in that kingdom of Bythnia, for two moneths space. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long mainained betwene the King of Bythnia and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (dividing our selues to either side) found means (after some triall we had made of our selues) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betwene the selues, as love towards vs, for having made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdom of Galatia, towards Thrace, to care the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly past, should haue little rest in their thoughts, till they saw vs.

But we were not entred into that Kingdom, wher by the nois of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasant valley, which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities some-where doth giue a pleasant spectacle of running horses; to of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hended in by woody hilles; as if in deed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruellest fights
The Countesse of Pembrookes

fights between two Knights, that euer hath adorned the martial storie. So as I muft coftesse, a while we stood wondering, another while delighted with the rare braveness thereof, till seeing such streams of blood, as threatened a drowning of life, we galloped toward them to part them. But we were prevented by a dozen armed Knights, or rather villains, who vsing this time of their extreme fcebleness, all together set upon them. But common daunge brake of particular discord, so that (though with a dying weaknesses) with a lively courage they resisted, and by our help drahwe away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take alive the principal. But going to disarme those two excellent Knights, we found with no lesse wonder to vs, then astonishment to themselves, that they were the two valiant, and indeede famous Brothers, Tydien and Telenor; whose adventure (as afterward we made that vngratious wretch confess) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince Leonatus had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdom of Galatia, he (forgetting all former injuries) had receiued that naughttie Plexirus into a freight degree of favour, his goodness being as apt to be deceived, as the others crafte was to deceive. Till by plaine proffe finding, that the vngratfull man went about to poyson him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse to be overcome, not by justice in felfe: but calling him to him, vsed wordes to this purpose. Plexirus (said he) this wickednesse is founde by thee. No good decees of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring forth nothing, but as daunge-
dangerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remem¬
bering what fathers sonne thou art.
But since it is the violence of ambition, which per¬
chaunce pulleth thee from thine owne judgement, I will
see, whether the satisfying that, may quiet the ill work¬
ning of thy spirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie
of Trebisond; which, with the territorie about it, aun¬
ciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniustly pos¬
cessed, and as vniustly abused by those, who have nei¬
ther title to holde it, nor vertue to use it. To the con¬
quest of that for thy selfe I will lende thee force, and
give thee my right. Go therfore, and with lese unnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it
be possible, learn vertue.

Plexirus; mingling forsworne excuses with false
meant promises, gladly embraced the offer: and ha¬
tilie sending backe for those two Brothers (who at
that time were with vs succouring the gratious Queen
Erona) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obeyed
the conquest of that goodly dominion. Which
indeede done by them, gaue them such an authoritie,
that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, mo¬
st men honouring them, because they onely deseured
honour; and many, thinking therein to please Plexi¬
rus, considering how much he was bound vnto them:
while they likewise (with a certaine sincere bolde¬
nenes of selfe-warranting friendfhip) accepted all o¬
penly and plainly, thinking nothing should ever by
Plexirus be thought too much in them; since all they
were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could co¬
strue no other end of mes doings, but self seeking)odely
feared,
feared what they could doo; and as soidainely suspe-
ceted, what they would doo, and as soidainely hated
them, as haung both might, and minde to doo. But
dreading their power, standing so strongly in their
owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open
way against them: and as harde it was to take a secreete,
they being so continuallly followed by the best, & eue-
ry way hablest of that region: and therfore vsed this di-
uelish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most
wicked man) to turne their owne friended toward him
to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel
knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the
new King of Pontus, neuer since he succoured Leonas-
tus and vs, to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderstand
that of late there had passed secreete defiance betweene
them, to meete privately at a place appointed. Which
though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet
was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe.
Yet faining to find himselfe weake by some counterfeit
infirmiteit, the day drawing neere, he requested each of
them to go in his stead; making either of the sweare, to
keep the matter secret, euer ech fro other, deliiering the
selfe same particularities to both, but that he told Tyde-
us, the King would meet him in a blew armour, & Tele-
nor, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subtiltie
(as if it had bene so appointed) caused Tydeus to take a
black armour, & Telenor a blew, appointing them waies
how to go, so as he knew they should not meet, til they
came to the place appointed, where each had promi-
sed to keep silence, lest the King should discouer it was
not Plexivitus: and there in await had he laied these mur-
therers, that who ouerliued the other, should by them
be
be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselves by themselves were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose love was no lesse, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their mismeeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo unto them) striving who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: curling their owne hands for doing, and their breasts for not sooner suffering: desiring their unhappily-spent time in hauing serv'd so vngrateful a Tyraunt: and accusing their folly in hauing beleued, he could faithfully love, who did not love faithfulnes: wishing vs to take heed, how we placed our good will upon any other ground, then proofe of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a sauage harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beseeching vs to leaue the cure of him that bespoke, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselves, and vs, no possibilitie, they desired to be joined; and so embracing and craving that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselves, they gave vs a most sorrowfull spectacle of their death, leaving fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone enough knowne the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull harte, we caused those bodies to be conveyed to the nexte towne of Bythinia, where we learning
The Countesse of Pembroke

Learning thus much (as I haue tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to cõclude his history, with his owne well-deserued death.

CHAP. 23.

1 Zelmanes griece for Plexirtus fault. 2 Otaues, and his Gyants warre on Pontus. 3 Plexirtus endaungered, needes helpe of the dead brothers. 4 Zelmane thought-sicke, unmaskes her selfe. 5 Her dying teares and last requestes. 6 Mufidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to saue Plexirtus. 7 The course and course of his deaths-doome, stayed by Pyrocles. 8 The combat of Pontus well ended.

Vt then (I must tell you) I found such wofull countenances in Daphnantas, that I could not but much maruaile (finding them continew beyond the first assault of pittie) how the cause of strangers (for further I did not conceiue) could so deeply pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame & sorrow she tooke of her fathers faultinesse, partly with the feare, that the hate I conceiued against him, would utterly disgrace her in my opinion, whensoever I should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour decaied; and dayly, and hastily grew into the very extreme working of sorrowfulness: which ofte I sought to learne, & helpe. But she, as fearefull as loving, still concealed it; and
and so decaying still more and more, in the excellency of her fairenesse, but that whatsoeuer weaknesse took away, pitie seemed to add: yet still she forced her selfe to waite on me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other schoole, but Loue.

While we returning againe to embarke our felues for Greece, understood that the mighty Otanes (brother to Barzanes slaine by Musidorus, in the battaile of the six Princes) had entred vpó the kingdom of Pontus, partly vpon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, because he would reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the losse of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cause) that wherefoeuer we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in spite whereof he doubted not to preuaile, not onely vpon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially because he had in his company two mighty Giants, sonnes to a couple whom we flue in the same realme: they hauing bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned, willingly entered into his service, hating (more then he) both vs, and that King of Pontus. We therefore withall speeded went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell out, which whensoever I remember without sorrow, I must forget withall, all humanitie.

Poore Daiphantus fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquire the delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to waite on me: till one day going towaad Pontus, we met one, who in great hast went seeking for Tydeus & Telenor, whose death as yet was not knowne into the messenger, who (being their seruaunt and...
The Countesse of Pembroke

knowing how dearly they loued Plexirus) brought them word, how since their departing, Plexirus was in prent daunger of a cruel death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were not reskewed: we enquired no further of the matter (be-
ing glad he should now to his losse finde what an un-
profitable treason it had bene vnto him, to dismember himselfe, of two such friends) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to make him know his masters de-
struction, by the fallhood of Plexirus.

But the griece of that (finding a bodie alreadie
brought to the laft degree of weakenesse) so ouerwhel-
med the little remnant of the spirits left in Daiphantus,
that she fell sodainely into deadly soundings; never
comming to her selfe, but that withall she returned to
make most pittifull lamentations; most straunge vn-
to vs, because we were farre from gheffing the ground
thereof. But finding her sicknesse such, as beganne to
print death in her eyes, we made al hast possible to con-
uey her to the next towne: but before we could lay
her on a bed, both we, & she might find in her selfe, that
the harbinger of ouer-hastie death, had prepared his
lodging in that daintie body, which she undoubtedly
feeling, with a weake chearefulnes, shewed comfort ther-
in; and then desiring vs both to come neere her, & that
no bodie els might be present, with pale, and yet (euen
in palenes) louely lippes. Now or neuer, and neuer in-
deed, but now it is time for me (said she) to speake: and
I thanke death which gaue me leave to discouer that,
the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the shar-
pest spur, that hath hafted my race to this end. Know
then my Lords, and especially you, my Lord and ma-
fter,
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

After Pyrocles, that your page Daiphantus is the unfortunat Zelmane, who for your sake caused my (as unfortunatc) lover, and cousin, Palladius, to leave his fathers court, and consequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to loose their lives. For your sake my selfe haue become, of a Princesse a Page: and for your sake haue put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you judge not more mercifully) modestie. We were amazed at her speach, and the had (as it were) new eyes giuè vs to perceue that which before had bene a present stranger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of Zelmane, who before we had known in the court of Iberia. And sorrow and pittie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the best I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recovery.

But she that had inward ambassadors from the tyrat that should shortly oppresse her. No, my deere master (said she) I neither hope nor desire to liue. I know you would never haue loued me (& with that she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering many wayes my vnworthines. It sufficeth me that the strange course I haue take, shall to your remembrance, witnesse my loue: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would discouer my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether vnmodest. Thinke of me so, deare Master, and that thought shall be my life: and with that, languishingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (said she) even by these dying eies of mine (which are onely forrie to dye, because they shall lose your sight) and by these pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my sex, now in their short curles
The Countesse of Pembrokes
curles, the testimonie of my servitude) and by the ser-
vice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene
full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes,
though ye cannot with loue. And whensoever ye shall
make any other Ladie happie with your placed affecti6,
if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with
scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princeffe of my
life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her
manners, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so
pearced me, that I, though I had divers griefes before,
yet me thought I neuer felt till then, how much sorow
enfeebled all resolution. For I coulde not chuse, but
yeeld to the weaknesses of abundant weeping; in trueth
with such griefe, that I could willingly at that time haue
chaunged liues with her.

6 But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe
largely am I recompenced for my losses: why then (said
shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests unto
you. I besought her to doo, vowing the performance,
though my life were the price thereof. She shewed great
joy: The first (said she) is this, that you will pardon my
father the displeasure you haue iustly conceiued against
him, and for this once succour, him out of the danger
wherin he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you,
whensoever you remember him to be the faultie Plexir-
tus, remember withall that he is Zelmanes father. The se-
cond is, that when you come into Grecce, you shall take
unto your selue this name (though vnucky) of Daiphan-
tus, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shal I be sure,
you shall haue cause to remember me: and let it please
your noble cousin to be called Palladins, that I doo that
right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet liue
vpon
upon the earth in so excellent a person: and so betwene you, I trust sometimes your vnluckie page shall be (perhaps with a sigh) mentioned. Lastly, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your own countrie) you cause my bones to be conueied thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for such a fute; which yet she so earnestly craued, that I was faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing me, & often desiring me not to condemne her of lightneffe, in mine armes she delivered her pure soule to the purest place: leaing me as full of agonie, as kindnes, piti, and sorrow could make an honest harte. For I must confeffe for true, that if my starres had not wholy referued me for you, there els perhaps I might haue loued, & (which had bene most strange) begun my loue after death: whereof let it be the leffe maruaile, because somwhat shee did resemble you: though as farre short of your perfection, as her selfe dying, was of her flourishing; yet somthing there was, which (when I saw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my remembrance, and made my harte as apte to receiue the wounde, as the power of your beauty with unsiftable force to pearce.

But we in wofull (yet priuat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was presentlie to be succoured, or by death to passe the neede of succour. Therefor we determined to diuide our felues; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and Musidorus toward the King of Pontus, who stood in no leffe need.
then immediate succour, and even ready to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him, who after some enquire found vs, giving vs to understand, that he trusting upon vs two, had appointed the combat betweene him & vs, against Otanes, and the two Gyants. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour Plexirtus, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged so far, but (by the strange working of vnjuft fortune) I was to leave the standing by Musidorus, whom better then my selfe I loued, to go save him whom for iust causes I hated. But my promise giuen, & giuen to Zelwane, & to Zelwane dying, prevailed more with me, then my friendship to Musidorus: though certainly I may affirm, nothing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because Musidorus himselfe, would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heavy mindes (more careful each of others successe, the of our owne) we parted; I toarde the place, where I understood Plexirtus was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely governing a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other soueraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to Plexirtus, grew for a kineman of his, who he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he reigned in Galatia, he found him apt to practice for the restoring of his vertuous brother Leonatus. This old Knight, still thirsting for revenge, fled (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. Plexirtus in his youth had married Zelwanes mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of Armenia; where (as he was comming to winne fa-
he obtained great good liking of Artaxia, which he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he fallly got his fathers kingdom, and then neglected his former loue: till thrown out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in Trebifonde, understanding that Artaxia by her brothers death was become Queen of Armenia, he was hotter then euer, in that pursuit, which being understood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as might be written from Artaxia, entreatyng his present (but very priuie) reppaire thether, giuing him faithfull promise of present marriage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfully, and publiquely protestted, that she would neuer marrie any, but some such Prince who would giue sure proue, that by his meanes we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to judge hopes) blithe hastely at the baite, and in priuate maner poasted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruell enough, if any thing may be both cruell and iust. For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliuer him to be devoured by a monstrous beast, of most ugly shape, armed like a Rhinoceros, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre: whom he hauing kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastly monsiter with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any so well loued him, as to venture their lives against this beast, for him, if they overcame, he should be saued: not caring how many they
they were (such confidence he had in the monster's strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of Tydeus and Telenor, whom he no lese hated, because they had bene principal instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if Zelmane had known what daunger I should have passed, she would rather have let her fa ther perish, then me to have bidden that aduenture. But my word was past, and truely, the hardnes of the enterprise, was not so much a bite, as a spurre vnto me; knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that Plerurtus should be deliuered if I were victorious, I undertooke the combatt: and (to make shorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakenes blessed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I flewe that monster, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order given to haue the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of Asia. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loved me; onely bewayling, my vertue had bene imployed to saue a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith given) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kingdom of Pontus, whether I would needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance the day had bene delayed) to come to the combatt. But that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous Leonatus understanding two so good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce be
be one him selfe: where he did valiantly: and so did the King of Pontus. But the truth is, that both they being sore hurt, the incomparable Mysidorus finisshed the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of Otanes prisoner. To whom as he gave his life, so he got a noble friend: for so he gave his words to be, and he is well known to thinke him selfe greater in being subject to that, then in the greatnes of his principality.

But thither (understanding of our being there) dhooded great multitudes of many great persons, and euen of Princes, especially those, whom we had made beholding unto us: as, the Kings of Phrygia, Bythinia, with those two hurt, of Pontus and Galatia, and Otanes the prisoner, by Mysidorus set free; and thither came Plexirtus of Trebisonde, and Antiphius, then King of Lycia; with as many mo great Princes, drawnen ether by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them selves oblied unto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in those partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not seene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo vs the highest honors, which such persons (who might command both purses and inventions) could perfourme. All from all sides bringing vnto vs right royall presents (which we to auoide both vnkinds, and importunitie, liberally received,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from vs, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with many other exceedinge honors, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe vnto you.

CHAP.
The Countesse of Pembroke

CHAP. 24.

The causes and provisions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia. Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by one, attempted by another of his ministers. Sedition and slaughter in the shippe about it. Their shipwrack by fire. Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea. The amarous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe storie, both broken of by Mifo.

But wee quickly aweary thereof, hasted to Greece-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I understoode that Anaxius with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to Peloponnesus where from Court to Court he made enueryie of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deeds, as might hap to authorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renowned over the worlde, that no Prince could pretend height, nor begger lowness to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it Argalus and Amphitalus (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent judges, that speake
speake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed moving us to come by this land, we embarked our selves in the next porte, whether all those Princes (saying Antiphus, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from Ero- nna) conued us. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by Plexirtus, who made all things so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repetition in his eyes, friendship in his gesture, & virtue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete Zelman to pardon him, now not onely forgave, but began to favour perswading our selves with a youthfull credulity, that perchance things were not so cuil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous Leonatus, who with the king of Potus, would haue come with us, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdoms) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleets to guard us: but we, that desiered to passe secretly into Greece, made them leave that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing vnto vs. But so omitting our selves to the uncertaine discretion of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to Greece, to take the names of Daiphantus and Palladius, as well for our owne promise to Zelmane, as because we desiered to come vknowne into Greece) left the Asian shore full of Princely persons, who even vpon their knees, recommended our safeties to the devotion of
their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfaithfulness) as Plexirtus.

So hauing failed almoft two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had seene of great truft with Plexirtus, and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto vs, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentaunce, began to tell vs, that he had taken such a loue vnto vs (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a seruant, and a seruant of such truft about Plexirtus, as that he had committed vnto him euene those secretees of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reveale at this time a moft pernicious counfell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that Plexirtus (in hope thereby to haue Artaxia, endowed with the great Kingdome of Armenia, to his wife) had giuen him order, when we were neere Grecce, to finde some opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now firs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poysoned with such a mischiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippE, Plexirtus hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of Artaxia. And my selfe, (before the consideration of
of your excellencies had drawne loue and pittie into minde ) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischiefe. Therefore, I wishe you to stand upon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see ( if it come to the pushe ) by me performed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deferred, and from that time would no more disarme our felues, nor the one sleepe without his friends eyes waked for him: so that it delayed the going forwarde of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then providence, which made vs so behaue our selues.

But when we came within halfe a daies sayling of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done. Then ( and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Councellour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) disswading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if Plexirtus bad him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, alieue or dead; encouraging the with the spoile of vs, which he said, ( & indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich iewels. But the Councellour (according to his promise) commanded them they should not comit such a villany, protesting that he would stand betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) the we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gawe him a sore blow vpon the head, who honestly did the best he could to reuenge him selfe.

Ee 2

But
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischiefe. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was environned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of vs, made draw their swors of our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the uncertainty in such a tumult how to know frieis from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maifters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we neuer perfourmed leffe in any place, doing no oother hurte, then the defence of our felues, and succouring them who came for it, draue vs to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against vs, we thought it leffe euill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hieft to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdrred persons: The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driuen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who receiued a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & wish peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceiue hope of living, but being lefte alive: and therefore every one was willing to make him selfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which
which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselves.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the children of Cadmus) we continued still to slay one another, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to separate, or accidentally while all things were cast vp and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of vs, (who onely thought to preferue, or reuenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principal parts of the ship. Then necessity made vs see, that a common enemy sets at one a civill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) straight went to resist that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and devour from the sterne, to the waist of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prowe of the ship, by the works of nature seeking to preferue life, as long as we could: while truly it was a straunge and ougly fight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and cloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were constrained to bide it no longer,
but disarming and stripping our felues, and laying our felues upon such things, as we thought might help our swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength to beare vs) my cousin and I threw our felues into the Sea. But I had swomme a very little way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the travaile, and therefore seeing the maste (whose tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ship, I swamme vnto it; and getting on it, I found mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a piece of canuas) had honge to the maste. I was glad, because I loved it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship, and of all this mischiefe; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne him selfe vp with that, till he had set him selfe vpon the maste. But when I perceiued him, Villaine (sald I) dooest thou thinke to overliue so many honest men, whom thy falsehood hath brought to destruction? with that bestriding the maste, I latt by little and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are wont (if euer you saw that sport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honestie, set him selfe to resist. But I had in short space gotten within him, and (giving him a sound blowe) sent him to feede fishes. But there my selfe remainde, vntill by pyrates I was taken vp, and among them againe taken prisoner, and brought into Laconia.

7 But what (sald Philoclea) became of your cousin Mystrorus? Lott said Pyrocles. Ah my Pyrocles, said Philocles, I am glad I haue take you. I perceive you louers do not alwaies say truely: as though I know not your cousin.
Leonidas, the sheepeheard. Life of my desires (saide Pyrocles) what is mine, euen to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceive, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare Pyrocles, I log to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-warde is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet Philoclea (said Pyrocles) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leysure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thine you) to reade a tale upon? Is my loue quiet inough to be an historian? Deare Princeffe, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himselfe. But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her desiere (once for euer) might serue, that no spotte might disgrace that loue which shortly she hoped shold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, till she threatened anger. And then the poore louer durst not, because he durst not. Nay I pray thee, deare Pyrocles (said she) let me haue my storie. Sweet Princeffe (said he) giue my thoughts a litlle respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the least harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene Erona was betrayed into such daguer, and why Plangus fought me. For in deed, I should pitie greatly any mischance fallen to that Princeffe. I will, said Philoclea smiling, so you giue me your worde, your handes shall be quiet auditours. They shal, said he, because subiect. Then began she to speake, but with so prettie and delightfull a maiestie, when she set her countenaunce to tell the matter, that Pyrocles could not chuse but rebell so far, as to kisse her.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

She would have puld her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fedde upon her wordes: but shee gate away. Howe will you haue your discourse (faid she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (faid he) will I requenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by Miso: who taking her time, while Basilus backe was turned, came vnto them: and told Philoclea, she deserued she knewe what, for leaving her mother, being euill at ease, to keepe companie with straungers. But Philoclea telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandment, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulers, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.

The Countesse of Pembrokes


O went vp Misoty to Cynecia, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor tredde safely going forward. In this case she thought Zel...
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

mane, being upon a faire hul, delightfull to the eye, and
catie in apperance, called her thither: whither with
much anguish being come, Zelmane was vanished,
and she found nothing but a dead bodie like vnto her
husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell
to infect her, as she was redie likewise within a while to
die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes,
and said, Cynecia, leave all, for here is thy onely rest.

With that she awaked, crying very loud, Zelmane. Zel-
mane. But remembring her selfe, and seeing Basilius by,
(her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being su-
spected) she turn'd her call, and called for Philoclea. Misfo
forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at Basilius, as
though she would speake though she died for it) tolde
Cynecia, that her daughter had bene a whole house togeth-
er in secrete talke with Zelmane: And (sayas she) for
my part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are
brought vp in such awe) though I tolde her of your
pleasure sufficiently. Cynecia, as if she had heard her
last doome pronounced agaynst her, with a side-looke
and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (saiyd she)
what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? Basilius (that aymed nothing at the marke of her su-
spition) smilingly tooke her in his armes, sweete wife
(saiyd he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but
they must be youthes of other mettal, then Zel-
mane, that can endaunger her. O but, cryed Cynec-
esia, and therewith she stayed: for then indeede she did
suffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of loue, and
rage of jealoufie. Manie times was she about to sa-
tifice the spite of her minde, and tell Basilius, how
she knewe Zelmane to be fare otherwise then the out-
ward
warde appearance. But those many times were all put backe, by the manifolde objections of her vehement loue. Faine she would haue barde her daughters happe, but loth she was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set vppon a wager of quicke rying, as weake as she was, she gat vp, though Baslius, (with a kindnesse flowing onely from the fountaine of vankindnesse, being in deede desirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he sawe sickenesse in her face, and therefore was loath she should adventure the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie Gynecia, possessed with those devils of Loue and Iealousie, did rid herself from her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her, going toward the; O Iealousie (said she) the phrensie of wife folkes, the well-wishing spite, and vnkinde carefulnesse, the selse-punishment for others faults, and selse-miserie in others happinesse, the cousin of enuie, daughter of loue, & mother of hate, how couldst thou so quietely get thee a seate in the vnquiet hart of Gynecia, Gynecia (said the singing) thought wise, and once vertuous: Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling access of thy feuer, in such fort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter seemes the decay of my selse, the blessings of a mother turne to, the curses of a copetitor, and the faire face of Philoclea, appears more horrible in my sight, then the image of death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought tooke a right measure of her present mind.

With
With two strange fires of equal heat possess,
The one of Love, the other jealous.
Both still do work, in neither finde I rest:
For both, alas, their strengths together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other lie

Love wakes the jealous eye, least thence it moves.
The jealous eye, the more it looks, it loves.

These fires increase: in those I daily burke:
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:
My lovely joyes do dolefull ashes turne:
Their flames mount up, my powers prostrate lie:
They live in force, I quite consumed die.

One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:
The suell small: how be the fires so great?

But her vnleasure thoughtes ran not over the ten first wordes; but going with a pace, not so much too fast for her bodie, as slowe for her minde, she found them together, who after Mifos departure, had left their tale, and determined what to say to Baslius. But full abashed was poore Philoclia, (whose conscience nowe began to knowe cause of blushing) for first salutation, receyuing an eye from her mother, full of the same disdainefull scorne, which Pallas shewed to poore Arachne, that durst contende with her for the prize of well weaung: yet did the force of love so much rule her, that though for Zelmanes sake she did detest her, yet for Zelmanes sake she sped no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompany her solitarie father.

Then
Then began she to display to Zelmane the storehouse of her deadly desires, when sodainly the confused rumor of a mutinous multitude gave just occasion to Zelmane to breake of any such conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an vnruely sort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themselues knewe not whether. But affoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beastes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking ability to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; some, Kill; some, Saue: but euen they that cried Saue, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Euerie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief Captain, that was most ragefull.

Zelmane (whose vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her sword, which vpon those il-armèd churls giuing as many wounds as blowes, & as many deaths almost as wounds (lightning courage, and thundering smart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got the selues into the lodge: out of the which, Basilius (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authority among his subiects, or at least, to aduenture his life with his deare mistresse, to whò he brought a shield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the issue of this dangerous aduenture. But Zel-
made them perceive the odds between an Eagle and a Knight, with such a nimble stay'dnes, and such an assured nimbleness, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her sword in his guts.

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased by the comming of *Dorus*, who having been making of hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and having freight represented before the eies of his carefull loue, the peril wherein the soule of his soule might be, he went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with *Mopsa* and *Dametas*, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therfore leaving them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and vnownen) he ranne as the noise guyded him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that overthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being ashamed of losing it. Then lifting vp his braue head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how euer their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, left in long fight they should be conquered with coquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in such sort, that still their terror went forward: like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull imbracement) though his pace be backwarde,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

his gesture is forward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the advancing; so guided they themselves homeward, never stepping steppe backward, but that they proved themselves masters of the ground where they stept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a taylcr by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to Zelmane. But as he came within her distace, turning his swerd very nicely about his crown, Basilius, with a side blow, strake of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters daughter, and thersore not a little grieued for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because he had hard, that if it were fresh putto, it would cleave on againe. But as his hand was on the grounde to bring his nose to his head, Zelmane with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted vp a great leauer, calling Zelmane all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But the (letting slippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters remembrance had servued. O (said a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitchforke at Dorus; but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it ouer-runne his feet, so that he fell withall, just betwene the legs of Dorus: who letting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one care to the other, which toke it very vn-
vnkindlie, to feele such newes before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But Dorus (leaving the miller to vomit his foule out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake of another quite by the wafte, who the night before had dreamed he was grown a couple, and (interpreting it he should be married) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow astonished quite a poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfette the skirmishing betweene the Centaures and Lapithes, and had bene very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more liuely to expresse them, and this morning (being caried by the streame of this companie) the foolish fellow was even delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last, (hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still, while Dorus (with a turne of his sword) strake of both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with neuer a hand to performe his skil.

CHAP. 26.

Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie. * A bone of division cast by her, and caught by them. * Her pacificatoric oration. * The acceptation and issue of it.

In this manner they recovered the lodge, and gave the rebels a face of wood of the out-side. But they then (though no more furious, yet more courageous when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themselves entrance.
The Comtesse of Pembroke's

The Countesse of Pembroke's

trance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, especially Philoclea, who euer caught hold of Zelmane, fo(by the follie of loue) hindering the help which she desired. But Zelmane seeing no way of defence, nor time to de iberate (the number of those villaines still encreasing, and their madness still encreasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnused boldenesse, and with danger to auoide danger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (Dorus and Basilius standing redie for her defence) she issued againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all in general were hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them sodainly ouer-neere her, so that she had time to gette vp to the judgement-scate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that countrie) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand vnto them, & with-all, speaking aloud, that she had something to say vnto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries, and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the countrie fort, and was caught in a little affec-tion towards Zelmane) hoping by this kindenesse to haue some good of her, desired them, if they were ho-nest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afaide to heare a faire wench? I sweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we should shewe our selues to vncriuill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of
of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say lit- 
tle. His sententious speech so preuailed, that the most 
parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie 
of gracefulnes, & such a quiet magnanimitie repre- 
ted in her face in this uttermost peril, as the more the 
barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks 
upon her, in this sorte began vnto them.

It is no small comfort vnto me (said she) having to 
spake something vnto you for your owne behoofs, to 
find that I haue to deale with such a people, who shew 
indeed in theeselues the right nature of valure, which as 
it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is 
nourished with resistance; so when the subiect of their 
wrath, doth of it self vnlooked for offer it self into their 
hands, it makes thē at left take a pause before they de- 
termine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the 
principall matter) haue I to say vnto you; that your 
Prince Basilius himselfe in person is within this Lodge, 
& was one of the three, whō a few of you went about 
to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they 
knew it well enough, but because she would haue them 
imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not 
know it) by him am I sent vnto you, as frō a Prince to 
his well approuéd subiects, nay as from a father to be- 
loued children, to know what it is that hath bred unjust 
quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way 
wrōged you? what it is with which you are displeased, 
or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and in- 
deed (for he knowes your faithfulnes) he commands 
you presently to set downe, & to choose among your 
seelues some one, who may relate your griefes or de- 
mandes vnto him.
This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) affwaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demands that he might have Zelmawe for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made such a confused huming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of comons: some would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. All cried out to haue new coucillers: but when they should think of any new, they liked the as well as any other, that they could remeber, especially they would haue the treasurie so looked vnto, as that he should neuer neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarities. For the Artifans, they would haue corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so sti: the ploumen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The countrymen demaunded that every man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like of. The peasats would haue the Gentleme destroied, the Citizens (especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that liued most on Gentlemen) would but haue them reformed. And of eche side were like diuisions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one dispraising such a one, who another praised, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would haue exalted. No leffe ado was there about chooing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses, as Marchants Prentises, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdaining
disdaining them; all they scorning the countrimens ignorance, & the countrymen suspecting as much their cunning: So that Zelmane (finding that their united rage was now grewne, not only to a dividing, but to a crossing one of another, & that the mislike grewne among theselues did wel allay the heat against her) made tokes againe vnto the (as though she tooke great care of their wel doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake vnto the. They now grewne jealous one of another (the stay hauing ingedred diuissio, & diuissio hauing manifested their weaknesses) were willing inough to heare, the most part striving to show themselves willinger then their fellowes: which Zelmane (by the acquaintance she had had with such kinde of humors) soone perceiuing, with an angerles brauery, & an unbaathed mildnes, in this manner spake vnto them.

An vnuséd thing it is, & I think not heretofore scene, & Arcadians, that a woma shold give publike couſel to men, a strager to the coutry people, & that lastly in such a presence by a priuate person, the regall throne should be possedled. But the straunenes of your action makes that vſed for vertue, which your violent necelitie imposeth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to inch men, who haue forgotte a manlike gouernment: a straunger may with reason instruct such subiects, that neglect due points of subjection: and is it maruaile this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares gouernment) dare not shew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare thereforē & Arcadians, & be afhamed: againſt who hath this rage bene stirred? whether haue bene bent these magiſall weapons of yours? In this quiet harmless lodge are harbourd no
Argians your ancient enemies, nor Laconians your now feared neighbours. Here be neither hard landlords, nor biting vfurers. Here lodge none, but such as either you have great cause to love, or no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princess, and their children, but my self. Is it then, ò Arcadians, against whom your anger is armed? Am I the mark of your vehement quarrell: if it be so, that innocencie shall not be a stop for furrie; if it be so, that the law of hospitalitie (so long & ho- lily observed among you) may not defend a straunger fled to your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiant mens courages can be enflamed to the mischief of one silly woman; I refuse not to make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignation, so it go no further, I am content to pay the great favours I have received among you, with my life, not ill deserving. I present it here unto you, ò Arcadians, if that may satisfy you: rather the you (called over the world the wise and quiet Arcadians) should be so vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the rest of your countrie will abhor, the you should shew your selues so vngrateful, as to forget the fruite of so many yeares peaceable gouernment; or so unnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your natural Prince, any furie over-maistred. For such a hellish madness (I know) did never enter into your harts, as to attempt any thing against his person; which no successor, though never so hatefull, will ever leaue (for his owne sake) unrevenged. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to such a basenes, as in stead of a Prince, deliered vnto you by so many roiall ancestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subieft, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth ra- uenous
uenous couetousnes, and the newnes of his estate, sus-
pectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies
more wish unto you, then to see your owne estate with
your owne handes vndermined? O what would your
fore-fathers say, if they liued at this time, & saw their of-
spring defacing such an excellent principalitie, which
they with so much labour & bloud so wisely haue e斯塔-
blisht? Do you thinke them fooles, that saw you should
not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wives
& children, without gouernment; and that there could
be no gouernment without a Magistrate, and no Magi-
strate without obedience, and no obedience where euc-
yone vpon his owne priuate passion, may interprete
the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your pre-
sent exaple to you. What sweetnes (in good faith) find
you in your present condition? what choise of choife
finde you, if you had lost Basilius? vnder whose ensigne
would you go, if your enimies should inuade you? If
you cannot agree vpon one to speake for you, how wil
you agree vpo one to fight for you? But with this feare
of I cannot tel what, one is troubled, and with that pa-
fed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the
Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull haruest, but that it was
more hore then pleasant? Haue any of you childre, that
be not sometimes cumbertsome? Haue any of you fa-
thers, that be not sometime weerish? What, shall we
curse the Sonne, hate our children, or disobey our fa-
thers? But what need I vse these wordes, since I see in
your countenances (now vertuously setteld) nothing
els but love and dutie to him, by whom for your only
fakes the gouernmet is embraced. For al what is done,
he doth not only pardon you, but thank ye, judging
the action by the minds, & not the minds by the actio.

Your
Your grieues, and desires, whatsoever you lift, he will consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same loue lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must confess over-vehement affection: the only continuance might prove a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very wel, you begin with zeale, & wil end with reverence.

The action Zelmaie used, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gesttures byng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they serued as a shadow, to make the picture more lively and sensible, with the sweete cleerness of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felt, whose beautie did pærce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gaue such a way vnto her speach through the rugged wilderness of their imaginations, who (besides they were striken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a cōfused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt seare to pursue, & lothnesse to leaue: most of them could haue bene cōtent, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tye then to loose knots. But Zelmaie thinking it no euil way in such mutinies, to giue the mutinous some occasio of such seruice, as they might thinke (in their own judgement)
ment would counter waive their trespass, withal, to take
the more assured possession of their minds, which she
feared might begin to waver. Loiall Arcadians (said she)
now do I offer unto you the manifesting of your du-
ties: all those that have taken armes for the Princes safe-
tie, let the turne their backs to the gate, with their wea-
pons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person.
O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom in-
constancie onely doth guide to well doing: who can set
confidence there, where company takes away shame,
and each may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie
felow among them, named Clinias, to himselfe, when he
saw the wordes no sooner out of Zelmanes mouth, but
that there were some shouts of joy, with, God saue Bas-
lius, and divers of them with much iollity growne to be
his guard, that but little before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

A verball craftie coward portrayed in Clinias. * His first
raising and with the first, relenting in this mutinie, pun-
ished by the farmer. * The upprore reinforced, & weak-
ened by themselves. * Clinias his Sinon-like narration
of this draken rebellions original. * The kings order ini.

His Clinias in his youth had bene a
scholler so farre, as to learne rather
wordes then maners, and of words
rather plentie then order; and oft
had vied to be an actor in Trage-
dies, where he had learned, besides
a slidingnesse of language, acquain-
tance
The Countesse of Pembroke

tance with many passions, and to frame his face to bear the figure of them: long vst to the eyes and cares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in privat practices.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to Cecropia, Amphialus, his mother, so that he was priuy to all the mischievous devises, wherewith she went about to ruine Basilius, and his children, for the aduauncing of her sone: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his love to be doing, taught him in any euill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene vsted (euer since the strange retirings of Basilius) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the vprore (though quite without the consent of Amphialus, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so haue aduetured the life of Philoclea.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebbbe, he thought it policie to take the first of the tide, so that no ma cried lowder then he, vpon Basilius. And som of the luftiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his comandement to lift him vp, & then as if he had had a prologue to utter, he began with a nice grauitie to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the stars from the skies, he fell to cry-ing out so lowde, that not onely Zelmane, but Basilius might heare him. O vnhappy men, more madde then the Giants that would haue plucked Jupiter out of heauen, how long shal this rage continue: why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and submit your selues
clues to our good Prince, our good Basilius, the Pelops of wisdom, & Minos of all good government: when will you begin to believe me, and other honest and faithfull subjects, that have done all we could to stop your furie?

The farmer that loued Zelmane could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of conditions, hoping to have gotten great souerainties, & among the rest Zelmane: so now perceiving, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would never stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yeelding, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such advancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefest make-bates, strike him a great wound vpon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) got to the throne, where Zelmane tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

But as soone as that blow was giuen (as if Aeolus had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being diuided in minds & not diuided in companies, they that would yeeld to Basilius were intermingled with the that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood vp, it; those men to get favor of their Prince, converted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, & by a true judgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed the those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who
by being so, had taught them, that they did lead disobedience to the same leaders. And many times it fell out that they killed them that were of their own faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe Zelmane, and Basilius with Dorus issued, and sometime seeking to draw together those of their party, sometime laying indifferently among them, made such havoc (among the rest Zelmane striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods upon the frontiers, where feeding coldly, and drinking only water, they were disciplined for their drunken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score only escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe soldiery, were returned from the chase, Basilius calling them together, partly for policy sake, but principally because Zelmane before had spoken it (which was to him more the a divine ordinance) he pronounced their general pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and thereafter be more circumspect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with sharpe marks of their folly. But imagining Clinias to be one of the chiefest that had bred this good alteration, he gave him particular thanks, and with all willed him to make him know, how this frenzy had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the truth of all, saving what did touch himself, or Cecropis, first, dipping his hand in the blood of his wound, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me, then all the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this tongue (perchance vnfortunate, but never false) shall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me most beloued. Then
stretching out his hand, and making vehement countenances the vsbears to his speches, in such manner of teares recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of Emisbus, to do honour to the day, were a four or five thousand people (of all conditions, as I thinke) gathered together, spending all the day in dancings and other exercises: and when night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obserue a wasflaling watch all that night for your sake. Bacchus (the learned lay) was begot with thunder. I think, that made him euer since to full of stur & debate. Bacchus indeed it was which souded the first trupe to this rude alarum. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to thinke with vice to do honor, & with actuitie in beastlines to shew abundance of loue, made most of the seeking to shew the depth of their affectio in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (having spent all the night, & some peace of the morning in such revelling) & imboldned by your absented manner of living, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of that grew not to be a subiect of their winie conference. I speake it by proofe: for I take witnes of the gods (who neuer leaue periuries unpunished) that I ofte cried out against their impudency, & (whé that would not falue) ftopp mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their blasphemies, till with buffets they forced me to have mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were unlegd with pruate grudges, neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretend some caufe of mislike. Rayling was counted the fruitie of freedome, and saying nothing had his uttermoste prayse in ignorance. At the length, your sacred person (alas why did I
Th: The Countess of Pembroke

live to hear it: alas how do I breath to utter it? But your commandment doth not onely enioine obedience, but give me force; your sacred person (I say) fell to be their table-talke: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatness, having put on the shew of greatness in their little mindes: till at length the very unbrideled use of words having increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to codemnc their own want of knowledge) they descended (O neuer to be forgotten presumption) to a direct mislike of your living from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched constructions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who would call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes change could not impaire) began to say, that your government was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had leuied among the) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into counsel, that the comons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opinions: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betrayed in this place, where you liued: nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see; and if you were here, to know (if Arcadia were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the government
ment an adherent to the country, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabit the other? Nay rather (said they) let us beginne that, which all Arcadia will follow. Let us deliver our Prince from danger of practises, and our felues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Lastly, to haue saide & heard so much, was as dangerous, as to haue attempted: & to attempted they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These words being spoke (like a furious storme) presently caried away their well inclined braines. What I, and some other of the honester sort could do, was no more, then if with a puffe of breath, one should go about to make a saile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madness among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sounde of so many voices, was the chiefe token of their vnmeet agreement. Thus was their banquet turned to a bat-taile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the hap-pie prayers for your life, to monstrous threatning of your estate, the solemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue been the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seeke to hurt, the lesse it considers how to be able to hurt: they never wedy how to arme these felues, but tooke vp every thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, convertting husbandrie to lounderie; some caught hold
of spittes (things serviceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to vse it (as he could) to your mischiefe. Thus armed, thus governed, forcing the unwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong towards this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolued in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo when he came hether. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthening one cuill by an other, and so multiplying in it selfe, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preferue you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preferue you for the preferuation of Arcadia) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not used for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as mine) and some (I must confess) honest minds, (who alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred part of our duty?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we have cause to rejoice that we are Arcadians.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: so as Basilius, that was not the sharpest pearcer into masked minds, toke a good liking to him; & so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therfore pitying his wond, willed
willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the shepheardes being come (for that day was appointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to Philanax, and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities there abours, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes & vil-
lages neere vnto him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more security, ypo the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

CHAP. 28.

The praiyes of Zelmanes act. 1 Dametas his caroll for sa-
vning himself, and his charge. 3 Basilius his conference with Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.) 4 His wrong-construction of it. 5 His hymne to Apollo. 6 His cour-
ting turnde ouer to tale-telling.

His, Clinias (hauing his care one way when his eye was an other) had percei-
ued, & therefore hafted away, with mind to tell Cecropia that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discouer, & ruine her: and so went his way, leaung that little companie with embraces, and praising of Zelmanes excellent pro-
ceeding, to shew, that no decking sets foorth any thing so much, as affectiou. For as, while the floode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, euerie angry
The Countesse of Pembroke's

angrie countenance any of them made; seemed a knife
layde vpon their owne throates; so vnspeakable was
now their ioy, that they saw (besides her safetie & their
owne) the same wroght, and safely wroght by her
means, in whom they had placed all their delightes.
What examples Greece could euer alledge of witte and
fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compa-
red to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those vnfained ce-
remonyes, a Gitterne, ill-played on, accompanied with
a hoarse voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses,
and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke
the way of the ill-noyfed song. The song was this.

A Hatefull cure with hate to hcale:
   A bloody helpe with blood to saue:
A foolish thing with fooles to deale:
   Let him be bold that bobs will haue.
   But who by means of wiſdome hie
Hath fau’d his charge? it is eu’en I.

Let other deck their pride with skarres,
   And of their wounds make braue lame showes:
First let them die, then passe the starres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.
   But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
Who hath fau’d all? it is eu’en I.

They had soone found it was Dametas, who came
with no leſſe lifted vp countenance, then if he had pas-
fed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point
he thought he had perfourmed, in vſing the naturall
strength
strength of a cause. But never was it his doing to come so soon thence, till the coast were more assuredly clear: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storm there ever fell a few drops before it be fully finished. But Pamela (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Louers hart) vied this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed as well for that cause, as being very quiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepherd had gone through the danger. But Basilius, with the sight of Pamela (of whom almost his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was suddenly striken into a devout kind of admiration, remembering the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his own to his own best, and with the willing blindness of affection (because his mind was wholly vpon Zelmane) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deeply thinking of the matter, one of the shepheardes tolde him, that Philanax was already come with a hundred horse in his company. For having by chance rode not farre of the little desert, he had heard of this vprore, and so was come vpon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. Basilius was glad of it; but (not willing to have him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giving order vnto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters, and Philanax with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreate him to leave of his solitarie course (which already had been so daungerous vnto him) Well (said Basilius) it may be...
ere long I will conduct you to your desire. In the mean time, take you the best order you can to keep me safe in my solitariness. But, (said he) do you remember, how earnestly you wrote vnto me, that I should not be moved by that Oracles authority, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered Philanax) though it pleased you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceit) one degree of reputation, it suffisfed me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you from your owne course. Well (said Basilius) I will now tell you the wordes, which before I thought not good to doo; because when all the euents fall out (as some already have done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sorte.

Thy elder care shall from thy careful face
By princely meanes be stolne, and yet not lost.
Thy yonger shall with Natures bliss embrace
An uncouth love, which Nature hateth most.
Both they themselves vnto such two shall wed,
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;
Why thee (a living man) they had made dead.
In thy owne state a forraigne state shall sit.
And ere that all these blowes thy head doo hit,
Thou, with thy wife, adultery shall commit.

For you forsoth (said he) when I told you, that some supernaturall cause sent me strange visi̇s, which being confirmed with presagesious chaïnces, I had gone to Delphos,
there received this answer: you replied to me, that the onely supernaturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceptes, apt to make presages of things, which in theselues were meer-ly chaungcable: & with all as I say, you reméber what you wrot vnto me, touching authuritie of the Oracle: but now I haue some notable triall of the truth therof, which herafter I wil more largly comunicate vnfo you. Only now, know that the thing I moft feared is already performed, I mean that a forraigne state should possesse my throne. For that hath ben done by Zelmane, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my prefervatió. But whé he had once named Zelmane, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praifes run on in such sort, that (Philanax found) was more exquisite the onely admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at made him shrinke away as foone as he could, to go about the other matters of impor-iance, which Baslius had enioyned vnfo him.

Baslius returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe construing the oracle, that in that he said, his elder care should by Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it was now perfourmed, since Zel-mané had as it were robd from him the care of his first begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of it remained. That his younger should with Natures blisse embrace the louve of Zelmane, be-cause he had so commaunded her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde it be with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the icalousie hee thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his
The Countesse of Pembroke

feate he deemed by her already perfoumed: but that which moft conforted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should commit with Zelmae, whom afterwards he should haue to his wife. The point of his daughters marriage, because it threatened his death withall, he determined to prevent, with keeping them unmarried while he liued. But hauing as he thought, gotten thus much understanding of the Oracie, he determined for three daies after to perfoume certaine rites to Apollo: and euen then began with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearely vsed.

Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
Which ever shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
Whose lights do ever line, but in our darkenesse fade;
Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythos skin:

(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakes kinne)
Latonas sone, whose birth in paine and travaile long
Doth teach, to learne the good, what travailes do belong:

"In travaile of our life, (a short but tedious space)
While brickle bourreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Give vs foresight full minde: giv vs minds to obaye
What foresight tells, our thoughts upon thy knowledge staye.
Let so our fruittes grow vp, that nature be maintaine:
But so our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not stable.
Let this affured holde our judgements overtake,
"That nothing winnes the heaven, but what doth earth forsake.

Affone as he had ended his deuotion (all the priuiledged shepheards being now come) knowing well enough
inough he might lay all his care upon Philanax, he was willing to sweeten the taff of this passed tumult, with some rural pastimes. For which while the shepheards prepared themselues in their best maner, Basilius tooke his daughter Philocles aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found Zelmane. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake Zelmane was content to descend from her former resolutio, as to heare him, whifoeuer he would speake; & further then that (she said) as Zelmane had not graunted, so she nether did, nor euer would desire. Basilius kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine have vsed the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sicknes before his onely physition. But Zelmane (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words understand, that the time in respect of the copanie was vnfit for such a parley, & therefore to keep his braines the busier, lettting him understand what she had learned of his daughters, touching Eronas distresse (whom in her travaile she had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for so far as Plagus had told him, because she said (& she said truly) she was full of care for that Ladie, whose deart (only except an ouer-base choise) was nothing agreeable to misfortune. Basilius glad that she would command him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the vnfitnesse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

Gg 3 CHAP.
Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie.
His unkinde hating the loving Erona, and fond loving of hating Artaxia. Artaxias trap to take them both. The mans weakenesse; and the womans strengthe in bearing captvitie. Plangus love to her, employed by her to save Antiphilus, who againe betraies himselfe and them. His execution by women. Plangus hardly attempts to save Erona. The conditions of her death. Her sorrow for Antiphilus, and Plangus travaile for her: with his crosses, and course therein.

Adam (said he) it is very true, that since yeares enhabled me to judge what is, or is not to be pitied, I never saw anything that more moued me to iustifie a vehement compassion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceiue you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had so pulled downe, as to lie vnder sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subiect, which I perceiue you haue seene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you, It may please you to understand, since it pleaseth you to demaund, that Antiphilus being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes Mus-derus & Pyrocles (led thece by the challenge of Anaxius, who is now in these provinces of Greece, making a dishonorable
honorable enquirie after that excellent prince Pyrocles already perished) Antiphilus (I say) being crowned, and delivered from the presence of those two, whose virtues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had not strength of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discovering what manner of man he was. But fright like one carried up to so hie a place, that he loseth the discerning of the ground over which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyond the euell of his owne discourse, that remembering only that himselfe was in the high seat of a King, he could not perceive that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorn his follies, and repine at injuries. But imagining no so true propeties of souereignty, as to do what he listted, and to lift whatsoever pleased his fancy, he quickly made his kingdom a Tennis-court, where his subjects should be the balls; not in truth cruelty, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far upon himself, that what he did was liked of every bodie: nay, that his disgraces were fauours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an vknowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as euerie winde of passions puffed him. Whereunto nothing helped him better, then that poysnonous sugar of flatterie: which some vfed, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning vpon the greatest; others secretely hating him, and disdaining his great rising so suddenly, so undeservedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his overthrow, like the bird that caries the shell-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall.
The Countesse of Pembroke

But his minde (being an apt matter to receive what forme their amplifying speches woulde lay vpon it) daunted so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthyest, and best beloued, that ever gaue honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out un-blushing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, vniustly dispossed by E-ronas auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selue, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his baseness, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise Erona, as of whom he had receive no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres mariage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an vn-lawfull law of hauing mo wiuues then one, he stille kee-ping Erona, vnder-had, by message sought Artaxia, who no lesse hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choise) the naughtie King Plexvirtus, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of Armenia, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies, as if fortune had only gotté eics to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of al the Princes of Asia being to do honour to the neuer sufficiently praised Pyrocles & Musidorus, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bene yong master among those great estates, as he was amog his aboling vnderlings. But so many valorous Princes,
in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he
was quickly (as standing vpon no true ground, inward-
ly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-co-
fortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was euie & feare
of his expected greatnes ) made him haft away fro that
company, & without further delay appointed the mee-
ting with Artaxius; so incredibly blinded with the ouer-
bright shining of his royalty, that he could thinke such a
Queene could be content to be joined-patent with an
other to haue such an husband. Poore Erona to all this
obeied, either vehemency of affection making her stoop
to so ouerbate a servitude, or astoniished with an vnlook-
ked-for fortune, dull to any behoofesful resolutio, or (as
many times it fallles out euен in great harts when they
can accuse none but theselues) desperatly bent to main-
taine it. For so went she on in that way of her loue, that
(poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-fet
affection, she was brought to write to Artaxius, that she
was content, for the publike good, to be a second wife,
and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and
euen woo Artaxius for him.

But Artaxius (mortally hating them both for her bro-
thers sake) was content to hide her hate, till she had time
to shewe it: and pretentting that all her grudge was a-
gainst the two paragons of vertue, Musidorus & Pyrocles,
euen met them halfe way in excusing her brothers mur-
der, as not being principall actors; and of the other-side,
driuen to what they did by the euer-pardonable necel-
sitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she
promised nothing, yet Antiphilus promised himselfe all
that she woulde haue him thinke. And so a solene
enterrview was appointed. But (as the Poets say) Hymen
had.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For Artaxis laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since Antiphilus thought she ouerran him in loue) when he came even ready to embrace her, shewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (hauing much aduaantage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his company to the sword; but such as could flie away As for Antiphilus she cauled him and Erona both to be put in irons, hauing backe toward her brothers tombe, vpo which she ment to saccrifice them, making the loue of her brother stand between her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diuersitie in them two quickly discouered itselfe for the bearing of that afflication. For Antiphilus that had no greatness but outarde, that taken away, was ready to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to giue his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manic promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But Erona fadde in-deede, yet like one rather vsced, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the ioyes of her hart alreadie broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for Antiphilus, remembring his guiltlesse, being at that time priso-ner to Tiridates, when the valiant princes flue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to judge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it, when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her afflication
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

by her birth, and her fadness by her beautie, made this noble prince Plangus, who (neuer almost from his cousin Artaxia) was nowe present at Eronae, taking, to perceyue the shape of louelinesse more perfectly in wo, then in joyfuiinesse (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeinge to like; and liking to loue; and louing straight to seele the most incident effects of loue, to lerne and preserve. So borne by the hastie tide of short leyiure, he did hastyly deliuer togethers his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mentioned her life, to which she had not leyiure to attend) desired him if he loued her, to shew it, in finding some way to saue Antiphilus. For her, she found the world but a weariom stage vnto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought him, not to cast his loue in som vnfruitfull place, as could not loue it selfe: but for a testimonie of constancie, and a dutablenes to his word, to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her sake Antiphilus were saued. He tolde me how much he argued against her tendering him, who had so ungratefully betrayed her, and foolishly cast away himself. But perceiuing she did not only bend her very goodwits to speake for him against her selfe, but when such a cause could be allied to no reall, yet loue would needs make it self a cause, & barre her rather fro hearing, then yeeld that she should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in who the power of Loue (as they say of spirits) was subject to the loue in her, with griefe consented, & (though backwardly) was diligent to labor the help of Antiphilus: a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to Erona, but
but enuied as a possessor of Erona. Yet Loue sware, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a ser-
uant to his riuall. And so did he, seeing all the means
of perswading Artaxia, which the authority of so neere,
and so vertuous a kinsmē would giue vnto him. But she
to whom the eloquence of hatred had giuen reuenge
the face of delight, reiectēd all such motions; but rather
the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie,
where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of
 Tiridates (which was very neere) to execute Antiphilus, &
at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere
after) to use the same rigor tōwars Erona. Plangus much
griued (because much louing) attempted the humors
of the Lycians, to see, whether they would come in with
forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inhe-
ritor to the crowne (with the true play that is vfed in the
game of kingdōs) had no sooner his mistres in captivi-
ty, but he had usurped her place, & making her odious
to her people, because of the vnfit eleciō she had made,
had so left no hope therte: but which is worse, had sent
to Artaxia, perswading the justicing her, because that un-
justice might giue his title the name of justice. Wating
that way, Plangus pratiued with some deere friends of
his, to saue Antiphilus out of prison, whose day because it
was much neerer then Eronae, & that he wel found, he
had twisted her life vpō the same threed with his, he de-
termined first to get him out of prison: & to that end ha-
uing prepared al matters as wel as in such case he could,
where Artaxia had set many of Tiridates old servants to
haue well-marking eyes, he cofered with Antiphilus, as
(by the authority he had) he found meanes to do; &
agreed with him of the time and maner, how he should
by
by the death of some of his iaylors escape.

But all being well ordered, and Plangus willinglie putting himselfe into the greatest danger, Antiphilus (who, like a bladder, swelt rede to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that being out, was so abieected, as apt to be trode on by every bodie) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in appara:3 showe the vttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) gat a conceite, that with bewraying his practice, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, even a little before Plangus should haue come unto him, opened the whole practice to him that had the charge, with vpnpityyed teares idly protestig, he had rather die by Artaxias commandement, then against her will escape: yet begging life vpon any the hardeft, and wretchedest conditions that she would lay vpon him. His keeper prouided accordingly, so that when Plangus came, he was like, himselfe to haue bene entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discovered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) stood vpon his guard, as he had good cause. For, Artaxia (accounting him most vngratiful considering that her brother and she, had not onely preferred him against the malice of his father, but euery vised him much like his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great loure, that he could not onely keep himself from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of Eronas aduersitic.

But for the succour of Antiphilus he could gette no bodie to ioyne with him, the contempt of him ha-
The Countesse of Pembroke

uing not beneable to qualifie the hatred; so that Artaxias might easlie upon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble suite of all the women of that citie) to deliver him to their censure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a lawe of Polygamie, after many tortures, forte him to throwe himselfe from a high Pyramid, which was built ouer Tiridates tombe, and so to end his fallie-harted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

But Plangus well perceiuing that Artaxias staied one-ly for the appointed day, that the faire Eronas bodie, (consumed to ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeply her brothers death was engrauen in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friendes, who his vertue (though a stranger) had tie’d vnto him, by force to giue her libertie. Contrariwise, Artaxia, to whom Anger gaue more courage then her sexe did feare, vfed her regall authoritie (the moast she could) to suppresse that sedition, and haue her will: which (she thought) is the moast princely thing that may be. But Plangus, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour) that are trai ned in the schoole of Mars, in a conflict overthrew Artaxias power, though of far greater number: and there toke prisoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she dearly affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune (whatsoever it was) that Erona did: & happy was that threatning for her; for els Artaxia had hattened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-men of that countrie interposing the elues) it was agreed, that all persons els fullie
fullie pardoned, and all prisoners (except Eron) delivered, she should be put into the hands of a principal nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, upon oath, that if by the day two yeare fro Tiridates death, Pyrocles and Musidorus did not in person combat, & overcome two knights, who she appointed to maintain quarrell against Erons and them, of having by treason destroyed her brother, that the Erons should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be delivered; but upon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all toke solemn oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of Plangus partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condescended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resift. But Artaxias was more, and vpon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had even newly receiued newes fro Plexirtus, that vpon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held her selfe sure of the match.

But poore Plangus knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it falles out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them, & then obtained leave of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite Erona, whom he founde full of desperate sorrow, not sufferinge, neither his vnwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the natural con- clusion of all worldly acts) either to ouer with forgetfulness, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but euens glorying in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to have no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

So that when Plangus came to her, she fell in deadly traunces, as if in him she had scene the death of Antiphilus, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striving) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe injured; in stead of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he woulde her to doe) craving nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of iust hate) beloued Antiphilus.

So that Plangus having nothing but a rauish't kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towards Greece, whetherward he understood the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by Artaxia to Plexirtus: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had euer favoured, so much the rather, as he had performed the conditions of her marriage, in bringing to their deserued end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such terms, as he might well perceiue, it was by some treason wrought in Plexirius shippes. Whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippes himselfe, and came into Laconia, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shipp was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for Pyrocles and Musidorus, it was assurredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in Greece) would quickly els haue bene a large witness to the contrarie. Full of griefe with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sore for Eronas fakke, who now by them could not be relieued. A new advertisement from Armenia ouertookke him, which multiplied the force
force of his anguish. It was a message from the Nobleman who had Erona in ward, giving him to understand, that since his departure, Artaxia (vying the benefit of time) had besieged him in his castle, demanding present delivery of her, whom yet for his faith given, he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he foresaw, log he should not do for want of victual, which he had not so wisely provided, because he trusted upon the general oath taken for two yeares space: & therefore willed him to make haste to his succour, & come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in Armenia, were consumed, & Artaxia had encreased her might by marriage of Plexirtus, who now crowned King there, stuck not to glory in the murder of Pyrocles and Musidora, as having just cause there to, in respect of the deaths of his sister Andromana, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter Zelmaine, all whose loss he vniustly charged them withal, & now openly stuck not to confess, what a revenge his wit had brought forth. Plangus much astonished therewith, be- thought himself what to doo. For to returne to Armenia was vaine, since his friends there were utterly overthrowne. The thought he of going to his father but he had already (euen since the death of his stepmother, & brother) attempted the recovering his favour, & all in vaine. For they, that had before joined with Andromana to do him the wrong, thought now no life for the if he returned, & therefore kept him still (with new forges sus- picions) odious to his father. So that Plangus referring that for a worke of longer time, then the lauing of Erona could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King Euarchus; who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enimies, but esta-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

bliished good government in their countries, he hoped he might have present succour of him, both for the iustnes of the cause, & reuenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murthered. Therefore with diligence he went to him, & by the way (passing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the most overthrowne ma with griefe, that euer I hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had Erona at a stake before his eies, such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the comfort I could give him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was moved not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I haue deliuered unto you. Fayne he would haue had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great Enarchus: for my parte hauing had some of his speeches so feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wise, in such manner as you haue seene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed you in this storie; wherin if it well please you to consider, what is the straunge power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercife therein the true noblenesse of your judgement, and doo the more right to the unfortunat Hifforian. Zelimane (sighing for Eronaes sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, Enarchus would not spare to take in hande the iust delievering of her, ioyned with the iust reuenge of his childrens losse) hauing now what she desired of Basilius, to awoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheardes to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.
He rude tumulte of the Enisians
gave occasion to the honest shep-
heard to beginne their pastorals
this day with a dance, which they
called the skirmish betwixt Reason
and Passion. For seuen shepheard
(which were named the Reasona-
ble shepheard) joined the selues;
foure of them making a square, and the other two go-
ing a little wide of either side, like winges for the maine
battell; and the seuenth man formost, like the forlome
hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the
seuen appassionated shepheard; all keeping the pase of
their foote by their voice, and sundry comforted instru-
ments they held in their armes. And first, the formost of
Reasonable side began to sing.

R. Thou Rebelly, come, to thy master yeilde.
   And the other that met with him answered.
P. No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine shall be the field.
Reason. Can Reason then a Tyrant counted be?
Passion. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.
R. But Reason will, that Reason govern most.
P. And Passion will, that Passion rule the rest.
R. Your will is will; but Reason reason is.
P. Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.
R. Whom Passion leades unto his death is bent.
P. And let him die, so that he die content.
R. By nature you to Reason faith have sworne.

H h 2

P. Not
The Countesse of Pembroke

P, Not so, but fellowlike together borne.
R. Who Passion doth ensue, liues in annoy.
P. Who Passion doth for sake, liues void of toy.
R. Passion is blinde, and treads an unknowne trace
P. Reason bath eyes to see his owne ill case.

Then as they approched neerer, the two of Reasons sides, as if they shot at the other, thus fange.

R. Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?
P. And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?
R. O foolish thing, which glory doth destroye.
P. O glorious title of a foolish toye.
R. Weakencs you are, dare you with our strength fight?
P. Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.
R. O sacred Reason, helpe our vertuous toiles.
P. O Passion, passe on seble Reasons spoiles.
R. We with ourselves abide a daily strife.
P. We gladly use the sweetnes of our life.
R. But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede.
P. We now haue peace, your peace we doo not neede.

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in need of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.

R. We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood.
P. Who be too weake, doe signe they be too good.
R. Though we cannot orecome, our cause is iust.
P. Let vs orecome, and let vs be vnust.
R. Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reasons stroke.
P. What shal we winne by taking Reasons yoke?
R. The ioyes you have shall be made permanent.
P. But so we shal with griefe learne to repent.
R. Repent indeed, but that shall be your blisse.
P. How know we that, since present ioyes we misse?
R. You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.

No
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

No Reason yet had ever skill to show it.

Then let us both to heavenly rules give place,
Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface.

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praises of the according to Zelmannes liking; whose unrestrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free course to the delicate Philoclea, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her jealous mother. But Dicus (that had in this time taken a great liking of Dorus for the good partes he found above his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subiect which he him selfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus.

Dorus.

Dorus, tell me, where is thy wonted motion
To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy devotion.
For who doth holde his love in estimation,
To witnesse that he thinkes his thoughts delicous,
Thinks to make each thing badge of his sweet passion.

But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicious
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themselves are vicious.
Not so, although my mettall were most mutable,
Her beames have wrought therin most faire impression:
To such a force some change were nothing sutable.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

**Ducus.** The harte well set doth neuer shoune confection: If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious: Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression. Who glories in his loue, doth make Love glorious: But who doth feare, or bideth mutt wilfully, Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his flate opprobrious. Thou then, that framst both words & voice most skillfully, Teeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation, If Love tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilesfully.

**Dorus.** If Sunnie beames shame heaunly habitation; If three-leaved graffe seeme to the sheepe vn sauorie, Then base and fower is Loues most high vocation. Or if sheepe's cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie, Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie, To helpe her praise, who decks me in her flauerie. No, no: no wordes ennoble selfe-nobilitie. As for your doubts; her voice was it deceaued me, Her eye the force beyond all possiibilitie.

**Ducus.** Thy words well voice'd, well graffe had almost heaued me: Quite from my selfe to love Loues contemplation; Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende heaued me. Go on therefore, and tell vs, by what fashian In thy owne proofe he gets so strange possession, And how possesse he strengthen's his Invasion?

**Dorus.** Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression, His childhood woonder, prenticeship attention, His youth delight, his age the soules oppression: Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in invention, Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefулnes.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Beautie his boote, his play lovers dissention:
His eyes are curious search, but vailde with warefulness:
His wings desire oft clipt with desperation:
Largesse his hands could never skill of warefulness.
But how he doth by might, or by persuation
To conquer, and his conquest how to ratifie,
Experience doubts, and schooles holde disputation.

But so thy shepe may thy good wishes satisfie
With large encrease, and wooll of fine perfection,
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt give our soules a deare reflection,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in theee her owne infection.

Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
Whose wounds are salues, whose yokes please more then pleasure
Her stains are beams, vertue the fault she blames is. (doth:
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in Sommer hot,
Yet harvest brings. Doth she alas absent herself?
The Sunne is hid, his kindly shadoes cumber not.
But when to gie some grace she doth content herself,
O then it shines; then are the heau'ns distributed,
And Venus seems, to make vp her, she spent herself.
Thus then (I say) my mischiefs have contributed
A greater good by her divine reflection;
My harms to me, my blisse to her attributed,
Thus she is framed; her eyes are my direction;
Her love my life, her anger my destruction.

H b 4

Dicus.

Dorus.
The Countesse of Pembroke

Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.

Dorus. Thy sufitie sure is wrapped in destruction:
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare,
A man to feare a womens womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slave to servile Sense.
A weake defence where weakenesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearly bought.

Dorus. If I had thought to heare blasphemos wordes,
My brest to swords,my soule to hell have solde
I rather would,then thus mine ears desile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O heards take heed, for I a woolfe have found;
Who hunting round the strongesst for to kill,
His brest doth fill with earth of others ioyes,
And loden so pul'd downe,puld downe destroys.
O sheepeheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
Which do enuenome both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who judge that honour which hath scope to slander.

Dorus. Thou wander farre in great reproches,
So loute encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.
Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancie
In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soon may have some helpe, or change of passion.
She oft her lookes, the starres her fauour bend to thee:
Fortune store, Nature health, Loute grant perswasion.

A quiet
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

A quiet mind none but thyself can lend to thee,
Thus I commend to thee all our former love,

Well do I prove, error lies oft in scale,
Yet it is scale, though error, of true hart,
Nought could impart such beates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,
Whose only face the little heauen is,
Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,
Barre d from their chiefest object of deligth fulnesse,
Throome on this earth the Chaos of confusions.
As for thy wish to my enraged spite fulnesse,
The louely blowme with rare reward, my prayer is
Thou mayest love her that I may see thy sight fulnesse.
The quiet mind (whereof my selfe empairer is,
As thou dost thinke) should most of all disquiet me
Without her love, then any mind who fairer is.
Her onely cure from surfeet-woes can diet me:
She holdes the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in stormes can quiet me.
Nay rather then my easie discontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deted be
From any joy, which might her griefe occasion.
With so sweete plauges my happie harmes infected be:
Paine wills me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loves protected be.
Thus for ecb change my changelesse hart I fortifie.

Vv Hen they had ended to the good pleasing of the
assistants, especially of Zelmane, who neuer forgat
to giue due commendations to her friend Dorus, the more
to advance him in his pursuite (although therein he had brought
The Countesse of Pembroke's

brought his matters to a more wished conclusion than yet he knew of) our starte a jolly yonker, his name was Nico, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And having spied one Pas, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this manner of salutation upon him, and was with like reverence required.

Nico. Dorus.

And are you there old Pas? in troth I ever thought, Among us all we should find out something of nought.

Pas. And I am here the same, so mote I thrive and thee. Despairde in all this flocke to find a knave, but thee.

Nico. Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind: Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.

Pas. My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray, Not like the scrippe thou stolest, while Dorcas sleeping lay.

Nico. Mine was the scrippe, but thou, that seeming raid with love, Didst snatch from Colmas hand her greeny wroughte glowe.

Pas. Ah foole so Courtiers do. But who did wisely skippe, When for a trenc-dish stolen, thy father did thee whippe?

Nico. Indeed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred, For puffing Lalus lambe, with crouch to bless thy head.

Pas. My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our judge: Of singing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge.

Couldst
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Couldst thou make Lalus flie? so nightingales annoide,
When with the kaving crowes their musick is annoide.

Nay like to nightingales the other birds gine care:
My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forsweare.

I think it well: such voice would make one musickhe hate:
But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.

Another sure as is a gander from a goose:
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.

Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day,
The neighbours all did cry, alas what ase doth bray?

But here is Dicus old; let him then speake the woord,
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire fowers affoord.

Content: but I will lay a wager hercunto,
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.
I haue (and long shall haue) a white great nimble cat,
A king upon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine ears, long tailie he hath, with Lions curbed clawe,
Which oft he lifteth vp, and slayes his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-moving shoves,
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,
And if I better sing, let me thy Colina kisse.

Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse, I haue a better match;
A prettie cue he it is, his name ivis is Catch,
No care nor tale he bath, least they should him disgrace,

Aruedi
The Countesse of Pembroke's

A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long speckled face:
He never musing standes, but with himselfe will play
Leaping at euerie flie, and angrie with a flea:
He oft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt upright.
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus judgement show:
Such oddes I willing lay: for him and you I know.

Dicus. Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,
Or else who singeth worst, my skill will hardly hit.

Nico. Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring
The auncient prayse to Arcads shepheardes skill?
Pan is not dead, since Pas beginnes to sing.

Pas. Who euermore will love Apollos quill,
Since Nico doth to sing so widely gape?
Nico his place farre better furnish will.

Nico. Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape
Raging in woes teache pastors first to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?

Pas. This is not he that failed her to gaine,
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his musicke slaine.

Nico. O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trowe,
That Nico must with Pas compared be?

Pas. O Nymphe, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:
While
While I was warbling out your wooed praise,  
Nico would needs with Pas his bagpipe blowe.

If neuer I did faile your holy-dayes,  
With dancyes, carols, or with barlybreake:  
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes.

If each day hath bene holy for your sake,  
Vnto my pipe, O Nimphes, helpe now my pipe,  
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,  
Me thinkes I see the lippes my Leuca hath,  
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.

Alas, when I in spring meete roses rathe,  
And thinke from Colmas sweet red lips I line,  
I leave mine eyes unwipte my cheekes to bathe.

As I of late, neer bushes vsde my line,  
I spied a thrush where she did make her nest,  
That will I take, and to my Leuca give.

But long haue I a sparrow gailie dreft,  
As white as milke, and comming to the calf,  
To put it with my hand in Colmas breft.

I oft doo sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,  
But when I did come neere with heatc and hope,  
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.

Colma once said, she left the wicket ope,
The Countesse of Pembroke

For me to come, and so she did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.

Nico. When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,
If Leuca live, she darken will my fame.

Pas. When Cosmas doth come forth, the Sun displays
His utmost light: for well his witte doth know,
Cosmas faire beames emblemit in much his raies.

Nico. Leuca to me did yeseter-morning showe
In perfeect light, which could not me deceave,
Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.

Pas. But yes ternight by light I did receave
From Cosmas eyes, which full in darkenes shine,
I sawe her arme, where purest Lillies cleave.

Nico. She once starke naked did bathe a little time,
But still (me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.

Pas. She once, to cool her selfe, stood in a well,
But euer since that well is well besought,
And for Rose-water fould of rarest smell.

Nico. To riuers banke, being on walking brought,
She bad me bate her babie in the brooke,
Alas (said I) this babie dooth nurce my thought.

Pas. As in a glasse I held she once did looke,
I said,
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.

O if I had a ladder for the skies,
I would clime vp, and bring a prettie starrre,
To weare upon her neck, that open lies.

O if I had Apollos golden carre,
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That (shining now) she then might shine more farre.

Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy name deface,
While shepheards tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
Or while that shepheards loute a lovelie face.

Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,
As farre as any shepheards piping be:
As farre as Loute possessest any head.

Thy monument is layd in many a tree,
With name engrau'd: so though thy bodie die,
The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.

So oft these woods have heard me Cosma crie,
That after death, to heau'n in woods resound,
With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma flie.

Peace, peace good Pas, thou wearest ever the ground
With sluttish song: I pray thee Learne to blea,
For good thou mayst yet prove in sheepish sound.

My father hath at home a prettie lay,
The Countesse of Pembroke

Goe winne of hym (for chattering) praise or shame:
For so yct of a conquest speake thou may.

Nico. Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,
That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,
That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.

Pas. Tell me (and Phoebus be) what monster growes
With so strong liues, that bodie cannot rest
In eafe, untill that bodie life forgoes.

Dicus. Enough, enough; so ill hath done the best,
That since the hauing them to neither's due,
Let cat and dog fight which shall have both you.

Some speech there straignt grew among the hearers,
what they shoule meane by the riddles of the two
monsters. But Zelmane, whose harte better delighted in
wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, the
defired Lamon, he would againe repeate some other
lamentation of the still-abfent Strephon and Klaius. Basilius
(as soone as he understood Zelmanes pleasure) commaundde
Lamon vpon paine of his life (as though every
ting were a matter of life and death, that pertained
to his mistresse service) immediately to sing it: who
with great cunning, varying his voice according to the
diversitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, answered
in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon.  I love in griefe, and doo detest all ioyes:
Despise delight, and tyde with thought of eafe.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the change of them my fancie please.
I studie that which may me most displeasse,
And in despite of that displeasures might,
Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes.
Blinded with beames, fell darkenes is my sight:
Dole on my ruine seedes, with sucking smarte,
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte.

I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,
And loth this time, called life, may thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Thinke, my harde haps have blunted deaths sharpe knife,
Not sparing me, in whom his worke be rife:
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered brest:
Whereeto I yeld, and secke none other breath,
But from the sent of some infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischieue craue.

Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe craue,
And secke to nourish that, which now containes
All what I am: if I myselfe will saue,
Then must I saue, what in me chiefly raignes.
Which is the hat, full web of Sorrowes paines.
Sorrow then cherish me, for I am sorrow:
No being now, but sorrow I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne; by helpe I borowe,
Since thon my riches arte, and that thou hast.
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste.

Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste

Klaius.

Strephon.

Klaius.
The Countesse of Pembroke

Is that huge storme, which poures it selfe on me:
Thailestones of teares, of sighes a monstrosous blast,
Thunders of cries, lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heaven, my soule which nought can see;
The flying sprites which trees by rootes up teare
Be those despaires, which have my hopes quite waft.
The difference is; all folkes those stormes forbeare:
But I cannot; who then my selfe should fliethe.
So close unto my selfe, my wrackes doo lie.

Stephan. So close unto my selfe my wrackes doo lie;
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe, whose course to love doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:
Her cable, Reason, breakes from anchor, Hope:
Fancies, her tackling, torne away doth flie.
Ruine, the winde, bath blowne her from her scope:
Bruised with waves of Care, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blissee.

Klaus. On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blissee
I long doo plowe with plough of depe Desire:
The heed Fast-meaning is, no truth to missie:
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire
Fawour to make my chiefe and onely hire:
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I saine would reappe, I reape but this,
Hate fully growne, Ablence new sprongen out.
So that I see, although my sight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
Arcadia. Lib. 2.

Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despair.

For so did I, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
Eun then Despair did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancy would force employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lam'd with the angle, which it selfe did beare;
And unto death, quite drown'd in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguis'd in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.

Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,
When first that crown'd Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footsteps I with kisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must ever reue,
Mine eyes did light upon her shining heve,
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infect'd so with her sweet poisons might,
That leaving me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
Yet living still in her, while her beams lent
Such vital PARKE, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those living lights absent be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall;
But that eternal pains my soule should bent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters seele a lasting hell.
The Countesse of Pembroke

Klaus. In earthly feters felle a lasting bell
   Alas I doo; from which to finde release,
   I would the earth, I would the heavens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease,
   Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
   O faire, o only faire, from thee, alas;
These foule, most foule, distresses to me fell;
   Since thou from me (ô me) ô Sunne didst passe.
   Therefore esteeming all good blessings toyes
I joy in griefe, and doo detest all toyes.

Stephon. I joye in griefe, and doo detest all toyes.
   And now an ende, (ô Claius) now an ende
   For euen the hearens our mournful musique stroyes,
   And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.

So wel did Lamos voice expresse the passions of those shepheardes, that all the Princely beholders were striken in a silent cõsideration of them; indeed euery one making, that he heard of another the balace of his own troubles. And Basilius perceiving such melancholique musique best comforted to the humor of his mistrefse, entreated againe the young melancholy shepheard, that he would emparte some part of the sorow his countenance so well witnessed ynto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himself and the Echo: framing his voice in those deserte places, as what words he would haue the Echo replie, ynto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these Hexameters in the following order he vttred.

Faire
Air rocks, goodly rivers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace?
Peace? who debarre me my tongue? who is it that comes me so nite? I.
O I doo know what guess I doo meete: it is Echo.
Well meet Echo: aproch, and tell me thy will too.
Echo, what doo I get yeelding my spirit to my grievances?
What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death?
O poisnous medicine: what worse to me can be then it?
In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease?
And what manner a minde, which had to that humor a paine?
Hath not reason enough vehemence the desire to reprove?
Oft prove I: but what suuie, when Reason seeks to be gone?
O what is it? what is it, that may be a suuie to my loue?
What doo louers seeke for, long seeking for to enioye?
What be the ioyes, for which I enioye they went to the paines?
Then to an earnest loue what doth best victorie lende?
Ende, but I can never ende: Loue will not give me the leaque.
How be the mindeis disposed, that cannot taste the Physicke?
Yet say againe th'advice for this that I tolde thee.
Doth th'infected wretch of his ill th'extremitye know?
But if he know not his harms, what guides hath he whilst he be blind? Blinde.
What blinde guides can he have that leads to a fancie?
Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that steppeth aloft?
What causes first made these tormentes on me to light?
Can then a cause be so light, that forceth a man to goe die?
Tell tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die?
Eye-sight made me to yeeld: but what first pearsst to my eyes?
Eyes hurters? eyes hurté? but what from them to me falls?
But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my harte?
Arte? what can be that arte, which thou dost meane by thy speach?
What be the fruities of speaking arte, what groves by the wordees?
O much more then wordees: those wordees serv'd more me to blesss.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

O when shall I be knowne, where most to be knowne I doo long?
Long be thy woes for such bad newes: how reckes she my thoughts?
Then, then what doe I gayne, since sitt her will I doo winde?
Winde, tempests, and stormes: yet in end what gines she desire?
Silly rewards: yet above women hath she a title.
What great name may I gue to so heauily a woman?
Woe, but seems to me ioye, that agrees to my thought so.
Thinke so: for of my desired blisse it is onely the course.
Curst be thy selfe for cursing that, which leads me to ioyes.
What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes he not harde?
Harde to be got, but got constant, to be helde very steeles.
How be they helde unwinde? spake, for th hast narrowly pry de.
How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence?
Horrible is this blasphemie unto the most holie.
Thou liest, fals Echo: their mindez as vertue be inste.
Mock's thou those Diamonds, which onely be made by the Goodez?
Odds? what an odds is there since them to the heauins I preferre?
Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made enuill?
Deuill? in hell where such Deuili is, so that hell I doo goe.

After this well placed Echo, the other shepheardes were offering themselves to haue continued the sportes: But the night had so quietly spent most part of her selfe, that the King for that time licensed them: & so bringing Zelwane to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the same for Philoclea, of all sides they went to counterfeit a sleepe in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet there lay they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which Basilius was to continue his Apollo devotions, and the other to meditate upon their private desires.

The end of the second Booke.
THE THIRDE BOOKE
OF THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

Dorus—his faire and soulc weather in his loue. His forlorn agones. His doubts to write, and Pamelaes to reade, his elegie.

His last dayes daunger, having made Pamelaes loue discern, what a losse it should have suffered, if Dorus had bene destroyed, brede such tendernesse of kindnes in her toward him: that she could no longer keepe Loue from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed; so as finding not only by his speeches & letters, but by the pittifull oration of a languishing behavior, & the easily deciphered character of a sorrowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruction, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pittyed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames have away the former iciness of her behauiour, as by
The Countesse of Pembrokes

by entertaining his discourses (whensoeuer he did vse them) in the third person of Musidorus; so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuoufly loued, she would have required his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could so hartily loue as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble fauour, & chaste plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine vpon Dorus, he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, other-hastily brought to a great fire, rather oppressed, then relieued with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetnesse of joyfulnes, that again being a child of Passion, & neuer acquainted with mediocrity, could not set bounds vpon his happines, nor be content to giue Desire a kingdom, but that it must be an unlimitted Monarchy. So that the ground he stood vpon being ouer-high in happines, & slipperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe frō falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all comfort out of his brest, & wash't away all cheerfulness of his cheere, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (Mops being called away by her mother, & he left alone with Pamela) the sudden occasion called Loue, & that neuer said to aske Reasons leaue, but made the too-much loving Dorus take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and, as it were, to establisch a trophee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent taft & colour, which suddenly she perceiued had poison in it, so did she put him away frō her: lo'king first vnto
into heauen, as amazed to find heiselfe so beguiled in him, then laying the cruel punishment upon him of angry Loue, and lowering beautie, shewing disdain, & a despising disdain, away (said she) unworthy man to loue, or to be loued. Assure thyselfe, I hate my selfe for being so deceived; judge then what I doo thee, for deceiving me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my judgement, and blame of my conscience. With that she called Moplar, not staying for any answer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which she seemed not to mark (much less to pity)) & chid her for having so left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it was even a death, which then laid hold of Dorus: which certainly at that instant would have killed him, but that the fear to tarry longer in her presence (contrary to her commandement) gave him life to carry himselfe away from her sight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieving for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding himselfe not only unhappy, but unhappie after being false from all happinesse: and to be false from all happines, not by any misconceiuing, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to Pamela: he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it, greedily drawing into his minde, all conceits which might more and more torment him. And so remained he two dayes in the woods, disdaining to give his bodie food, or his mind comfort, louing in himselfe nothing, but the love of her. And indeed that love onely straue with the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed Dor-
It should also destroy the image of her that liued in Dorus. and when the thought of that was crept in vnto him, it began to win of him some copassion to the shrine of the image, & to bewaile not for himselfe (who he hated) but that so notable a loue should perish. The began he onely so farre to wishe his owne good, as that Pamela might pardon him the fault, though not the punishment: & the uttermost height he aspired vnto, was, that after his death, she might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of loue, and not of boldnesse.

That concept found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yelded, since he was banished her preface, to secke some means by writing to shew his sorrow, & testifie his repentance. Therfore getting him the necessarie instruments of writing, he thought best to counterfeit his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she would cast it away as soon as she saw it) and to put it in vers, hoping, that would draw her on to read the more, chusing the Elegiac as fittest for mourning. But pen did neuer more quakingly performe his office; neuer was paper more double moistned with inke & teares; neuer words more slowly maried together, & neuer the Muses more tired, then now with changes & rechanges of his devises; fearing howe to ende, before he had resolued how to begin, mistrusting ech word, condemning ech sentence. This word was not significant, that word was too plain: this would not be conceiued; the other would be ill conceiued. Here Sorow was not inough expressed; there he seemed too much for his owne sake to be sory. This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly mouing. At last, marring with mending, and putting out better, then
then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, & diverse times ready to teare it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the worse it grew, he folded it vp, deouedly invoking good acceptation vnto it; and wat-
ching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner ((saying) Mopsi); the other lodge, slake vp into Pamelaes chamber, and in her standish (which first he kis-
Fed; and crused of it a safe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be seene at her next vsing her inke (himselfe re-
turning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorrow) leauing her standish vpon her beds head, to give her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.
For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in ano-
ther place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw
the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected per-
don: and yet was not long away, but that she wished
she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his
presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from
him, and therefore not worthie to be receyued: and yet the paper (she thought) was not guiltie. At last, she con-
cluded, it were not much amisse to looke it ouer, that she might out of his wordes pick some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and threw it away, and took it vp againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, conteyning this matter.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

V No to a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth, and now fully beleues helpe to be quite perished; Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monument of his anguish; O you (alas so I find) cause of his onely ruine.

Dread not a whit (O goodly cruel) that pitte may enter into thy hart by the sight of this Epistle I send; And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall, least it might th' allure home to thy selfe to returne, (Vnto thy selfe I doe meane those graces dwell so within thee, gratefulnes, sweetnes, holy love, hartie regard) Such thing cannot I seeke (Despaire hath given me my answer despaire most tragicall clause to a deadly request) Such thing cannot be hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes; hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.

Can those eyes that of eyes drown'd in moat harty flowing teares, (teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse; Can those eyes now yeeld to the kind concett of a sorrow, which inke onely relates, but ne laments ne replies?

Ah, that, that I do not conceiue (though that to my blisse were) more then Nestors yeares, more then a Kings diademe.

Ah, that, that I do not conceiue, to the beaute when a mouse climes then may I hope atchieve grace of a heauenly tiger.

But, but alas, like a man condemnd doth crave to be heard speake not that he hopes for amends of the desafer he feels.

But finding th' approach of death with an ougly relenting, giues an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:

Right so my boiling har't, enflamm'd with fire of a faire eye, bubling out doth breath signes of his hugie doulours:

Now that he finds to what end his life and love be refered, and that he hence must part where to live onely he lou'd.

O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairnesse? can death beautie become? must be such a monument?
Must I be only the mark, shall prove that Vertue is angry?
Shall prove that fierceness can with a white done abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and love be rewarded
with mortall disdain, bent to unendly revenge?
Unto revenge? O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be revenged?
Shall such high Planets end to the losse of a worme?
And to revenge who doo bend, would in that kind be revenged,
as th'ooffence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my ooffence was Love; with Love then must I be chastned,
and with more, by the laves that to Revenge doo belong.
If that love be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
Love never had me oppress, but that I saw to be lou'd.
You be the cause that I lou'd: what Reason blameth a shadowe,
that with a body it goes? since by a body it is.
If that Love you did hate, you should your beautie have hidden:
you should those faire eyes have with a veile covered.
But soole, soole that I am, those eyes would shine so a dark caue.
what veiles then doo prevaile, but to a more miracle?
Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,
toruen you should disperse unto the blasts of a wilde.
But soole, soole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head soild,
euen as I am, so I should unto that hare be a thrall.
Or with fair hâds-nailes (â hâd which nailes me to this death)
you should have your face (since Love is ill) blemishe.
O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
Should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?
First let Cimmerian darknes be my onel habitacion:
first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished;
Ere that I should consent to doo such excessive a dammage
unto the earth, by the hurt of this her heavenly jewell.
O no: but such love you say you could have asorded,
as might learne Temperance wayde of ages events.

O sweete
The Countesse of Pembrokes.

O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Love so be learned?
unto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?
Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yeelded,
Passion unto my rage, Rage to a hastie revenge.
But what's this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,
such faith, so staineles, inviolate, violent?
Shall I not? o may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,
what sweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did bold?
Shall I not once object, that you, you granted a favour
unto the man, whom now such miseries you awardes? (were:
Bed your thoughtes to the dear sweet words which th'o me giv'n
think what a world is now, think who hath alred her hart.
What? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such euill?
now fled, then cherished? then so nic, now so remote?
Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,
say, that I shoulde well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doe I finde, but Care to abhor me,
Care that I sink in grieffe, Care that I line banish't?
And banish'd doe I line, nor now will seeke a recontrie,
since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lave.
If then a man in most ill case may give you a farewell;
farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

CHAP. 2.

The young Ladies mette: * invited to the countrie-wenches
sports, * goe thether, * there are taken, and thence ca-
ried to Amphialius castle. * Their entertainment there.
Cecropias auricular confession of her proud cariage in
properitie, * and ambitious practises in adversitie. * Am-
phialius his affection in these actions.

What
Hat this would have wrought in her, she herself could not tell: for, before her Reason could moderate the disputation betweene Fauour & Faultines, her sister, and Misos, called her downe to entertaine Zelmane, who was come to visit the two sisters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while Gynetta woreied her bed with her melancholie sickness, and made Misos shrewdneffe (who like a sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde Zelmane from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her jealousie: Both she and her husband, driving Zelmane to such a strict of resolution, either of impossible granting, or dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she coulde) to aunoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (Basilius being with his sickle wife, conferring upon such examinations, as Philanax, and other of his noble-men had made of this late sedition, all touching Cecropia with vehemct suspition of giving either flame or fuell vnto it) Zelmane came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his seate in Philoclea: who now with a bashfull cheerfulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she could not choose but be glad) joyned with her sister, in making much of Zelmane.

And so as they late deuising how to giue more feathers to the winges of Time, there came to the lodge dore, sixe maides, all in one liuerie of scarlette petti cotes, which were tuckt vp almoste to their knees, the petticoates them selues beinge in many places garni-
The Countesse of Pembroke's

garnished with leaves, their legges naked, sauing that above the anckles they had little black filke laces, vpon which did hang a few siluer belles: like which they had a little above their elbowes, vpon their bare armes. Vpon their haire they ware garlands of rosees and gilisflowers; and the haire was so dref't, as that came againe above the garlandes; enterchaung a mutuall couering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire. Their breasts liberall to the eye: the face of the formost of of them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would haue bene, if they had not suffered greedy Phœbus, ouer-often, and harde, to kissile them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; so as the gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seem a wanton modestie, and an entitling sober-nes. Each of them had an instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with vnfeelsbleness, that did not lende it selfe vnfo them. The Musick entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleafant a guest was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much lesse to afke the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreet deeme-nour) in this sort fpake vnfo them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies have power to make cities enuie these woods, and solitarines to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Loue, so comes it from louely persons. The maides of all this coast of Arcadia, understanding the often accessse that certaine thep-
shepheard of these quarters, are allowed to have in this forbidden place; and that their rural sports are not disdained of you, have bene stird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breed your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hundrednes of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandement in coming to this place vnsent for, they chose out vs, to unite both your princely parents, & your felues, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they have prouided some such sports, as they trust your gratious acceptatiōs will interpret to be deliteful. We haue bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affaires, our trust is, that you yet will not denie the shining of your eyes vs.

The Ladies stood in some doubt, whether they should goe or not, lest Basilus might be angry withall. But Miso (that had bene at none of the pastoral, and had a great desire to lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor will nor choose, but go thether, and make the honest countrie people know, that they were not so squeamish as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warrant of her authoritie, with a smiling humblenesse obeyed her: Pamela only casting a seeking looke, whether she could see Dorm (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieved for his absence, hauing giuen the wound to him through her owne harte. But so the three Ladies & Miso went with those six Nymphes, conquering the length of the way with the force of musique, leaving only Mopsa behind;
The Countesse of Pembroke

who disgraced weeping with her countenaunce, because her mother would not suffer her to shewe her newskoured face among them. But the place appointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie conversation of their inuiters. There founde they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a little square place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord cowered, & beautified with the pleasantest fruittes, that Sunburnt Autumn could deliver unto the. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and taste of the swelinge grapes, which seemed great with child of Bacchus: & of the divers coloured plums, which gave the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorn their provisyon, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for joy to come to such lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the coming forth of such deuises, as were prepared for them, there rushed out of the woods twenty armed men, who round about environed them, & laying hold of Zelmane before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods over the heads of all fower, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke and carried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while Zelmane's harte was rent in pieces with rage of the injurie, and disdain of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or five mile further, they lefte Miss with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune; and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to
to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche wayted for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, vpon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

But at the Castle gate their faces were discovered, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the fifters knewe their aunt in lawe, Cecropia. But that sight increased the deadly terrour of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked Cecropia: who yet came vnto them, making curtesie the outside of mischiefe, and desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their service. Philosophes (with a looke where Loue shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good vnto them, hauing never deservd euill of her. But Pamela's harte disdayning humbleness to injurie, Aunt, (sai the) what you haue determined of vs I pray you doo it speedily: for my part I looke for no service, where I finde violence.

But Cecropia (vsing no more wordes with them) conuayed them all three to severall lodgings (Zelmanes harte so swelling with spite, that she coulde not bring forth a worde) and so lefte them: first taking from them their kniues, because they should do themselves no hurt, before she had determined of them: and then giuing such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had receiued of Zelmane, & told him, whom now he had in his power.
The Countesse of Pembrokes

*Amphialus* was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curtesie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by Zelname, so as he was utterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuises, to which he would never haue consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an euill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoever I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how euill soeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole Basilius that now raignes, hauing liued unmarried till he was nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his dooings assuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the undoubted succellour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be any thing necere to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heyre of Arcadia, obtayned me of my father the King of Argos, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelorly intention: for else you may be sure the King of Argos, nor his daughter would haue suffered their Royall bloud

To
to be stain'd with the base name of subjection. So that I came into this countrey as apparaunt Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrey. My porte and pompe did well become a King of Argos daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into cares, & their cares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maiestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their deuotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse, one thrusting vpon another, who might sheue him selfe most diligent and serviceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings never vnfulcated: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaued a gratefull acceptance. And in this felicitie went thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it with a plot we laide, as we should not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of Basilius; when the heaués (I thinke enuying my great felicity) the stopt thy fathers breath, whè he breathed nothing but power and soueraignty. Yet did not thy orphancie, or my widdowhood, deprive vs of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies vnto vs.

But before, (my sonne) thou went come to the age
The Countesse of Pembroke's

to see the sweetness of authority, this beast (whom I can never name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this Gynecia, then a young girl, and brought her to sit alone me in feasts, to turne her shoulder to me toward in all our solemnities. It is certain, it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by strangers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, since with all there is no question: The fall is greater from the first to the second, then from the second to the undermost. The rage did dwell in my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in silence, & disguised with humblenes. But aboue all the rest, the griefe of griefes was, whe with these daughters (now thy prisoners) the cut of all hope of thy succession. It was a tedious thing to me, that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) another voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable vnnto me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend all thy time in such misery, & that the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had ben a saint & I could not choose, finding the change this change of fortune bred vnnto me, for now fro the multitude of followers, silence grew to beat at my gate, & absence in my presence. The guesse of my mind could prevaile more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remembring that in all miseries weeping becomes fooles, and practice wise folks) have tried diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of subjection. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I never faile my self. Wild beasts I kept in a caue hard
hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of then pastorals, I as then liuing in my house hard by the place, and against the hour they were to meete (having kept the beafts without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would seek their food there, and deuoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating sharpe-sighted inventions, made them unluckily to be killed. After, I vled my servant Clinias to stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding Philanax his examinations grow dangerous, I thought to play double or quit; and with a sleight I vled of my fine-witted wench Artesia, with other maids of mine, would haue sent these good inherithrixes of Arcadia, to haue pleaded their caufe before Pluto, but that ouer fortunately for the, you made me know the last day how vehemently this childish passion of loue doth torment you. Therfore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wishing rather hate the loue in you. For Hate often geteth victory; Loue commonly is the instrument of subjection. It is true, that I would also by the same practice haue entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these being taken away) you are the undoubted inheritor, and Basilis will not long ouer-lieue this losse.

O mother (said Amphialus) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others finde what sweetnesse they will in euery fearing, because they are ever feared: for my part, I will thinke myselfe highly intituled, if I may be once by Philocles accepted for a servant. Well (said Cecropia) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body:
then should you not have funke vnder base weakenes-ses. But since you have tied your thoughts in so willfull a knot, it is happie I haue brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enjoy affection, and vpon that build your soueraignty. Alas (said Amphialus) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if Philoclea be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it vnkindnes, shal I giue tokens of kindnes; perchance she cödemnes me of this action, and shall I triumph? perchance she drownes nowe the beauties I loue with sorrowful teares, and where is then my reioicing? You haue reason (said Cecropia with a fei- ned grauitie) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recovered. No good mo- ther (said Amphialus) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence, but rather would I die then confess to absence. Prety intricit follies (said Cecropia) but get you vp, & see how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other sifter. For after we shall haue our hands full to defend ourselves, if Basilius hap to besiege us. But remembring herself, she turned back, & asked him what he would haue done with Zelmane, since nowe he might be revenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably answered Amphialus, having deserued no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherished of Philoclea. And therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no (said Cecropia) company confirmes refo- lutioes, & lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable profers.
CHAP. 3.

Amphialus addressing him to Philoclea. 1 Her melancholy habit. 2 His humble suit. 3 Her pitifull answer: 4 and his compassionate replie. 5 Their parting with cold comfort.

Vt Amphialus (taking of his mother Philocleas kniues, which he kept as a relique, since she had worn them) gat vp, and calling for his richest apparell, nothing seemed sumptuous enought for his mistrefses eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not daintie: and though the inuention were delicat, he misdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour: lest if gay, he might seeme to glorie in his injury, and her wrong; if mourning, it might strike some euill prelage vnto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black velvet, richly embrodered with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffes of cypres, that the cypres was like blacke cloudes, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterechangeably answered, the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie glistring, which he thought pictured the two passions of Feare and Desire,
Desire, wherein he was enchaynec. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he straue to glie the best grace he could vnto his halting.

2 And in that fort he went to Philoclea chamber: whome he found (because her chamber was overlightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did cast such a shadow vpon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe vpon Venus, when vnder the trees she bewayled the murther of Adonis: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almoast halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mende their obiect: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor the perceyuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts somthing quickening her senses) she heard him as he happed to stirre his upper garment: and perceyuing him, rose vp, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, and Anger was neuer there.

3 But Amphialius that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches, found it so locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the befeeching her to take what was don in good part, and to assure her selfe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her person. But she making no other answer, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before
before were ioyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gave him to understand, that considering his doings, she thought his speech as full of incongruitie, as her answer were would be voyde of purpose: whereupon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hande, (which she suffered with a countenance witnessing captiuitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to have pitie of him, whose love went beyonde the boundes of conceite, much more of uttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did stand: where-to the least motion of hers woulde serue to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he her eternall slave; and with true vehemencie besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

Alas cousin, (saide she) what shall my tongue be able to doo, which is informed by the cares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pitie, and vice crueltie; you say, you loue me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you haue brought me to so neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: so that while you say I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slave, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, iniurie, terror, and depriving of that which is more dear then life itselfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily persuaded. But if the nearenesse of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or there be any such thing in you, which you call loue toward
The Comteffé of Pembrokes

towarde me, then let not my fortune be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste it selfe by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause of my parents woeful destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I shall account I haue receyued my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my friend Zelmae: for I desire no well being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heauenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet and beautifull flowers of her face.

But Amphialus was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe she had, aboue all earthly things, having long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreme povertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Manie a pitifull looke doth she cast upon it, and many a time doth she draw backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For euens Amphialus by a hunger-sternued affection, was compelled to offer this injurie, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting griefe, thinke vnkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor denye, he thus answered her. Deare ladie (said he) I will not say vnto you (how iustly soever I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accellaric vnto this your withholding. For since I do not redresit, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I protest vnto you, (and this protestation of mine, let the heavens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had never scene
feene the light, or rather, that I had never had a father to beget such a child, the that by my means those eyes should overflow their own beauties, then by my means the skie of your vertue should be overclouded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares receaue the least word you speak, with any letfe reverence, then as absolute, and unresistable commandements. But alas, that Tyrant Loue, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reafon) will no way suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am ready to lie vnder your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least commandement: I am not the slave of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect vpon themselues this injurie: Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satis fie this Loues vehement: which (since it grew in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes Philocles fell to so extreame a quaking, and her lively whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a paleness, that Amphitius feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woont to be one of the chiefe firebrands of Cupid) had all the sense of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humble to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure her selfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that the vttter-
most forces he would ever employ to conquer her affection, should be Desire, and Defert. That promise brought Philoclea again to herself, so that slowly lifting up her eyes upon him, with a countenance ever courteous, but then languishing, she told him, that he should do well to do so, if indeed he had ever tasted what true love was: for that where now she did beat him good will, she should (if he took any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her knives, yet the house of Death had so many doors, as she would caselie flie into it, if ever she founde her honor endangered.

Amphialus having the colde ashes of Care cast upon the coales of Desire, leaving some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite upon Philoclea, himselfe indeed a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authority to be but a footestool to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endired, but Amazement uttered, he delivered what had passed betwene him and Philoclea: beseeching her to trie what her persuasions could doo with her, while he gave order for all such things as were necessary against such forces, as he looked dayly Basilius would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiettle him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

CHAP.

O they calling Clinius, and some other of their counsell, advised upon their present affaires. First, he dispatched privat letters to all those principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, who he thought either alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youthlike mindes did fill with unlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an ouer-spended waste, made want a civill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendship; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, reuenge; to the gredie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promises spring of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of Argos: but he was as then to ouer-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the sailes of popular judgemëts, & how few there be
The Countesse of Pembroke's

be, that can discern between true truth and truthlikeness, between showes and substance, he caused a justification of this his action to be written, whereof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probability, might hide indeed the foulenes of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duty which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other duties, since in it selfe it conteines them all, and that for the respect therof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshippes, are to be laide aside, but that even long-helde opinions (rather builded upon a secrete of government, than any groud of truthe) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publique was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordeined. The feeling consideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to Basilius as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, ouer whom Basilius reigned: rather then so to hood-winke himselle with afection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as fro the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especiallie himselfe, who being descended of the Poyall race, and next heire male, Nature had no soner opened his eyes, but that the soyle where-upon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes; which as from
fio his childhood he had euer caried; so now finding that his uncle had not only giue ouer all care of government, but had put it into the hands of Philanax, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, proud, and partial dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest the himselfe) in so vnsit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only dangeroys for their persons, but (if they should be condued to any forraine country) to the whole commonwealth pernicious: that therefore he had brought them into this strôg castle of his, which way, if it might seem strange, they were to consider, that new necelities require new remedies: but there they should be serued & honored as belonged to their greatnes, until by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both private, and publice) advantage be matched, vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be assebled, he were assailed, he would the for his owne defence take armes: desiring all, that either tended the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loued justice, to defend him in this iust actio. And if the Prince should command them otherwife, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was done, was done for his service, howsoeuer he might (deduced by Philanax) interprete of it: he protestit, that whatsoeuer he should doo for his owne defence, should be against Philanax, & no way against Basilius.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and exam-3 L1 ples,
ples, and painted with rhetorical colours, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they preuyled with some of more quicke then sounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolenesse, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he used to weaken the aduerse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to kepe the field) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at left would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therefore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striving to make Art strive with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to undermining force, so to opé assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approchcs, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to the, whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instrumets of mischiese to places, whence the mischiese might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for victuals, as wel for the prouiding that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preferuing it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; spending that first which would keepe left. But wherein he sharpened his wits to the pearcingest point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes
makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Arte of man stood the quintessence, & ruling skill of all prosperous gouvernement, either peaceable, or military) he chose in number as many as without pestring (and so danger of infection) his viuall would seem for two ycare to maintaine, all of hable bodies, and some few of able mindes to direct, not seeking many comman- ders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should haue obeying wills, every one knowing whom he should command, and whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; distributing each office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no loye, danger, nor discipline can suddenly alter an habite in nature. Therefore would he not employ the stil ma to a shifting practife, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his vi- ctuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know the all particularly, & thoroughly, regarding also the constitution of their bodies; some being able better to abide watch- ing, some huger, some labour, making his benefit of each habity & not forcing beyond power. Time to evey thing by just proportio he allotted, & as well in that, as in evey thing els, no small errour winckt at, left greater should be animated. Euen of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly Clinias to haue care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully perfore. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be fowced, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty per- suasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to
The Countesse of Pembroke

flumleat such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller hand; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne invention. But euen then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terour) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his moost hideous presence: him selfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in trauaile, nor speding in diet, then the meanest soldier: his hand and body disdaining no base matters, ner shrinking from the heavy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Loue passing thorow the pikes of Dauger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire; and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to command one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the maruaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his own thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to some thing, as if with the sight of Gorgons head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the vse of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceived him; then would he accuse, and in him selfe condemne all those wits, that dust affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Loue. O, would he say, al you that affect the title of wisdome, by vngratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I
I now piping in a shaddow? or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubt behind me? is not danger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doo I not stonde vpon paine, and travaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes: The more I stirre about vrgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encreas the appetite of my desires. O sweet Philoclea (with that he would cast vp his eies wherein some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselves against they (hould see her) thy heauenly face is my Astronomie; thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: Let me profite therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgives me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doo they threaten this destruction? even him that loves them; and by what means will they destroy, but by loving them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darre with the golde of Cupids arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloued (though hating) Philoclea, how if thou beeest mercifull, hath crueltie stolen into thee? Or how if thou beeest cruel, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill vessell which turns sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace fals vpon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-striken, when her presence gaue him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out.
The Countesse of Pembroke

No other refuge, but the comfort and counsel of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were unperplexed) to vse for his sake the most prevailing manners of intercession.

CHAP. 5.

Surtle Cecropia visites sad Philoclea. The shamelesse Aunts shewed temptations to love and mariage. The modest neeces maidenly resistance.

Ecropla being her sonnes safetie depende thereon, (though her pride much disdained the name of a desire) tooke the charge upon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an vnexpert virgin, who had already with subtiltie and impudencie begun to undermine a monarchy. Therefore, waighing Philoclea resolutions by the counterpease of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make Philoclea receive the poyson distilled in sweete liquour, which she with little disguising had dranke vp thirstily. Therefore she went softly to Philoclea chamber, & peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe Philoclea sitting lowe vpon a cushion, in such a giuen-ouer manner, that one would have thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholie were come there, vnder the ensigne of mishap, to conquer delight, and drive him from his naturall state of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunshine.
And she not taking heed to wipe the tears, they ranne downe vpon her cheeckes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but euen left to a neglected chaunce, which yet could no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Dianie way cast, could loose his squareness.

_Cecropia_ (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What sayes this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? Shall tears take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of _Arcadia_ wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peevish sadness; in sooth it is untimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and see whether it deceu to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will haue these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked vpon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them, & their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yelowe, and make euery bodie woonder at the chaunge, and say, that sure you had vsed some arte before, which nowe you had left: for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde neuer so soone haue beene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your cies: although, I must confesse, those cies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame (answered _Philoclea_) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine cies thus beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (said _Cecropia_)
The Countesse of Pembroke's

if she could see to attire herself, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) unkindnes: you misconster every thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you esteem your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistres: you feare hate, and shall find loue. And truely, I had a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinately melancholy, as that you woo his fellowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staid indeeede, thinking Philoclea would haue had a female inquisitiveness of the matter. But she, who rather wished to vnknowe what she knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed she did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very griefe & feare, would prove her vnappointed executioners. For that (said Ce-ropia) beleue me vpó the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal dager, being brought hither for no other cause, but to preuent such mischifes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, even as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnto me, & let not your mind arme it self with a wilfulness to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason haue his due reward, persuation. Then sweet neece (sai.d she) I pray you presuppose, that now, eué in the midst of your agonies, which you paint vnto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vowes, for a soone & safe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I say) that some heavenly spirit should appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the
the garden, assuring you, that you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soever your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neede) would you refuse to folow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enjoy your ouer-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neede:) but I wil answere for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as mult needs conclude, that such niceness can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulness can haue any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neede) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieuing in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent foorth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiall happines, not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your private choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no small kings daughter, my sonne (I say) farre passing the neerenesse of his kinred, with the neerenesse of good-will, and striving to match your matchlesse beautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me present vnto you the full enjoying of your
your liberty, so as with this gift you will accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will continue his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the matter, but who will erie out the Sun shines: It is so manifest a profit unto you, as the meanest judgment must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpnesse of yours, thereto to be ignorant. Therefore (sweet niece) let your gratefulnes be my intercession, & your gentleness my eloquence, and let me carry comfort to a hart which greatly needs it. Philack. looked upon her, & cast downe her eye again. Aunt (said she) I would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeelde to my cousins vertuous request: for so I contrive of it. But my hart is already set (and staying a while on that word, she brought foorth afterwards) to lead a virgins life to my death: for such a vow I haue in my selfe devoutly made. The heauens preuent such a mishief (said Cecropia.) A vowe, quoth you: no, no, my deere niece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a woman, & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gaue you beautie to moue loue; she gaue you wit to know loue; she gaue you an excellët body to reward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with vnspakeable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiuer, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not impoverish, but enrich the giver. O the sweet name of a mother: O the confort of comfort, to see your children grow vp, in who you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceive, what a hart-tickling joy it is to see your own little ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap, and like little models of your selfe, still carry you about
about them, you would think vnkindnes in your own thoughts, that euer they did rebell against the mean vn-
to it. But percháce I set this blessednes before your cies,
as Captains do victorie before their souldiers, to which
they might come through many paines, grievances & dan-
gers. No, I am cótent you shrinke from this my counsel,
if the way to come vnto it, be not most of all pleasant. I
know not (answered the sweet Philoclea, fearing leaft si-
lence would offend her fullennes) what contentment
you speake of; but I am sure the best you can make of it,
(which is marriage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deer neece
(said Cecropia) how much you are deceiued? A yoke in-
deed we all beare, laid vpó vs in our creation, which by
mariage is not increased, but thus farre eased, that you
have a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy
numbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes
with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace
the orfan-side of my bed, which was wot to be impre-
ted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares ac-
knowldege, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the bani-
ished má hath; who may, if he list, wáder ouer the world,
but is euer restrained fró his most delightful home; that
I haue now such a liberty as the feeld dou hath, which
being first depruied of cies, is then by the falconer cast
off? For beleue me, neece, beleue me, mans experience is
womás best eie-fight. Haue you euer seene a pure Rose-
water kept in a chrital glas, how fine it lokes, how sweet
it mels, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake
the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth
it not imbrace duft, and loose all his former sweetene-
ssē, and fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we haue not the
stay, rather then the restrain of Cristaline mariage.
My hart meltes to thinke of the sweete comfortes,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

In that happy time received, when I had never cause to care, but the care was doubled: when I never rejoiced, but that I saw my joy shine in another's eyes. What shall Hay of the free delight, which the heart might embrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or fear of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then one string make as good musicke as a comfort: she can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the general consideration of marriage doth not so much dislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my fome, I must confess, I see him with a mother's eyes, which if they do not much deceive me, he is no such one, ouer whom Contempt may make any just chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it selfe should carie all comeliness, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues you, who is beloved of others. Drive not away his affection (sweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull and notable a seruant.

Philoclea heard some pieces of her speches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler cober the hearing of a delightfull musicke. For her thoughts had left her cares in that captuitie, and conuiced themselves to behold (with such eies as imagination could lend the) the estate of her Zelmans: for whoso how well she thought many of those sayings might have been vusd with a farre more gratefull acceptance. Therefore lifting not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolute, and desired not to enforme the other, she onely told her, that whilest she was so captiued, she could not conceiue of any such persuasions (though never so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs
needs euen in nature abhor the, which at her libertie, in their owne force of reason, might more preuaile with her: and so faine would haue returned the strength of Cecropias perswasions, to haue procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.

' Fresh motiues to Philoclea.' Cecropias new fetch to at-
tempt Pamela. ' Pamela's prayer,' and Sainct-like gra-
ces in it. ' Her Auntes fruitleles argumentes.'

Neither her wittie wordes in an enemie, nor those wordes, made more than eloquent with passing through such lips, could preuaile in Cecropia, no more then her pers-
swasions coulde winne Philoclea to disauowe her former vowe, or to leaue the prisoner Zelmaie, for the commaundung Amphialus. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunter, they brake of conference. Cecropia sulking vp more and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a vifarde of kindnes, leauing no office unperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her sonnes affection. Whatsoeuer could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfour-
med: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Mu-
sickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorow, and thinke of it with sweetnes; with ditties so sensiblie expressing Amphialus case, that cue-
tie worde, seemed to be but a diversifying of the name of
of Amphialus. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, sent unto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striven with the sumptuosityes of the matter, as much did the invention in the application, contends to have the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, & her perfections; wherein the riches did invoke the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the device did teach the eyes the present miserie of the presenter himselfe awefully serviceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she liued, all meanes used to make knowne, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in loue-knots. But in harte alreadie understanding no language but one, the Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnesse to be in his power: the dittie intended for Amphialus, she translated to Zelmane: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thrall'd obligation: and his service, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobate (as she thought) unto her, her vnworthie estate: that even he that did her service, had authoritie of commanding her, only construing her servitude in his own nature, esteeming it a right, and a right bitter servitude: so that all their shots (how well soever leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her mislike, the Prince Amphialus affectionately languished, & Cecropia spitefullie cunning, disdained at the barrenness of their successse.

Which willingly Cecropia would have reuenged, but that she sawe, her hurt could not be divid'd from her sonnes mischiefe: wherefore, she bethought her selfe...
to attempt Pamela, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon, that her sonnes thoughts would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherfore, giving new courage to her wicked inuentions, and using the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking cauen precepts of prevailing in Pamela, by her sayling in Philocea, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own vngratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listenning at the dore, because that out of the circumstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceau that Pamela did walke vp and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthening her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soever they wrong me, they cannot ouer-master God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no layle barres him out. To whome then else should I sitte, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, eué in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life or all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist, or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shall seem most conuenient. Let not injurie, & Lord, triumph over me, and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine vnjuste enemie the minister of thy Iustice.

But
But yet, my God, if in thy wildome, this be the aptest chastizement for my inexcusable follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my over-hie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld unto thy will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, O Lord, be accepted of thee, since even that proceeds from thee) let me craue, euene by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may give my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confiditely vpon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the overthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praise: let my paine be the sweetnes of their revenge: let them (if so it seem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, O Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And O most gracious Lord (said she) whatsoeuer become of me, preserue the vertuous Musidorus.

The other parte Cecropia might well heare, but this latter prayer for Musidorus, her hartheld it, as so iweel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so hevenly a creature, with such a fervent grace, as if Deuotion had borowed her bodie, to make of it self a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would have thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place among their fellow starres,
stars, her naked hands raising up their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of Zeal, and the left, of Humbleness, which both united themselves to make their suits more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so strange a working power, that even the harde-harted wickednesse of Cecropia, if it founde not a love of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she was put fro the biaste of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at left, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leaing no argument unproved, which might with any force invade her excellent judgement: the justnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely haue amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her believe, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might haue his love which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what danger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept Philoclea in marriage, and so match the next heire apparent, she being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring, how extremely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respect he bare vnto her, & taking vp6 her selfe that she reftrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to Philoclea, so did
The Countesse of Pembrokes

did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at the left awake a kindnes, doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one after knew not how the other was wooed, but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if Philoclea with sweete and humble dealing did auoid their assaults, she with the Maiestie of Vertue did beate them of.

CHAP. 7.

* An Allarme to the Amphialians. * Base cowardise in Clinias ; * braye courage imaged in Amphialus. * His onse with the death of two friendes his foes. * The horroure of Mars - his game. * Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.

Vt this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche vpon the top of the kepee, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would striue to haue clowdes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did appareile it self) was caried aside frō them, the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith the clowdes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne guilding with his beames, it gaue a light delightfull to any, but
to them that were to abide the terror. But the watch gave a quick Alarum to the soldiers within, whom practice already having prepared, began each, with unabashed harts, or at least countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted unto them.

Only Clinius and Amphialus did exceed the bounds of mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For Clinius (who was bold onely in busie whisperings; and euen in that whisperingnes rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it should not be bewrayed, then any way bold, if euer it should be bewrayed) now that the enemy gave a dreadful aspect vnto the castle, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadful expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selye of the burden of feare) did sometimes seyne vnto it selye possibility of let; as the death of Basilius, the discord of the nobility, & (when other cause sayled him) the nature of chaunce servued as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his unassiiled senses, would make himselfe beleue, that he durst do something. But now, that present daunger did display it selye vnto his eye, & that a daangerous doing must be the onely meane to prevent the danger of suffering, one that had marked him: would haue judged, that his eies would haue run into him, & his soule out of him: so unkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdoubted each mans treason,
The Countesse of Pembroke

and conjectured every possibility of misfortune, not only foreseeing likely perils, but such as all the planets together could scarce have conspired: & already began to arm him selve, though it was determined he should take within doores; and while he armed himself, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himself if the enemies wonne the castle. Desirous he was that every body should do valiantly, but himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would have hid his feare; left it should discomfort others: but the more he sought to disguise it, the more the unhappines of a weake broke voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discover him.

But quite contrarily Amphialus, who before the enemies came was carefull, prouidently diligent, and not sometimes without doubting of the issue; now the nearer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both vpon the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boats he had of purpose, and carrying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had vpon the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enimy would attempt; because it was a passage, which commanding all that side of of that country, & being lost would stop vietuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle: & in that fortresse having some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & fye hundred footmen, embushed his footme in the falling of a hill, which was ouer shadowed with a wood, he with his horseme went
a quarter of a mile further, aside had of which he might perceive the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where best to encampe themselfes.

But as if the sight of the enimie had been a Magnes stone to his courage he could not containe himself, but shewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his solldiers, vied that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully following an example of such authority, they made the earth to groane vnder their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with the, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngest brother to Philanax, whose face as yet did not bewray his sex, with so much as shew of haire, of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing why to seare, full of jollitie in conversation, and lately growne a Louer. His name was Agenor, of all that armie the most beautifull; who hauing ridden in sportfull conversation among the foremost, all armed sauing that his beauer was vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, seing Amphialus come a pretty way before his company, neither staying the commandement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, let spurs to his horse, & with youthfull bravery casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carrying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But Amphialus launce was already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of death against the head of this young Gentleman, when Amphialus perceyuing his youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that faire
The Countesse of Pembroke

nakedness, and let his staff fall to Agenors vamplate; so as both with braue breaking should hurtlesse haue performed that match, but that the pittlesse launce of Amphialus (angry with being broken) with an unlucky counterbuile full of unsparing splinters, lighted upon that face farre fitte for the combats of Venus; getting not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leaving fearfully any tokens of his former beautie: but his hâds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the saddle, he fell sidewise from the horse. Which sight comming to Leontius, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried vnto him to stay, when he saw him begunne his careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or revenge of the other, helde as then the louetraightie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and his hande to his enimie, so wrongly-conforted a power could not resist the ready minded force of Amphialus: who perceiving his il-directed direction against him, so paide him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finish both their loues and lives together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either side: where after the terrible salutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of handes was with sharpe weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did itaine themselves in bloud; some flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heaven, because they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the sworde, or by some heauy mase, or bin-ting axe; which hunting still the weakest chase, sought ever
ever to light there, where smallest resistance might worse
preuat mischief. The clashing of armour; and crushing
of staves; the iufling of bodies, the resounding of
blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke,
which was beautified with the griselinesse of wounds,
the rising of dust, the hideous falles, and groans of the
dying. The verie horses angrie in their maisters anger,
with loue and obedience brought forth the effects
of hate and resistance, and with minds of servitude, did
as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade vnder their
dead maisters, whose vnknightly wounds had unjust-
ly punished for a faithful dutie. Some lay vpon their
Lorde by like accidents, and in death had the honour
to be borne by them, who in life they had borne. Some
hauing loft their commanding burthens, ranne scatte-
red about the field, abashed with the madnessse of man-
kinde. The earth it selfe (woont to be a buriall of men)
was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the
face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whom
Death had come masked in diverse manners. In one
place lay disinherited heades, dispossetted of their na-
rural signories: in an other whole bodies to see to,
but that their harts wont to be bound all over so cloe,
were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others,
fowler deaths had ouglily displayed their trayling
guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers yet moued,
as if they would feele for him that made them feele:
and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by be-
ing discharged of their burthen, were growne heauier.
But no swordes payed so large a tribute of soules to
the eternall Kingdome, as that of Amphitryon, who like
a Tigre, from whome a companie of Wearltes did
Mm 4 fecke,
The Countesse of Pembroke

Feck to raise a newe gotten pray; so he (remembring they came to take away Philoclea) did labour to make valure, strength, hatred, and choller to answere the proportion of his love, which was infinit.

There died of his handes the olde knight Eschylus, who though by yeares might well have beene allowed to vsue rather the exercize of wisedome, then of courage; yet hauing a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, he ever tooke the summons of Time in leaft, or else it had so creepingly stollen vpon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forwarde in enterprizes, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecy had beene tolde him, that he shoulde die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the iesse the arme of an enemie. But nowe, when Amphialius sworde was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede, seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in his armes, till a pitilefs fouldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and sonne become twinnes in their never againe dying birth. As for Drialus, Memnon, Nisius and Policrates, the first had his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the seconde had met with the same Prophet that olde Eschylus had, and hauing founde manie of his speeches true, beleued this to, that he should never be killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemie, no man more suspicous of his friends: so as he seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to sleepe,
such guards he would set about his person; yet mistrusting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But nowe Amphiatus helped to unriddle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supplie, pressed him to death. Nifus grasping with Amphiatus, was with a short dagger slaine. And for Policrates, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of punishment, Amphiatus with a memorable blowe strake of his head, where, with the conuulsions of death setting his spurre to his horse, he gaue so braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a proverbe, that Policrates was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his handes as Pheibius did: for he having long loued Philoclea, though for the meanenesse of his estate he neuer durft reveale it, nowe knowing Amphiatus, setting the edge of a riutall vpon the sward of an enemie, he helde strong fight with him. But Amphiatus had alreadie in the daungerous left places disarmed him, and was lifting vp his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O Philoclea (said he) yet this ioyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of Philoclea first staied his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for Philoclea, but turned his sward another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore Pheibius, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base fouldiour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through.

CHAP.
The Comte of Vmbrok's CHARs.

The Basilians reembattelld first by Philanax, then by the blakke Knight. Ismenus slaine by Philanax. Philanax captur'd by Amphialus. The blakke Knights exploits. His encounter with Amphialus, parted by a by-blow. The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blakke Knight.

Hus with the well-followed valure of Amphialus were the other almocht ouerthrowne, when Philanax (who was the marshal of the army) came in, with newe force renuing the almost decayed courage of his soldiery. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he himselfe thrust into the presse, and making force and furie waite vpon discretion and gouvernement, he might seeme a braine Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to joine courage with cunning. The Fortune (as if she had made chafes inow of the one side of that bloody Teniscourt) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of Amphialus followers, as before had done of Philanaxis; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leaving them to keepe it, who had lost themselves in keeping it. Then thosc that had killed, inherited the lot of thosc that had bene killed; and cruel Death made the lie quietly togither, who most in their liues had sought to disquiet each other; and many
many of those first overthrown, had the comfort to see
the martherers outrun them to Charon's ferrie.

Codrus, Ctesiphon, and Milo, lost their lives upon Philan-
ax: his sword; but no bodies else was more pitied, then
of a yong esquire of Amphialus, called Ismenus, who ne-
uer abandoning his maister, and making his tender age
aspire to actes of the strongest manhood, in this time
that his side was put to the worst, and that Amphialus-
his value was the onely stay of them from deliuering
themselves ouer to a shamefull flight, he sawe his ma-
sters horse killed under him. Whereupon, asking no ad-
quise of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he
presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the
helpe of some choise and faithfull servants, gat his ma-
fter vp. But in the multitude that came of either side,
some to succour, some to saue Amphialus, he came un-
der the hande of Philanax: and the youth perceyuing
he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (de-
fious euë to change his life for glorie) strake at him, as
he rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that
made Philanax turn towards him; but seing him so yëg,
& of a most lovely presence, he rather toke pity of him;
meaning to make him prisoner, & the to giue him to his
brother Agenor to be his companion, because they were
not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance.
But as he looke down vpoun him with that thought, he
spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend Leontius by
him, euë almost under the squiers feet. The foroing not
only his owne sorow, but the past-côfort sorow, which
he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many
tears, & misgiuing sighs had suffered him to go with his
elder brother Philanax) blotted out all figures of pitie
out
The Countesse of Pembrokes

out of his minde, and putting foorth his horse (while fmenus doubled two or three more valiant, then well let blowes) saying to himfelfe, Let other mothers bewaile an untimely death as well as mine, he thrust him through. And the boy fearce though beautiful; & beautiull, though dying, notable to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could refisting Death, which might feeme vnwilling to; fo long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

3 Philanax himfelfe could haue wished the blow ungiuen, when he faw him fall like a faire apple, which some vn courteous bodie (breaking his bowe) fhould throwe downe before it were ripe. But the cafe of his brother made him forget both that, and himfelfe: fo as ouerhaftily pressing vppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne fouldiers could relieue him, were being ouerthrowne by Amphi- alan, Amphi alan glad of him, kept head againft his enemies while some of his men caried away Philanax.

But Philanax-his men as if with the losse of Philanax they had loft the fountaine of their valure, had their courages fo dried vp in feare, that they began to let honouer at their backes, and to vfe the vertue of pacience in an untimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horfe, more afraid of the fprurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes could make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing, fo far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him fuch authoritie, that though they of whose fide he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was
it was fittt to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the Amphialians blood-erie for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his judgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne judgement went still before it. There died of his hand, Surpedon, Plisdonax, Strophilus, and Hippolitus, men of great profe in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard of Amphialus. But while they fought to saue him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. The flew he Megalus, who was a little before proude, to see himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that Crueltie dooth neuer enjoy a good cheape glorie. After him sent he Palemon, who had that daye vowed (with foolish brauerie) to be the death of tennie: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began also to change the Hewe of the battailes. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so braue-lye with rich furniture, guiltc swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce leasure to be afraide: But now all vniversally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, took away the malke, and sette foorth Horror in his owne
The Countesse of Pembroke's

owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be
dreadfull to Amphialus his undismayable courage,
nor yet seeme ougly to him, whole truely-affected
minde, did still paint it ouer with the beautie of Philo-
clea. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled
with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woor-
thie subject to exercise his courage, fought out this
newe Knight, whom he might easlie finde: for he,
like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neigh-
bours houses, to make himselfe the better prospeete,
so had his sworde made him so spartious a roome, that
Amphialus had more cause to wonder at the finding,
then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirr'd hate in
him, to see how much harme he did to the one side,
provoked as much emulation in him, to perceave
how much good he did to the other side. Therefore,
they approaching one to the other, as in two beauti-
full folkes, Loue naturally stirr's a desire of ioyning,
so in their two courages Hate stirr'd a desire of triall.
Then began there a combatte betwenee them, worthy
to haue had more large listes, and more quiet behol-
ders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the birte of
Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well
see, the desire to overcome, made them not forget how
to overcome: in such time & proportion they did em-
ploy their blowes, that none of Ceres seruaunts could
more cunningly place his staile: while the lefte foote
spurre set forwarde his owne horfe, the right sette back-
ward the contrarie horfe, even sometimes by the ad-
vantagge of the enemes legge, while the lefte hande
(like him that heide the sterne) guyded the horfes obe-
dient courage: All done in such order, that it might
seeme
feeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who sent wife and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well gouerned partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarted, the lese they felt the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke profe, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde feeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Gouvernour of Amphialus, alwayes a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giving a sore wounde to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe flewe his horse vnde him. Amphialus cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stande now like a priuate souldier, setting your credite vpon particular fighting, while you may see Basilus with all his hoste, is getting betweene you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemie was beginning to encompass him about, and stoppe his returne: and therefore causing the retreite to be sounded, his Gouvernour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte him selfe still hindmoste, as if hee had stoode at the gate of a flue, to lette the streame goe, with such proportion, as shoulde feeme good vnto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the sworde could be bite of Philocles Louter. The other partie being forie for the losse of Philanax, was yet forrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he hauing gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding him selfe
The Countesse of Pembroke's

fore hurt, and not desirous to be knowne, had in the
time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his
thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde reuenge. But Basilius hauing attempted in vaine to barre
the late returne of Amphialus, encamped himselfe as
strongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare
the joy was made in the towne by his owne subiectes,
that he had that day sped no better. For Amphialus (be-
ing well beloued of that people) when they sawe him
not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his
youth setting a flourishing shew upon his worthinesse,
and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

CHAP. 9.

The Looke-diminishing dreame of Amphialus song to Philo-
clea. Philanax his captiuitie, and deaths-doome, for
Philocleas sake turned to life and libertie. His loyall an-
swer of his Lords intents. Cecropias artes to perswade
the sisters.

But the first thing Amphialus did, be-
ing returned, was to visithe Philoclea,
and first presuming to cause his
dremae to be song vnto her (which
he had seen the night before he fell
in loue with her) making a fine boy
he had, accorded a prettie dolefullnes
vnto it. The song was this.

Now was our heavinly vauite depruied of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night

Did
Did light those beameye stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enioy'd that firee quickning sparke
(Which life is cld) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting use of eyes their eyes began to cloze:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carfull musing plate)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When i, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did give
My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet live,
Whose braines brose not in woes, nor breifs with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, where to their minds aspire,
Who under courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those captiving snares,
Which beauly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,
As tender conscience might with furious panges assaulte.
But like the feeble flower (whose stakke cannot sustaine
His weighty top) his top doth downeward drooping lean:
Or as the silly birde in well acquainted nest
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to rest:
So I in simple course, and unentangled minde
Did suffer droustie lids mine eyes then cleare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule observe,
Which senses vp doth shut the senses to preserue.
They first their use forgot, then fancies lost their force;
Till deadly sleepe at length possesse my liuing coarse.
A liuing coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heaully stiffe no mortal change doth blind)
Flew vp with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;
And having plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Me thought, nay, sure I was, I was in fairest wood
Of Samothea lande, a lande, which whilom stood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fed
On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull sense led.
Her gisies my study was, her beauties were my storie:
My woorke her workses to know, her dwelling my resorte.
Those lampes of heau'ny fire to fixed motion bound,
The euer-turning sheares, the neuer-mouing ground;
What essence det'nie bath, if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth doo flowe:
What life it is, and how that all these lines doo gather,
With outward makers force, or like an inward father.
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straine my single
Then void of sincerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes
When it blowne downe with wind a fall of ruine takes)
(Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,
Or canons thunder-like, all shot together, lende)
The Moone a sunder rent, whereout with sodaine fall
(More swift then falcons stoope to feeding, Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by douses and sparrows guided:
Whose stormelike course fai'd not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But straith there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
They seemed to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Strange were the Ladies weares, yet more unfit then strange:
The first with cloth s tuckt up as Nymphes in woods do range,
Tuckt up even with the knees, with bowe and arrowes prest:
Her right arme naked was, discoverd was her brest.

But
But beauty was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeare.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As fluffe meant for the sale set out to glaring howe)
A wanton womans face, and with curl'd knots had twinde
Her baire, which by the helpe of painters cunning shinde.
When such guests did see come out of such a house, 
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought forthe a
But walking forth the first thus to the second saide,
Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obside.
Those names abash'd me much, whose those great names I hard:
Although their same (me seem'd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus musing stood, Diana cal'd to her
The waiting Nymphes, a Nymphes that did excell as farr
All things that earst I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother bight, or else their silly seed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a sweet consent
Of all those Graces giestes the heavens haue ever lent.
And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.
But cal'd she came apace, a pace wherein did move
The bande of beauties all, the little world of Loue.
And bending humbled eyes (be eyes the Sunne of light)
She waited mistress will: who thus disclous'd her spright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proffe I finde,
To onely thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace
Vs io attend, in this most private time and place.
Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
Of that thou seest: close up in secret knot thy will.
She answer'd was with looke, and well per, r'm'd bebest:
And Mira I admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.

Arcadia. Lib. 3. 274
The Countesse of Pembroke's

But thus with firefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
Diana did begin. What would me to intune
Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony sphære,
And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what discord long hath raign'd
Betwixt vs two; how much that discord soule hath flain'd
Both our estates, whilst each the other did deprave,
Proofe speaks too much to vs that feeling triall haue.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:
Our offerings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displac'd
Is this the fruites of strife? those thousand churches bie,
Those thousand altars fare now in the dust to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserue:
No knees once bow'd, forsooth, for them they say we serve.
Are we their servants grown? no doubt a noble playe:
Celestiall powers to wormes, loues children serve to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall spight a straining passion fed.
But let vs wiser be, and what soule discorde brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares do not require: you see we both doe feele
The weakening worke of Times for ever-whirling wheele.
Although we be divines, our grandfire Saturne is
With ages force decay'd, yet once the heavens was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill
Our young yeares to renew (for so he faith he will)
Let us a perfect peace betwixt vs two resolue:
Which lest the runuous want of government dissolve;
Let one the Princeesse be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.
And let her have the giftes that should in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chastenesse fully raigne.
So as if I prewile, you give your gifts to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth onely this, which of us two is she,
To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned unto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Who may his doubt discern: for better witt, then lot
Recommeth us: in us fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him give, when both be beheld:
And be it as he faith, Venus was glad to heare
Such proffer made, which she well shewd with smiling cheer
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
She had chiere Goddes in beautie overcome.
And smirky thus can I say. I never sought debate
Diana deare, my minde to love and not to hate
Was ever apt: but you my pastimes did despise.
I never spited you, but thought you owenwise.
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
And so most ready am this meanes of peace to trie.
And let him be our judge: the lad doth please me well.
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
(For both togetherspake, each loth to be behinde)
That they by solemnne oth their Deities would binde
To stand unto my will: their will they made me know.
I that was first aghast, when first I saw their shewe:
Now bolder made, waxt proud, that I such sway must beare:
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reverence feare.
And having bound them fast by Styx, they should obeye
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.
How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:
Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.
The Countesse of Pembroke's

To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira I did point)
The crowne above you both for ever I appoint.
I would have spoken out but out they both did crye.
Fie, fie, what have we done? ungodly rebell fie.
But now we needs must yeeld, to that our others require.
Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire
Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde.
That thou full oft shalt wish thy judging eyes were blinde.
Nay then (Diana said) the chastenesse I will give
In ashes of despaire (though burnt) shall make thee live.
Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beams shine in her face
That thou shalt never dare seek helpe of wretched case.
And with that cursed curse away to heaven they fled,
First hauing all their gifts upon faire Mira spred.
The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd
And found with deadly feare that all my siewes shak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,
That things erst unseen should first in dreaming see?
And thou O traytour SLEEPE, made for to be our rest,
How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?
O coward Cupid thus dost thou thy honour keepe,
Wnarmde (alas) vnwares to take a man asleepe?

Laying not only the conquests, but the hart of the conquerour at her feet. *** But she receiuing him after her woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise vnmooved) maner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but a pleasaunt monument of a dolefull buriall: Joy it selfe seeming bitter vnto him, since it agreed not to her taste.

Therefore, still crauing his mothers helpe to persuade her, he himselfe sent for Philanax vnfo him, whom he
he had not only long hated, but now had his hate greatly increased by the death of his Squire Philemæus. Besides he had made him as one of the chief causes that moved him to this rebellion, and therefore was inclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrew the handes of his accomplices by making them guilty of such a trespass) in some formall sort to cause him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other, who long had hated Philanax, onely because he was more worthy to be loued then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the reason of each speaker, Philoclea comming to knowledge of the hard plight wherein Philanax stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appointed to waite vpon her, to goe in her name, and beseech Amphialus, that if the loue of her had any power of perfwasion in his minde, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment, vpon Philanax. This message was deliuered euon as Philanax was entring to the presence of Amphialus, comming (according to the warning was given him) to receyue a judgement of death. But when he with manfull resolution attended the fruite of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that shoulde die in so good a cause; Amphialus turned quite the fourme of his pretended speech, and yeelded him humble thankes, that by his means he had come to that happinesse, as to receive a commandement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gave him libertie to returne in safetie whither he would.
would quitting him, not only of all former grudge, but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship, and service: only desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent of Basilius his proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (answered Philanx) if there were any such knowne to me, secrete in my maisters counsaile, as that the renealing thereof might hinder his good successe, I shoulde loathe the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith; and woulde thinke the iust name of a traitour a harde purchase of a fewe yeares living. But since it is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of priuie practise, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale against you, I will not stroke in fewe wordes to make your required declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement, both Basilius and Gynecia were, when they mist their children and Zelmane. Sometimes apt to suspect some practise of Zelmane, because she was a straunger, sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreased, then any way satisfied, by Mis: who (being founde, almost deade for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home wordes, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to knowledge where they were, with Amphialus his owne letters sent abroad to procure confederates in his attempts. That Basilius his purpose was neuer to leaue the siefe of this towne, till he had taken it, and revenged the injurie done vnto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiant
valiant men he had to deale withall in the town: that he had sent order, that supplies of soulidours, pioners, and all things else necessarie, should be brought vnto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde Philanax) let me nowe, hauing receyued my life by your grace, let me giue you your life and honour by my counsaile, protesting vnto you, that I cannot choose but love you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgie, as his power is able to conquire. Your fault past is excusable, in that Loue perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not urge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantly by courteous, which you can neuer assuredly enjoy by violence. One might easilie haue scene in the chare of Amphialus, that disdainsfull choller woulde faine haue made the aunswere for him, but the remembranoue of Philoclea servued for forcible barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: so as he saide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he lifted, presently. Philanax glad to receyue an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his favourablie convoy ou of the towne; and so departed, not hauing visited the Princesse, thinking it might be offensive to Amphialus, and no way fructfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieued.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet together, or to haue conference with any other, but such as Cecropis had alreadie framed to sing all her songs to her tune, she her selfe omitting no day, and catching
ching holde of eucric occasion to mooue forwarde her lonnes desire, and remoue their knowne resolutions: ving the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne first, the other shoulde (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handling was diuerse, according as she save their humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day having vsed long speech to Philoclea, amplifying not a little the great duetifulnesse her sonne had shewed in deliuering Philanax: of whome she coulde get no aunswere, but a silence seald vp in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resistance, and humblenesse.

CHAP. 10.


Ecropia threatening in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her sister Pamela: who that day hauing weared her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome she accounted her iaylours, was woorking vpon a purse certaine Roses and Lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke
worke, one might see she had borow'd her wittes of the her needle: which with so proper a maner made his care 
for to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it selfe, would haue bene left to haue gone forward such a mi-
tires, but that it hoped to return the ceward very quick-
ly againe: the cloth looking with many eies vpon her, & 
louingly embracing the wounds she gaue it: the sheares 
also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne to 
short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it 
off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making 
of a Rose with her hand, she would in an instant make 
Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to have their 
whitenes, rather of the hande that made them, then of 
the matter whereof they were made; and that they 
grew there by the Sunes of her eyes, & were refreshed 
by the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an 
vunwares sigh might belowe vpon them. But the colours 
for the grounde were so well chosen, neither sullenly 
darke, nor glaringly lightsome, and so well proportion-
ed, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was 
but to serve for an ornament of the principall worke; 
that it was not without maruaile to see, howe a minde 
which could cast a carelesse semblant vpon the greatest 
conflicts of Fortune, coulde commande it selfe 
to take care for so small matters. Neither had she neg-
lected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had ben her mariadge time to Affliction, she rather seemed to 
remember her owne worthinesse, than the vnworthi-
nessse of her husband. For well one might perceyue 
she
The Countesse of Pembrokes

She had not rejected the counsell of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so diverse from her sister, (who rather suffered sorrow to distress it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any entertainment of so vn-welcome a guest) made Cecropia take a suddaine assurance of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of Pamela: thinking (according to the squaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold some proue a signe of an vnrefusing harborage. Animated wherewith, she late downe by Pamela: and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking upon the worke, Full happie is he (saide she) at least if he knew his owne happiness, to whom a purse in this manner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall haue cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be pursed vp in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (sain Pamela halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres beleue, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but euene as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide Cecropia) of Beautie, to woorke vnwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (saide Pamela) I neuer thought till nowe, that this outward glasse, intitled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a plea-uant mixture of natural colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beauties haue, but euene stones and trees many of them
them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (answered Cecropia) have some portion of it, takes not away the excellency of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that even those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them one ly is given the judgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seems, that our sex hath the preheminence, so that in that preheminence, Nature counteruailles all other liberalities, wherein she may be thought to haue deale more favourably towards mankind. How doo men crowne (thynke you) them selves with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they would haue perswaded; and see, a faire woman shall not onely command without authoritie, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attenti on, for their owne eyes will chaine their cares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquer; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so command it, but because they become lawes to the selues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare, or by Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring forth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and she neede not seekke offensive, or defensive force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shields, and tenne thousand vnueuitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the
the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gift, on whom focuer the heauens (therein most nigardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to vfe it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preferuing; since that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also derive the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said Pamela) I feare me you will make me not onely thinke my selfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairnes a matter of greafer valem then heretofore I could imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceaued these conquests you speake of, rather to proceed from the weake-nes of the conquered, then from the strength of the co-querer power: as they say, the Cranes ouerthrowe whole batailles of Pygmee, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are Pygmee: and that we see, young babes think babies of woonderful excel- lencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your eldery earres, and abler judgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearne, according to the ecellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we account precious) euer to suffer it to be defiled.

Desfile: (said Cecropia) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deferve so soule a title. My meaning is to ioyn your beautie to loye; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beautie nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it. and therefore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preferuing of it: for Beautie goes away, decoured by Time, but where remains
remains it ever flourishing, but in the hart of a true lover: And such a one (if ever there were any) is my son: whose love is so subiect ed vnto you, that rather then breed any offence vnto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his love (answer'd Pamela) better pleaseth me then that: but as I haue ofte answered you, so, resolutely I say vnto you, that he must get my parents consent, & then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I should offend God. O sweet youth (said Cecropia) how untrimely subiect it is to devotion? No, no sweet niece, let vs old folks think of such precise consideratiōs, do you enjoy the heauen of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good houseolders, which spend those things that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enjoy that, which else will bring an ouer-late repentance, which your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, deck ing it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of Au tumn? what lesson is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like April? Let not some of the, for whom already the grave gapeth, & perhaps envy the felicity in you, which theselues cannot enjoy, per suade you to lose the hold of occasiō, while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be take: which if it be not now taken, will never hereafter be ouertaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & will you suf fer your beauty to be hid in the wrinckles of his peni sh thoughts? If he be penshit (said Pamela) yet is he my fa ther, & how beautiful fucuer I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no judge of his imperfections.

These
These often replies upon conscience in Pamela, made Cecropia think, that there was no righter waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to be void of purpose, so if she could make her lesse feeling of those heavenly conceits, that then she might easlie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the uttermost of her mischievous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare niece, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might preuaile therein)how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I haue of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Deuotion, indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes haue found, to holde mans witte in well doing: For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doe know) they are most glad of: So are these bugbeares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serue as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not be helde vp by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should loue Vertue seruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but even for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearfull ignorance, was the first inuenter of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angrie body aboue, that spake so lowde: and euere the lesse they did per-
perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Whereof they knew no cause that grewre streight a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but upon particular accidents, the vnierfaltie being alwaies one. Yestreday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, sauing only Man, who while by the pregneancie of his imagination he striues to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne natural felicitie. Be wise, and that wisedome shalbe a God unto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) aboue, are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our actions; caries asmuch reason as if slyes should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them slyes nimbleste.

She would haue spoken further to haue enlarged & confirmed her discourse; but Pamela (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glistered forth beames of disdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, vnworthy to breathe, that doest not acknowledge the breath-giuer; most vnworthy to have a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the euerlafting gouvemour? Would you haue an inconstant God, since we counta
man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seen you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seen by so wicked eyes, as yours: which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport-sake willingly hood-wincke themselues to receaue blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bodie else here to judge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captiuitie, that my eares shall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You faie, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true & liuely deuotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we liue, hath not his being by Chaunce: on which opinion it is beyond meruaile by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things unsufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not have happened; or els it did not happen; and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, the not being. And as absurf it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was derived fro Chaunce: for Chaunce could never make all things of nothing: and if there were substaunces before, which by chaunce should meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitt of absurdities. For then those substaunces must needs have bene from euer, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should
should 

might be the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all things, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequent; threfore in reason we must needs know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely vpwarde, and so never haue mett to haue made vp this goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heauen) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular gouernement to establish this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and ethereall partes should in their townes-house set downe the boundes of each ones office; then consider what follows: that there must needs haue bene a wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde haue fought each others ruine, then haue servued as well comforted partes to such an vnexpress:
able harmonic. For that contrary things should meete to make vp a perfection without a force and Wisedome above their powers, is absolutely impossible; vntles you will fliie to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniversall Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together of these many partes to such an excellent unitie. If you meane a Nature of wisedome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to observe so iust a daunce, and yet understandes no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones, as in a lesse matter, when we say one kingdom which conteines many citties, or one cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the vnnder ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisedome) cannot by nature regarde to any preference but of themselues: no more we see they doo, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a conspired unitie: but that a right heavenly Nature indeed, as it were unnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an unitie many contraries shalproceede & still kept in an unitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an unitie
rie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of judgement from among them, then (if so earthly a minde can lift it selfe vp so hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing whereto you giue the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is so to be, as not to enjoy his owne being. I will not here call all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeldes not most evident evidence of the unspeakeablebleness of that Wisedome: each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preservation: so proper effects of judgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madde furie can ever so enueagle any conceipte, as to see our mortall and corruptible selues to have a reason, and that this vniversalitie (whereof we are but the left pieces) should be utterly depoide thereof: as if one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This hearde I once alleged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being druen to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were void: he sought (not able to answere directly) to shifte it of in this sort: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde must haue in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be learned; since that was in vs so commendable: wretched foole, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are prayset, because they helpe our want,
The Countesse of Pembroke

want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulness. This worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisedome, which goouernes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as undoubtedly he is, or the soule and goouernour thereof, most certaine it is that whether he goouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his goouernement. And if his power be aboue all things, then consequently it must needes be infinite, since there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needes be boundlesse, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he shouulde not know how to vse; the unfeasiblenesse whereof I think even you can conceaue: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of flies (which you with so vnfauerie skorne did ieft at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needes his goodnesse and justice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes of power, & knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring forth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preseruation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man; and sees therein the deepest dissembled thoughts, nay fees
fees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is just to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his justice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canst not keepe thy tinnenesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of everlastinge and vnreoueable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that power by seeing it, when thou shalt see his wisedome in the manifesting thy ougly shamelesnesse, and shalt onely perceiue him to haue bene a Creator in thy destruction.

CHAP. ii.


Thus she faide, thus she ended, with so faire a maistrie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might seeme to haue authoritie ouer tyrannie: so fowly was the filthinesse of impietie discouered by the shining of her vnstained goodnes, so farre, as either Cecropia law indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her cies vntrue judges of their natural object, that
there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a lu-
strate to her perfections. But Cecropia,like a Batte (which
though it haue eyes to discerne that there is a Sunne,
yet hath so euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the
Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as
great persons are woont to make the wrong they haue
done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her know-
ledge rose to no higher point, but to enuie a wor-
thier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more
to hate, the more she founde her enemie provided a-
gainst her. Yet all the while she spake (though with
eyes cast like a horse that would strike at the stirrup,
and with colour which blushed through yellownesse)
she spake rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather
muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickednesse in
herselfe, brought forth disdainefull pride to resift cun-
ning dissimulation; so as, saying little more vnto her,
but that she shoulde haue leysure inough better to be-
thinke herselfe, she went away repining, but not repen-
ting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her sonnes
ouer-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him
forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, determi-
ning to deal with neither of them both any more in
maner of a suiter; for what maestie of vertue did in the
one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But find-
ing her sonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation,
and execution of sorrowe vpon himselfe, she sought
to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of com-
forte, who (having this inward ouerthrow in himselfe)
was the more vexed, that he could not utter the rage
thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For Basilius taught by the lafte dayes triall, what
daungorous
daungerous effectes chosen courages can bring forth, rather vfed the spade, then the sword; or the sword, but to defende the spade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caryed before him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answe-ring the other, in such fort, as it was a prettie consider-ation in the discipline of warre, to see building vfed for the instrument of ruine, and the assayler entrenched as if he were besieged. But many sallies did Amphialus make to hinder their woorking. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him finde, that if by the aduaun-tage of place, fewe are able to defende themselves from manie, that manie must needs haue power, (making themselves strong in seate) to repell fewe; referring the revenge rather to the ende, then a pre-sent requital. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, eche side having a strong retirening place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great suc-cesse.

Which euerie way was a tedious conbiber to the im-pacient courage of Amphialus: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diversie, both strangers, and subiects, as well of princely, as noble houses, the gallant Phalan tus, who restrayned his sportfull delightes as then, to serue Basilius, (whome he honoured for receyued honours) when he had spent some time in considering the Arcadian manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of
of government, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and had satisfied his mind in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helps, and furnishing ones selfe, which Basilius orders could deliver unto him, his yong spirites (weary of wanting cause to be weary) desired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by some private acte, since the publique policie restrayned him; the rather, because his olde mistresse Artesia might see, whome she had so lightly forfaken: and therefore demanding and obteyning leaue of Basilius, he caused a Heralde to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable meslage, and so sent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of Amphialus; who understanding thereof, caused him both safely, and courteously to be brought into his presence: who making lowly reverence vnto him, presented his Letters, desiring Amphialus that whatsoever they conteyned, he woulde consider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. Amphialus with noble gentlenesse assured him both, by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which answered for him, that his revenge, whencesoever, should fort unto it selfe a higher subject. But opening the Letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

4 Phalantus of Corinthe, to Amphialus of Arcadia, sendeth the greeting of a hatelesse enemie. The liking of martiall matters without anie mislike of your person, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your besiegers: where languishing
thing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my minde with some exercise of armes, which might make knowne the doers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his Loue, well armed, on horsebacke, with launce, and sworde, will winne another, or loose himselfe, to be a prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne rising, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furnished. The place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake, because it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as that the Ladies may haue the pleasure of seeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Castell, I desire no better securitie, then the promise I make to my selfe of your vertue. I attende your aunswere, and wish you such successe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iust, then in mainteyning wrong by much violence.

Ampialus read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking but a little with himselfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunswere.

Ampialus of Arcadia, to Phalantus of Corinth, wisheth all his owne wishes, sauing those which may be hurtful to another. The matter of your letters so fit for a worthy minde, and the manner so fitable to the noblenesse of the matter, give me cause to thinke howe happie I might accounte my selfe, if I could get
The Countesse of Pembroke's

get such a friend, who esteeme it no small happiness
to haue mette with so noble an enemie. Your chal-
lenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place,
and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any
treacherie (having no hostage woorthy to counter-
uaile you) take my woorde, which I esteeme above
all respectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight,
but not your hart to malice; since true value needes no
other whetstone, then desire of honour.

Hauing writte and sealed his letter, he deliuered it
to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine
from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And so
with safe convoy sent him away fromout his City: and
he being gone, Amphialus sowed unto his mother,
and some other of his chiefe Counsellours, what he
had recyued, and howe he had aunswered: telling
them withall, that he was determined to aunswer the
challenges in his owne person. His mother with prays-
ers authorized by motherly commaundement; his
olde gouernour with persuasions mingled with re-
prehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of
a private fighter, then of a wise Generall) Clinias with
falling downe at his fecte, and beseeching him to re-
member, that all their liues depended vppon his safe-
tie, fought all to diffuade him. But Amphialus (whose
hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enfla-
med with affection) made an imperious resolution
cutte off the tediousnesse of replyes, giuing them in
charge, what they shoule doo vppon all occasi-
ions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if other-
wise then well happened vnto him: onely desiring
his
his mother, that she would bring Philoclea to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discern the combat. And so, as soon as the morning began to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himself chose out a horse, whom (though he was near twenty yeere old) he preferred for a piece of sure service, before a great number of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dauled thick with black spots; his forhead marked with a white starre; to which, in all his bodie there was no part suitable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde enamelled, enriched with precious stones: his furniture was made into the fashion of the branches of a tree, from which the leaves were falling; and so artificiallie were the leaves made, that as the horse moved, it seemed indeed that the leaves wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did bear the straw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames daarked, as when they newlie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the Torpedo fishe. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squiere (whom he had taken since the death of Ismenus) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bish, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vittermost both of launce and sword.
The Countesse of Pembroke

and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no access to it, but by water: there could no secrete trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might have time inough to succour their party.

But there he found Phalantus, alredy waiting for him upon a horse, milke white, but that up on his shoulder and withers, he was fretted with red staines, as when a few strawberies are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and tail to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendering one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there for the boffe, brought foorth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so lively, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it seamed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes ( proportionately deliucred ) guilde in most places. His shield was beautified with this devide; a grayhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not whé it takes it. The word was, The glorie,not the pray.

But as soone as Amphialus landed, he sent his squire to Phalantus, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. Phalantus anwered, that his answere now must be in the langauge of launces; & so each attended the warning of the trupets, which were to found at the appointment of foure judg-
ges, who with consideration of the same, had divested
the ground. *Phalantus*—his horse young, and feeling the
youth of his master, stood corsetting; which being
well governed by Phalantus, gave such a glittering grace,
as when the Sunne shines upon a waning water. *Am-
phialus*—horse stood panting upon the ground, with his
further foot before, as if he would for his master's cause
begin to make himselfe angry; till the trumpet sounded
 together. Together they set spurre to their horses, to-
gether took their launces from their thighes, conviected
them vp into their restes together, together let them
sink down, so as it was a delectable sight, in a dan-
gerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there
was so perfected agreement, in so mortall disagreement:
like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their hor-
ses keeping an even line their masters had skilfully al-
lotted unto them; passed one by another without en-
countring, although either might feel the angry breath
of other. But the staues being come to a just descent,
but even when the mark was ready to meet them, *Am-
phialus* was runne through the vamplate, and vnder the
anne: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it seemed to
the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Pha-
lantus* just upon the gorget, so as he battred the lamms
thereof, and made his head almost touch the back of his
horse. But either side hauing stayed the spur, & vsed the
bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the trocheons
of their staues, & drawing their swords, they attended
the second summons of the death threatening trumpet,
which quickly followed; and they also one making their
horses answer their hâds, with a gentle galop, set the one
toward the other, til being come in the neernes of little
more
more then a staves length. Amphialus trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his headjoynte to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthening it with the course of his horse, strake Phalantus vpon the head, in such fort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his fight, and ahtonish his hearing. But Phalantus (not accustomed to be vngratefull to such benefites) strake him vpon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut atunder: though the faithfulnes of his armouirindeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till Amphialus his horse, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a little before, as he was woont to doo in his correttet: which advantage Amphialus taking, let forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as Phalantus his horse came ouer with his master vnder him. Which Amphialus seeing, lighted, with intention to help Phalantus. But his horse that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gatte vp from burdning his burden, so as Phalantus (in the fall haung gotten his feete free of & the stirrop) could (though something bruised) arise; seeing Amphialus neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giue him any help in remouing his horse. Amphialus said No. Truely sayd Phalantus, I asked it, because I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (sain Phalantus) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune.
tune. Amphialus lifting to keepe him selfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentleman, to whom Amphialus that day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, ha-
ing neuer before bene in any combat worthy remem-
brance. Ah, (said Phalantus in a rage) And must I be the exer-
cise of your prettis-age? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the còbat, & boilling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke vpon Amphi-
lus, as if euery blow would faine haue bene foremost.
But Amphialus (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leaue small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble auoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gen-
tleman fell downe withall in a fowne.

But Amphialus, pittyng approved valoure, made pre-
tious by naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight (disda-
ined to buy life with yeelding) bad him vse his fortune: for he was resolued neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (said Amphialus) if it be not to my requel, that you will account your selfe to haue great interest in me. Phalantus more overcome by his kindnes, the by his fortune, de-
sired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. Amphialus, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bet-
tred, if it might be honored by the title of his friéd. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowned
The Countesse of Pembroke

valour of the other. And so promising each to other as
suredness of good will, Phalantus, (of whom Amphialus
would have no other ransome, but his word of friend-
ship) was conveyed into the camp, where he would
but little remaine among the enemies of Amphialus: but
went to seeke his adventurues other-where.

C H A P. 12.

* Philocleas il-taking Amphialus wel.meaning. His chal-
lenge and conquests continued for Love, & his love. 
Argalus sent for to this challenge. The coniugall happines
of him and his wife. The passions stirr'd by this message.
* Their sorrow-sounding farewell. Argalusis defie.
* Amphialusis answer. Argalusis furniture. Their
combat, bloody to both, deadly to Argalus. Parthenia
comes to the end of it, and him. Her and his lamenta-
tions. The funerals.

S for Amphialus he was receaued
with triumph into the castle; al-
though one might see by his eyes
(humbly lifted up to the window
where Philoclea stood) that he was
rather suppliant, then victorious:
whiche occasion Cecropia taking,
(who as then stooed by Philoclea, and had lately lefte
Pamela in another roome, whence also she might see
the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see,
whether you haue cause to loue my sonne, who then
lies vnder your feetes, when he standes vpon the necke
of his brauest enemies. Alas said Philoclea, a simple ser-
vice
nice to me, me thinkes it is, to haue those, who come to succour me, destroyed: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it so: but the effects it brings forth I confesse I account hateful. Cecropia grew so angry with this unkind answer, that she could not abftayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed. but that if her sonne would follow her counsel, she should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of Amphialus in like cases) framed to him a very thankefull message, poudring it with some hope-giving phraies, which were of such joy to Amphialus, that he (though against publike respect, & importunity of dissuaders) pretently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatsoever Knight would trie the like fortune as Phalantus did, he should in like sorte be answered: so as divers of the valiantest, partly of themselves, partly at the instigation of Basilus, attempted the combat with him; and according to every ones humour, so were the causes of the challege grouded: one laying treason to his charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serve Philoclea; a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to Loue it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the wit, the rebel to Reason, the betrayer of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the underminer of magnanimity, the flatterer of vice, the slave to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madnesse of age; the curse of life, and reproch of death; a fifth, disdainning to caste at lesse then at all, woulde make the cause of his quarrell the causers of loue, and proclayme his blaspheemies against womankind; that namely that sex,
The Countesse of Pembroke

was the oversight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonablenesc, the obstinate cowards, the slue-born tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in whose conscience is but puerishnes, chaittie waywardnes, & gratefulness a miracle. But all these challenges (how well focuer endited) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though pa't learning themselves; & some by yeelding gaue themselves the lie for haung blasphemed; to the great griefe of Basilius, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his own sight to crowne himselfe with deserved honour.

Whereupon thirsting for reuenge, & else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his campe being already ouerthrown; he sent a messenger to Argalus, in whose approued courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence, with a letter, requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto spared him in respect of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicitie standing upon it, he could no longer forbeare to chalenge of him his faithfull service.

The messenger made speede, and found Argalus at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parlor with the faire Parthenia, he reading in a booke the stories of Hercules, she by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she looked on his eyes, & sometymes stayning him with some pretty question, not so much to be resolued of the doubte; as to give him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she enjoyed him; both encreasing their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, because they made a double life; one, where desire neuer wanted satisfactiō, nor
nor satisfaction never bred facetie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, & hast in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he deliver'd his letters and message; yet a far of she looked, now at the messenger, & then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to have cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she soyd there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betwene lothness and necessity: and once his eie cast vpon her, & finding hers vp'on him, he blusht, & she blusht, because he blusht, and yet freight grew paler, because she knew not why he had blusht. But when he had read, & heard, & dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow, he came to Parthenia, and as forie as might be for parting, and yet more forie for her sorrow, he gave her the letter to reade. She with fearful flownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and hauing read it, Ah my Argalus (laid she) and haue you made such hast to answer? and are you so soone resolued to leaue me? But he discoursing vnto her, how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reason overclowded with sorrow, suffer'd her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes, which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his present departure.

By that time he was arm'de, and readie to go, she had 6
The Countesse of Pembroke

recovered a little strength of spirit again, 

coming out, & seeing him armed, 

wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell. She ran to him, took him by the arm, and kneeling down without regard, who either heard her speak, or saw her demeanour, My Argalus, my Argalus (said she) do not thus forfake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I have interest in you, which I will never yeeld shall be thus adventured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently have you already done for your countrey: ennnow, ennnow there are besides you to lose lesse worthie liues. Woe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these adventures, when you adventured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or never, I claime mine owne, mine you are, & without me you can undertake no danger: & will you endanger Parthenia? Parthenia shall be in the battle of your fight: Parthenia shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by Parthenia. Deare Parthenia (said he) this is the first time, that ever you resifted my will: I thanke you for it; but perseuer not in it, & let not the teares of those most beloved ecies be a presage vnto me of that, which you would not should happen. I shal liue, doubte not: for so great a blessing, as you are, was not giuen vnto me, so soone to be depruiued of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a joyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-striken with amazement: for true Love made obedience stande vp against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to print his harte in her sweete lippes, she fell in a rounde.
as he was faine to leave her to her Gentlewomen: and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie groane, went to the campe. When understanding the notable victories of Amphialus, he thought to give him some dayes respite of reit, because he woulde not have his victorie disgraced by the others weariness. In which dayes, he fought by all meanes (having leave to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to Baslius, because he found Amphialus was inflexible, wrote his desire vnto him in this maner.

Right famous Amphialus, if my persuasion in reason, or prayer in good wil, might preuaile with you, you should by better meanes be like to obteine your desire. You shoule make many braue enemies become your faithful seruants, & make your honor fly vp to the heaué, being caried vp by both the wings of valure & iustice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no place in you, disdaine not to recciue a mortall chalenge, from a man so farre inferiour vnto you in vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deed, as I haue the doer in admiration. Prepare therefore your self, according to the noble maner you haue vfed, and think not lightly of never so weake an arme, which strikes with the sword of iustice.

To this quickly he receiued this answere.

Vch more famous Argalus, I, whom neuer threatnings could make afraid, am now terrified by your noble curtesie. For well I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cause I haue to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which iustifieth the vniustice you lay vnto me, dooth also animate me against
against all daungers, since I come full of him by whom your selfe haue beene (if I be not deceived) sometimes conquered. I will therefore attend your appearance in the Ile, carrying this advantage with me, that as it shal be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no dishonour in being overcome by Argalus.

The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, Argalus was armed in a white armour, which was guilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the crest of his head-peece, and spred it selfe in rich quantity ouer all his armour: his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich iuwell) was fastened to the saddle, the taile covered the crooper of the horse, and the wings served for trappers; which falling of each side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to fly. His pettrel and reines, were embroidered with feathers sutable vnto it: vpon his right arm he ware a sleeue, which his deare Parthenia had made for him, to be wore in a justes, in the time that success was vngratefull to their well-deserued loue: It was full of bleeding hartes, though never intended to any blooddie enterprize. In this shield (as his owne device) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, In that sort flourishing. His horse was of a fire forrell, with blacke feete, and blacke lift on his back, who with open nostrils breathed warre, before he could see an enemy: and now vp with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthe.

But he had scarceley viewed the grounde of the Islande, and considered the aduauntages (if any were) thereof, before the Castel boat had deliuered Amphialus,
in al points provided to give a hard entertainmët. And then sending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they should attende any further ceremony; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, their staues with vnshaked motion, o-bediently performed their cholericke commandements. But when they drew nere, Argalus his horse being hot, prest in with his head; which Amphialus perceiving, knowing if he gaue him his side, it should be to his disaduauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being striken) tumbled downe to the earth, daungerously to their maister, but that they by strength nimble, and by vse skilfull, in the falling thunnd the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drewe out their swords with a gallant brauerie, eche striuing to shewe himselfe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that Amphialus was the sooner vp; but Argalus had his sworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellest combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swords first, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breeches almost in euerie place for troupes of wounded to enter. Among the rest, Argalus gaue a great wound to Amphialus his disarmed face; though part of the force of it Amphialus warded vpun his shielde, and with-all (first castinge his eye vp to Philocleas Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the same sort of blowes, turned his sword, and with a mightie reuse he, gaue a cruell wounde to the right.
right arme of Argalus, the vnfaithfull armour yeelding to the swordes strong-guided sharpenesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of Argalus, yet woulde he in no action of his confesse it: but keeping himselfe in a lower warde, stoode watching with timely thrustes to repaire his loss, which quickly he did. For Amphius (following his fawning fortune) laid on so thicke vpon Argalus, that his shield had almost fallen piece-meale to the earth, when Argalus comming in with his right foote, and somerthing stroping to come vnder his armour, thrust him into the belly daungerously, and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blowe before, Amphius had ouerthrown himself so, as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling fanned himselfe from ruine. The sworde by that meanes flipping aside, and not pearcing more deeply, Argalus seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sworde, bad him yeeld. But he striving without answer to rise, Argalus strake with all his might vpon his head. But his hurt arme not able to maister so founde a force, let the swordes fall so, as Amphius, though astonished with the blowe, could arise: which Argalus considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together; falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting above, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so vnlovely embraçements, with a dislenting consent gate vp, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where Argalus finding his foes swordes garnished in his blood, his hart rafe with the same sworde to revenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he re-

ceyued
ceyued still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his matter no better. But Amphialus perceiving it, & waying the small hatefulness of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himself. But Argalus, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disaduantage, filling his veynes with spite in stead of blood, and making courage arise against saintnesse, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greatest blaze) so did he vnite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his twoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armour, and armes almost to the bone.

But then Amphialus forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being stayed by his care, his care filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as fast as she could, and yet because she could not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull Parthenia, (who had that night dreamed shee sawe her husbande in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste thither) they both marualled. But Parthenia ranne betweene them (feare of love making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining so to part them, till she could get breathe to sigh out her doolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made
made flowe to returne) had by Sobbes gotten into her sorrow-closed breast, for a while she could say no-
thing, but O wretched eyes of mine, O wailful sight, O
day of darkness e: at length turning her eyes (where-
in sorrowe swamme) to Amphialus, My Lorde (saide
she) it is faide you loue; in the power of that loue, I
begeech you to leaue of this combate, as even your
harte may finde comfort in his affection, even for
her sake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determi-
ned, be so pitifull vnsto me, as first to kill me, that
I may not fee the death of Argalus. Amphialus was
aboute to haue answered, when Argalus vexed
with his Fortune, but most vexed that she should
see him in that fortune, Ah Parthenia (saide he)
never till nowe vnwelcome unto me, do you come
to get my life by request? And can not Argalus liue
but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside,
for feare of hurting her, and would haue begunne
the combate afresh. But Amphialus not onely con-
jured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind,
but euen in his noble hart melting with compas-
sion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withholde
his handes, for that he shoulde strike one, who sought
his fauour, and would not make resistaunce. A no-
table example of the woonderful efectes of Ver-
tue, where the conquerour, sought for friendship
of the conquered, and the conquered woulde not
pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that
minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for
giving mercie; and neyther affected to over-liue a
dishonour: so that Argalus not so much striving with
Amphialus (for if he had had him in the like forte,
in like sort he would have dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised; yet himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the vittermost. But the fire of that strife, blown with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such abundance, that he was driuen to rest him vpon the pomelled of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunces of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazzled, and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sowne. Parthenia, and Amphialus both hastely went vnto him: Amphialus tooke of his helmet, and Parthenia laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen sleeues & partlet, to serue about his wounds; to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would have cut of her faire haire herselfe, but that the squires and judges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to haue taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardeft mettall.

O Parthenia, no more Parthenia (said she) What art thou? what seest thou: how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen-now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God, what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such have bene my desert, why was I not in my selfe punished? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp enough, to faue my labour from other remedies. Argalus, Argalus, I will follow thee, I will follow thee.

But with that Argalus came out of his sowne, and lifting vp his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and
The Countesse of Pembroke's

and iron sleepe did seke to lock vp) seeing her, in whom (even dying) he liued, and him selue feate in so beloued a place, it seemed a little checrful blood came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almpst dead, if some breath a little reuiue it: & forcing vp (the best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leave thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death brings nothing with it to grieue me, but that I must leane thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some comfort vnto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdome and goodnesse guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blesedly meet againe, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare Parthenia, and I perswade my selue, it will increafe the blesednes of my soule, so to see thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truly louing, Argalus: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an vnwoorthie husband. They could scarcely understand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him selue of his harte, neither coulde Parthenia make answere, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was deliuered into her mouth.

But when indeed she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrowe lost the withe of utterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serve for no-thing, since Argalus was gone; till Amphialus (so mo-ued with pittie of that sight, as that he honoured his ad-
aduersaries death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her) partelie by force, to be conueyed into boate, with the dead body of Argalus, from which she could not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaued by Basilius him selue; with all the funerall pompe of mili-
tarie discipline, trayling all their Ensignes vpon the ground, making his warlike instruments sound dole-
full notes, and Basilius (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade some case in-
to Parthenias minde: but all was as casefull to her, as the handling of fore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if euer she should finde case thereof. And well might she heare as she past through the Campe, the great prayses spoken of her husbande, which all were records of her losse. But the more excellent he was (being indeeke accounted seconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those prayses, beare vp the winges of Amphias-
lus-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Tro-
phe vpon Trophe, still did but bulde vp the monumet of his thraldome; he euer finding himselfe in such fa-
avour of Philoclea, that she was most absent, when he was present with her; and euer sorriest, when he had best successe: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diversity of deui-
se, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to haue bene ouertaken with
The Countesse of Pembrokes

with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meereely ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vn-to him a weeping effect.

CHAP. 13.

Dametas put in harte to defie Clinias. Clinias out of harte to see the vie. Dametas brauerie, adoubements, and imprese. Clinias drawne to answere him. Their passions in comming to the field. Their actions in it, not so doubty, as their fortune doubtfull. Clinias yeelding to triumphant Dametas.

Mong other that attended Basilius in this expedition, Dametas was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from Misio: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his sworde cursed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed injurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of Amphialius, it fell out sometimes in communication, that as the speech of heauen doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of Amphialius (by a cőtrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of Clinias: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverb, As very a coward, as Clinias. Describing him in such fort, that in the end, Dametas began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, he would neuer answere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the sauourable conceite of Basilius. This fancie of his he yttered to a young
a young Gentleman, that waited upon Philanax, in whose friendship he had especiall confidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of Mopsa. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with Philanax, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge him selfe for Dametas, and brought it to him. But when Dametas read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling, he said, it was prettie indeed, but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

O Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickelest worme that ever went upon two legges, the very frither of fraude, and see-thing pot of iniquitie: I Dametas, chiefe gouernour of all the royall castell, and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath suggested out of my dominion) doo des-fie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike up-marde. Which if thou doost presume to take in hande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy soule to be eua-cuated.

The young Gentleman seemd dume-striken with admiration, and presently tooke upon him to be the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lasted: and hauing gotten leaue of Basilius (every one helping on, to eafe his minde ouercharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vfed, and in the presence of Amphialus deliuered this letter to Clinias, desiring to haue an answere, which might
might be fit for his reputation. Clinias opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his blood not daring to be in so dangerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it felt more inwardly: and his very words (as if they were afraid of blows) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, as well as his painting breath would utter it, he bad him tell the louer that sent him, that he disdained to have any thing to doo with him. But Amphialus, perceiving the matter, took him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; Amphialus not only desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to Philoctea, but not being able to persuade with him, Amphialus licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should have answere.

The young Gentleman (for he had sped no better) returned to Dametas, who had fetched many a lower-breathed sigh, for fear Clinias would accept the challenge. But when he perceived by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no disposition in him to accept it; then lo, Dametas began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher then he was wont, swearing by no meane devoctions, that the walls should not keepe the coward shut from him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then euer to provide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland braucly addoubled, & shew himselfe to his charge Pamela. To this purpose many willing hinds were about him, letting him have reynes, pettrel, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue bases; but all comming from divers houses, neither in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked Damet
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

...as the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was master of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his device; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewled from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloudy deedes with his sword, as many inke-hornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde vnto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that layeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laugh-ed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that Mifo would not take it well at his returne, if he forgot his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

Mifo mine own pignie, thou shalt heare news o' Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill favoured impatiencie he waited, vntil the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently waited vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as Clinias, should set his runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by divers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, listed vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of Amphialus, who with humble smiling reverence deliuered a letter vnto him from Clinias: whom Amphialus had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certayne, if he did accept the combat,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

Dametas would never dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be his) but principally threatening him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by Basilius: so as the present feare (euer to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full unwillingly, undertake the other feare, wherein he had some shewe of hope, that Dametas might hap either to be sick, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when Dametas heard the name of Clinias, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he had the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But Dametas, his frie, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke uppon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

FILTHY DRUELL, unworthy to haue thy name set in any letter by a soldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was vmerousnesse, that made Clinias suspende a while his anfwere? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doe not appeare) but that I will come upon thee withall my force: and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I saye) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terrorr of all presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou doest: for I tell thee, horrible smyte, and paine shalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be so foolish (I hauing given thee no such cause) as to meete with me.

These
These terrible wordes Clinias vp, hoping they would giue a cooling to the heate of Dametas-his courage: and so indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, Dametas tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answere came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (having him now on horsebacke) led him vnto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vnkindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to vse his sworde and launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might runne away, cursing all Ilands in being euill situated) when Clinias with a braue sounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had desuered of Amphialus to driue him to those inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him selfe what was beste to be done: but feare did so corrupt his witt, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found daunger therein; fearefulnesse (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worse he found him selfe: rather imaginig in him selfe, what wordes he would vse (if he were overconme) to get his life of Dametas, then how to overconme, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the

Earth
Earth pittifully complaining, that a man of such sufficiency (as he thought him selfe) shoule in his best yeares be swallowed vp by so base an element. Faine he would have prayed, but he had not harte enouogh to haue confidence in praiere; the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giving such an assault to the weake-breache of his falle senses, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two judges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oth of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distance: one from the other.

Then the trumpets sounding, Dametas-his horfe (v- sed to such causes) when he thought left of the matter, started out so lustely, that Dametas was iogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horfe (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that Dametas threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horfe, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with Clinias: who fearing he should misse his reste, had put his staife therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that stood behinde) strake on his horfe, who running swiflty, the winde tooke such holde of his staife, that it crost quite over his breast, and in that forte gau e a flat bastonado to Dametas: who, halfe out of his sadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creste of his helmet. Clinias when he was past e him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing left Dametas were at his backe, turned
turned with a wide turne; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the coming vpon Dametas, who was then scrabbling vp, the horse fell ouer & ouer, and lay vpon Clinias. Which Dametas (who was gotten vp) perceiving, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil Clinias behind. But the horse that lay vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that Dametas durst not approch, but verie leysurely, so as the horse (being lustie) got vp, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that Dametas started vp a good way, and gaue Clinias time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sword, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to Dametas. But Dametas, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles would leade him. But as Clinias founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a preuailing cowarde; laying vpon Dametas, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to Basilius: but still bare the blowes ungratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new seare of drowning tocke him, so that not daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows stil so lighted
lighted on him) nor to yelde (because of the cruell threatnings of Clinias) fear being come to the extremitie, fell to a madnesse of despaire: (so that (winking as hard as ever he could) he began to deale some blowes, and his arme (being vled to a flaile in his youth) laid the on so thick, that Clinias now began with lametablc eies to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to Dametas, that he yelld. Throw away thy sword then (said Dametas) and I will saue thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. Clinias straight obeyed, and humbly craued mercie, telling him, his sworde was gone. Then Dametas first opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him stande a good way off from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. Clinias obeyed; and Dametas (who never could thinke himselfe safe, till Clinias were deade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his sworde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then Clinias might happe to arise, and reuenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing disarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vled so with Calues, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he sought for his Knife, which under his armour he could not well finde out, and that Clinias lay with so sheepish a countenaunce, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for teare of more paine, the Judges came in, and tooke Dametas from off him, telling him he did against the lawe of Armes, hauing promised life, if he threwe away his sworde. Dametas was
was loath to consent, till they sware, they woulde not suffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rife, crowing over him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this combate of cowardes being finished, Dametias was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as victorius, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

**CHAP. 14.**

*Clinias a sile traitour.* ' Artesia his malcontent accomplice.

*Zelmanes passions.* ' Her practife with Artesia.' The 'complot Revealed to the disliking sisters,' bewrayed by Pamela.

VT Clipias, though he wanted hart to prevent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feele shame; not so much repining at it for the abhorring of shame, as for the disagreeing commodities, that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of injuries, when men needed not care, how they vsed him. Insomuch, that Clinias (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of every companye) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing vnto himselfe, what danger he lately was
which still kept no leffe ougly figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly(euen in his dill-fembling countenance) might be discerned a concea-led grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse towards Amphialus, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him(how little cause fouver there was of smiling) and grumbling behind him,at any of his commandements, with an unceraine manner of behauiour:his words comming out,though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his coward-linessse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more despe-rately enter into, because the dayly dangers Amphialus did submit himselfe into, made Clinias assuredly looke for his overthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeem his former treason to Basilius, with a more treasonable falshood toward Amphialus.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of Amphialus, whom either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or discontentment of some vnslatisfied ambitio would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some already of welthy weary folks, & vnconstat youths (who had not found such sudden successse as they had promised thefelves)he had made stoupe to the lure.But of none he made so good account as of Artexis, sister to the late slain Ismerus, & the chiefe of six maids,who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought)any other defects of her sex: for she had un-dertaken
dertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of Cecropia, who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; & the Amphius wold marry her: which she was the apter to believe, by some false persuasion her glass had given her of her own incomparable excellencies, & by the great favor she knew he bare to her brother Ismenus, which (like a self-flattering woman) she conceived was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far fro their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her service had woon of Amphius much more the ordinary favor, nor her other large offering herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obtained a look'd-for acceptation, disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & perchance unquened lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice • which was increased by the death of her brother, who she judged neither succoured against Philanax, nor refued upon Philanax. But all these coles were wel blowne by the company she especially kept with Zelmane, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning Philocles, and contemned of the hie harted Pamela, she spent her time most with Zelmane. Who though at the first hardly brooking the instrument of their milerie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed herself to yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

For Zelmane, when she had by that vnexpected mistochief her bodie imprisoned, her valure ouermastrd, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed, asflu-red of euill, fearing worse, able to knowe Philocles mishfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descendi to forowe,
The Countesse of Pembroke

...forow, but rather rose boiling vp in spight and disdain; Realon hardly making Courage beleuue, that it was distrested: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shooe out threatning vp on them. But the fetters of fruititude (growing heauier with wea- ring) made her feele her case, and the little prevailing of repining: and then griefe get seate in her sotned minde, making sweetenesse of pasted comfortes by due title claine teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as little as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sor- rowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of Philodea graued in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no so- ner written, the adored, & no sooner adored, the pitied: all the woted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rhetorick to amplifie the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make inuictiue declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.

But whé Artesia did insinuat her selfe into her acquaintance, she gaue the government of her courage to wit, & was content to familiarize her selfe with her. So much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flawses of il-cócealed discontentmet. Insomuch that whé Zelmane would sweete her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting wel-intended seruices, & invoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrófully hiddé, & somtines with a kind vnkindnes, charging Ar- tezia that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy persóns: Artesia
Artesia (though falshly) wold protest that she had bin beguiled in it, never meaning other matter the recreatió: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngrately she was dealt with) it was easie to be seen, it was the vnrewarding, & not the euil employing her service, which grieved her. But Zelmane (ving her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughts) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliver, whom unwillingly she had imprisoned; leaving no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that Artesia, (put forth forward by Clinias, and drawne onward by Zelmane) bound her selfe to that practise; wherein Zelmane (for her part) desired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfrom any thing, how impossible soeuer, which longing Loue can perfwade, and invincible Valour dare promise.

But Clinias (whose faith could never comprehend the misteries of Courage) perswaded Artesia, while he by corruptió had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemy: that she should impoyson Amphialus, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had vsed to make the brothes, when Amphialus (either wearied or wounded) did vs such diet. And all things already were ready to be put in executió, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sifters, not doubting of their consent in a thing so behoofefull to theeslues: their reasons being, that the Princesses knowing their service, might be sure to preferr them from the fury of the entring sooldiers: whereof Clinias (euen so) could scarcely
The Countesse of Pembroke's

scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them privie to their action, to binde them afterwardes to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, Clinias to Philoclea, and Artesia to Pamela: and Clinias, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her service. But Philoclea (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perfwade her cousin to deliver her, and that she would never forget his service therein: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischief, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonement, then consent to the destroying her cousin, who (she knewe) loved her, though wronged her. This unlooked-for answer were amazed Clinias, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to Philoclea, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her service: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therin. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

But that little avayled: for Artesia hauing in like fort opened this deuice to Pamela, she (in whole mind Vertue gouerned with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and streight judging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose unrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles haue caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a louder
lowder voice then she was woont to vse, so as Cecropia heard the nois; who was (sooner then Artosia imagined she would) come vp, to bring Pamela to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Camp, as she thought, among themselues: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters, fright found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired Pamela to tell her. Alke of her (said Pamela) & learne to know, that who do fals-hoode to their superiours; teach fals-hoode to their inferiours. More she would not say. But Cecropia taking away the each-way guiltie Artesia, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practice: so as Zelmane was the more closely imprisoned, and Clinius (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for Artesia, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, Amphialus not consenting (for the loue he bare Ixmenus) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

CHAP. 15.


But
The Countesse of Pembroke

That the noyse they heard in the camp, was occasioned by the famous Prince Anaxius, nephew to the Giant Euardes whom Pyrocles flew: A Prince, of body exceedingly strong; in arms so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praisè, if they had not bene guided by pride, and followed by vnjustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offered to himselfe, which in the farthest-sette construction, might be wrested to the name of wròg; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a Thra-so-like boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would never boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an vnflexible anger, a couragious constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with Amphialus, but Mars had bene so vnpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate aduantage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that Anaxius found Amphialus (vnknowen) in a great danger; and saued his life: wher-upon (loving his owne benefite) began to fauour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he could not choose but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud harte be con-
conceived. So as in this travaile (seeking Pyrocles to be reuenged of his vncles death) hearing of this siege, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferior to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome he thought him selfe able to conquer the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he him selfe vpon such an unexpected suddainenesse entred in vpon the backe of Basilius, that many with great vnkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, faithfull Philanax, with well governed speed made such head against him, as would haue shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wildome: but that Amphialus at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the sconces, which Basilius had builded, made waie for his friend Anaximus with great losse of both sides, but especially of the Basilians; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Masters redoubted worthynesse.

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour due to his worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefites) did Amphialus enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make Anaximus know, that his succour was not so needful, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streates and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both souldiers
and Magistrates in their countenaunces to (shewe their
gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he
besought to entertain him with no lesse loue and kind-
nesse, then as one, who once had saued her sonnes life,
and now came to saue both life and honour. Tush (said
Anaxius, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers)
I am onely forie there are not halfe a dozen Kings
more about you: that what Anaxius can doo, might be
the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though
he had ouer-modeftly spoken farre vnderneath the
pitch of his power. Then was he disarmed at the ear-
nest request of Amphialus: for Anaxius boiled with
desire to issue out vppon the enemies, persuading
himselfe, that the Sunne shoule not be sette, before
he had ouerthrowne them. And hauing repose his-
selfe, Amphialus asked him, whether he woulde vi-
site the yong Princesses. But Anaxius whispered
him in the ear: In trueth (saide he) deare friende
Amphialus, though I am none of those, that loue to
speake of themselues, I never came yet in companie
of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I
that in my hart scorne them as a peeuish paltrie sexe,
not woorthic to communicate with my vertues, would
not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo de-
bale your selfe so much as to affect them. The curte-
ous Amphialus could haue beene angrie with him for
those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him
to daunce to his owne musick: and gaue himselfe to
entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheere-
full a maner, as coulde issue from a minde whome
vnluckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to
Anaxius he yeelded the direction of all. He gaue
the
the watchwoorde, and if any grace were granted, the meanes were to be made to Amatus. And that night when supper was ended, wherein Amphialus woulde needes himselfe waite vpon him, he caused in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent musick to be ordered: which, though Anaxius might conceive was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to convey it to the cares of the beloved Philoclea.

The musick was of Cornets, whereof one answering the other, with a sweete emulation, striving for the glorie of musick, and striking vpon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the castell walles, which with a proude reuerberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonie came to the care, that it had enriched it selfe in travaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a braue proclamation to all vnpossesed mindes of attention, an excellent comfort staight followed of suie Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song vppon her, that thought vppon another matter.

The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth: The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth: The Sea to ebbe for griefe his flowing turneth: The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth. Fame is with wonder blazed: Time runnes away for sorrow:
The Countess of Pembroke

Place standeth still amazed,
To see my night of its, which hath no morrowe.
Alas all onely she no pitie taketh
To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell
My fall her glory makest;
Yet still her eyes give to my flames their fuell.

Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leave me:
Aire, let me drave thy breath no more in anguish:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereave me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.

Fame, say I was not borne:
Time, hast my dying hower:
Place, see my graue upstorne:
Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.
Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.
Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure.

But Anaxius (seeming a weary before it was ended) told Amphialus, that for his part he liked no musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning they shoulde issue vpon the same place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the besiegers of Anaxius. Amphialus, who had no whieteless courage, though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly condescended: and so the next morning (giving false alarum to the other side of the campe) Amphialus at Anaxius earnest request, staying within the towne to see it
it garded, Anaxius and his brethren, Lycurgus, and Zoilus, sallied out with the best chosen men. But Basilius (having bene the last day somewhat vnprovided) now had better fortified the overthrowned fence; and so well had prepared every thing for defence, that it was impossible for any value from within, to preuaile. Yet things were perfourmed by Anaxius beyonde the credite of the creduleous. For thrife (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set vp his banner upon the rampire of the enemie: though thrife againe by the multitude, and aduantage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Numbers there were that day, whose deaths and overthrows were executed by the well knowne worde of Anaxius: but the rest, by the length of time and injurie of Historians, have bene wrapped vp in darke forgetfulnesse: onely Tresenius is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to Anaxius; till having lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, Lycurgus (second brother to Anaxius) cruellie murthered him; Anaxius him selfe disdaining any further to deal with him.

But so farre had Anaxius at the thirde time preuyled, that now the Basilians began to let their courage descende to their feete, Basilus, and Philanax in vaine striving, with reverence of authoritie to bridde the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that Amphialus, seeing Victorie shew such a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the suddaine comming
comming to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and deuice streight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had giuen Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed invinciblle Amphialus. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, under the wing of their damne. For the three adventurers, not content to kepe them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether side Fortune woulde haue beene partiall, could not be determined. For the Basilians, lightened with the beames of these strangers valure, followed so thicke, that the Amphialians were glad with some haste to retire to the walles warde: though Anaxius neither reason, feare, nor example, could make him allwage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the Basilians (vnwoorthie to haue his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sidewarde, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him; and there death would haue seazed of his proude hart, but that Amphialus tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conuied away Anaxius, so requiting life for life vnto him.

And for the loue and example of Amphialus, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when Basilius (that thought inough to be done for that day) caused retraite
retraite to be founded; fearing least his men following ouer-hastily, might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to knowe. The Knights as soone as they heard there retraite (though they were eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastliness than manhood) drew backe their swords, though hungry of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who, knowing Amphialus, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. Amphialus seeing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seateed a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayedness; answering no other to the blacke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

CHAP. 16.

* The unknowne Knights will not be knowne. * The Knight of the Tombes shew, and challenge accepted by Amphialus. * Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight. * Who that Knight was. * The dying speeches, and the lamentable funerals.

He fight being ceased, and eche side withdrawne within their strengthes, Basilius sent Philanax to entertaine the strange Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was due.
The Countesse of Pembroke's due to their vertue. But they excused themselves, desiring to be knowne first by their deeds, before their names should accuse their unworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deferred, yet (finding that unwelcome curtesie is a degree of injury) he suffered them to retire themselves to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselves secret: Philanax himselfe being called away to another strange Knight, strange not onely by the unlooked-forsene of his coming, but by the strange maner of his coming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind him, all upon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes: each of them seruants of each side, with like liueries of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted ouer with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse branches, wherewith in olde time they were wont to dresse graves. His Bases (which he wore so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrodered onely with blacke worms, which seemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie alreadie to devoure him. In his shielde for Impresa, he had a beautifull child, but hauing two heads, whereof the one shewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other aliue, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, No way to be rid from death, but by death.

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiours termed him) sent to Basilius, to demand leave to send in a damosel into the towne, to call out Amphialus, according as before time some others had done. Which being grated (as glad any would undertake the charge, which
no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and haung with tears fobbed out
a braue chalenge to Amphialus, from the Knight of the
Tombe, Amphialus, honourably enterteining the gentle-
woman, & desiring to know the Knights name (which
the doolefull Gentlewoman would not discouer) ac-
cepted the chalenge, onely desiring the Gentlewoman
to say thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that
if his minde were like to his title, there were more cause
of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And there-
fore presently (according as he was woont) as soone
as he perceyued the Knight of the Tombe, with his
Damosels and Judge, was come into the Iland, he also
went ouer in accustomed maner: and yet for the curte-
sie of his nature, desir'd to speake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and
drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor
speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him
knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende
of the Career, whence wayting the starte of the
vnknowne Knight, he likewise made his spurre's
claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was
in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight,
nowe verie neere him, he perceyued the Knight had
mift his rest: wherefore the courteous Amphialus
woulde not let his Launce descende, but with a gal-
lant grace, ranne ouer the heade of his there-in frien-
ded enemie: and haung stopped his horse, and with
the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Win-
dowe where he thought Philoclea might stand, he per-
cceyued the Knight had lighted from his horse, and
throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune,
as hauing mist his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sword, esteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other coming eagerly toward him, he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vn-to him; and straight made their swordes speake for them a pretie-while with equall fearcenes. But Amphialus (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) hauing both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke vnpon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; whè (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the punishment ouergoe the offence) he stept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (faid he) you may easely fee, that it pleafeth God to fauour my caufe; employ your va-lour againft them that wish you hurte: for my part, I haue not deferred hate of you. Thou lyest false tray-tor, faid the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But Amphialus, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (faid hee) onely courageous in discourtesie; thou shalt soone fee whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him, a great wounde vnpon his necke, and closing with him ouerthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mor-tally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him give himselfe the lyce, for hauing so faide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was noSooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the overcome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face
face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was Parthenia, the unfortunateli vertuous wife of Argalus: her beautie then euene in despight of the passed sorrow, or comming death, affuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweely swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striving by little and little to get vpon the rosinessse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alabaster, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a riuere of purest redde, there an Iland of perfitteste white, each giuing lustre to the other; with the sweete countenance (God-knowes) full of an vnaffected languishing: though these things to a grossly conceauing sense might seeme disgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailling beautie in a new fashion, which all looked vpon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did euë encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenes, so as Amphialus was astonisht with griefe, compasstion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therfore, putting off his headpecce & gaundlet, kneeling down into her, & with teares testifying his sorrow, he offred his (by himselle accused) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But Parthenia (who had inward messingers of the desired deathes approch) looking vpon him, and freight turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse obiect, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from so sweete a bodie) did
The Countesse of Pembroke

did faintly deliver, Sir (saiide she) I pray you (if prayers have place in enemies) to let my maidens take my body vntouched by you: the onely honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I have no honour of you. Argalus made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I have of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the servise which I desired. There rests nothing now, but that I go liue with him, since whose death I have done nothing but die. Then pawling, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselffe, O sweete life, welcome (saiide she) nowe seele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death, which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunsweere for me, that my thoughts have not so much as in a dreame tastted any comfort; since they were depriuied of Argalus. I come, my Argalus, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I seele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue ech other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there Atropos cut off her sentence: for with that, casting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heauen, which left the bodie in so heauenly a demeanoure.

But Amphialus (with a hart oppresed with griefe, because of her request) withdrew himselfe, but the Judges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while disarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remediles wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to divide the soule, but not the beauty frô that body. But whê the infallible tokens of death assured the of their losse, one of
of the women would haue killed her selfe, but that the
squire of Amphialus perceauing it, by force held her. O-
thers that had as strong passions, though weaker reso-
lution, fell to cast dust vpon their heads, to teare their
garments: all falling vpon, and crying vpon their sweet
mistres: as if their cries could perfwade the soul to leauethe
celestiall happines, to come again into the clemets
of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her ver-
tue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to them: another time
accursing themselues, that they had obeyed her: they
hauing bene deceaued by her words, who assured the,
that it was revealed vnto her, that she should haue her
harts desire in the battaile against Amphialus, which
they wrongly ynderstood. Then kissing her cold hands
and feet, weari of the world, since she was gone, who
was their world. The very heauens ymed, with a clou-
die countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe
(though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet)
could not choose but deliuer it in lamentable accents,
& in such sort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: & as
if the aire had bene infected with sorrow, no hart was so
hard, but was subiect to that contagion; the rarenes of
the accident, matching together (the rarely matched
together) pittie with admiration Basilus himselfe came
foorth, and brought foorth the faire Gynecia with him,
who was gone into the campe vnder colour of visiting
her husband, and hearing of her daughters; but indeed
Zelmane was the Saint, to which her pilgrimage was
entended: cursing, envying, blessing, and in her harte
kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they
with Philanax, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie,
went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, con-
ucying
The Countesse of Pembroke

ing that excellent body (wherto Basilius himself would needes bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant Argalus lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed relics of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Vpon which, Basilius himselfe caused this Epitaphie to be written.
CHAP. 17.

The remorse of Amphialus for his last deed, and lasting des-tinie. His reverent respect in love. His mothers ghostly counsel to a rape.

Hen with eyes full of tears, and mouths full of her prayers, returned they to the camp, with more and more hate against Amphialus: who (poore Gentleman) had therefore greater portion of woe, than any of them. For that courteous heart, which would have grieued but to have heard the like adventure, was rent with remembrance himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so farre temper his passion, but that he took his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much blood he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many pieces (which afterwaides he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to servie the noble exercice of chivalrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulnes of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restless minde, as to auoyd all companie, the fight whereof was tedious unto him. And then melancholie (onyly riche in unfortunato remembrances) brought before him all the mishapnes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but
but a preface of following mièrie; and to his harte (alredie overcombe by sorowrulnes) due trisling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himselfe from the enjoying of it: neither willing to seele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: vntill his mother (who never knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with louing carnestnes to lay a kinde chiding vpon him, because he would suffer the weakenesse of sorrow, to conquere the strenght of his vertues; he did with a broaken pece-meale speach (as if the tempest of passion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the euils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of Philoxenus and Parthenia, wherein he found himselfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to Philoclea: to whom he had so gouerned himselfe, as one that could neither conquere, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slawe, and of the other a taylor: and with all, almost vpbrayding vnto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding Philoclea nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him vnworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentifull cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was little or no fault
faulte in him selfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no griefe in him; when she came to the head of the fore, indeed seeing that she could not patch vp her former promises (he taking a desperate deafness to all delaying hopes)she confess plainly, that she could preuaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had married the yong Girle by seeking to haue that by praiere, which he should haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an vntimely and foolish flattery, there to befeech, where one might command, putting the vp by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superioritie, that it was not(forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said Amphialus) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out these eies then they shall looke vp on the heavenly Phitoecle, but as vpö a heaué, whence they haue their light, & to which they are subject, if they will power down any influences of comfort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called vnto me, let me languish, & wither with languishing, & grieue with withering, but neuer so much as repine with neuer so much grieuing. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be a tyrant, but true loue where it is indeed, it is a servant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reverence, as I burned in a vehement desire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vpö the maiesty of vertue, shinning through beauty, but that he became(as it wel became him) a captiue? & is it the stile of a captiue, to write, Our will and pleasure? Tush, tush sonne (said Cecropia) if you say you loue,
but with all you fear, you fear least you should offend; offend: & how know you, that you should offend? because she doth deny: deny. Now by my truth; if your fadness would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negative in a womans mouth. My sonne, beleue me, a woma, speaking of women: a louers modesty among vs is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modesty, he shall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you comand your souldier to march formost, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? loue is your Generall: he bids you dare: & will Amphialus be a daftard? Let examples ferc: doo you thinke Theseus should euer haue gotten Antiope with fighing, & crouffing his armes? he rauifhed her, and rauifhed her that was an Amazon, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnes above the nature of a woman; but hauing rauifhed her, he got a child of her. And I fay no more, but that (they fay) is not gotten without consent of both sides. Iole had her owne father killed by Hercules, & her felfe rauifhed, by force rauifhed, & yet ere long this rauifhed, & vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easly had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight in those weapos of rauifhing. But aboue all, mark Helen daughter to Jupiter, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooning Menelaus, but disdained his humble-nes, & loathed his sottnes. But fo well she could like the force of enforcing Paris, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? Menelaus takes hart; he
he recouers her by force, by force carries her home, by force inioies her; and she, who could never like him for serviceablenesse, ever after loued him for violence. For what can be more agreeable, then vpon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a iust excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me ß woman-kinde for Revealing to mine owne, sonne the truth of this mystery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at left of furie. Truly I haue known a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; never wonne; because they did ouer-suspiciously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could vse that imperious maisterfulness, which nature gives to men aboue women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse vnto you) in our very creatio we are servants: and who prayseth his servaunts shall never be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde; the same faileth to boundes when he feeleth a fearefull horfeman. Awake thy spirts (good Amphialus) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weep, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten; she can but weep, and chide, and protest, when it is gotten. Thinke, she would not strive, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my Amphialus, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.
The Countesse of Pembroke

CHAP. 18.

The forsaken Knights desire. 'Amphialus answer. 'The one, and others armour and impress. 'The issue of their quarrell. 'Their herioall monomacy on horse, and foot. 'Their breathings, & reencounters. 'Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white. 'The supply of both sides to carry away the breathles Knights. 'The Blackknights grieues.

Amphialus was aboute to answere her, when a Gentleman of his made him vnderstande, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

To thee Amphialus of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wishest health, and courage, that by my hand thou maist receive punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haist proudly begun, and accursedly mainteyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltesse) meete thee in thy land, in such order, as bath by the former beene vset. or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable choyse in any of them; so as thou do perfourme the sustaunce. Make me such answere as may shew that thou haist some taste of honour: and so I leave thee, to line till I meete thee.

Amphialus
Amphialus read it, and with a deep sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed even to condemn him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoever the dulnes of Melancholy would have languishingly yielded thereunto, his Courage (unused to such injuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answer.

Forsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte at rest, ye shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answer you in the wonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearlesse, expecting weake blowes, where I finde so strong words. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before proofe teache you, that of my life you have made your selfe too large a promise. In the mean time, Farewell.

This being written, and deliuered, the messenger told him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which Amphialus accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate dissuasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, ioyned together with pretious stones, as it was a braue raggedness, and a riche pouertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that
The Countesse of Pembrokes

he had giuen it a rustie shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceive was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsomest, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his devis, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and vpon the shadow with a speech signifying, that it onely was barred from injoying that, whereas it had his life: or, From whose I am banished. In his creste he caried Philoecias kniues, the onely token of her forwarde fauour.

So past he ouer into the Iland, taking with him the two brothers of Anaxius; where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke, as sorowe itselfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornements of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Rauens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselves one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysonous furie of the combat. His Impresa was a Catoblept, which so long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathic) wants her light. The worde signified that The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentance: Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not havinge so much as one starre to giue light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their
their birth-right in that forie inheritance.

Which alliance of passions so mowed Amphialus (alredy tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trottèd fairely to the forsakèd Knight, willing to haue put off his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like occasion) misguide him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (saide he) because we are men, and shold knowe reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirmè (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious iniurie to those Ladies, to whome all men owe service. You shall not fight with me (saide Amphialus) vpon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to enforce Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (saide the for-saken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to loue. And that confesse I too (saide Amphialus) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof. But no more vnworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes, more vnworthy then myself (saide the forsaken Knight) for though I deserue contempt, thou deseruest both contempt, and hatred.

But Amphialus by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede mistaking other) that he was his riuell, forgat all minde of reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts booud vp in choler, neuer stayning either judge, trupet, or his owne launce, drew out his sword, & saying, Thou lyest false villaine, vnto him, his words & blows came so quick together, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thuder. But he found no barre groud of fuch seede:
The Counteſse of Pembrokes

feede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encreafe, that though Reaſon and Amazement go rarely togeth'er, yet the moſt reasonable eies that saw it, founde reaſon to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Newor game of death better plaied; neuer fury set it self forth in greater brauerie. The curteous Vulcan, wh̄ he wrought at his nowe more curteous wiues request, Æneas an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater founde; then the swords of th̄e noble Knights did; they neede no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swords, & armours; ech side fetching new spirit from the castle window, and careful of keeping their fight, it was a matter of greater consideration in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and wind (if the aſtonifhed eies of the beholders were not by the aſtonishment deceiued) did both ſtand ſtill to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazèd eies diſcerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind stirred, as if either for ſeare it would not come amog'ſuch blows, or with delight had his eies to busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruel,ſince both Loue and Hatred conſpired to ſharpên their hu-mours, that hard it was to ſay, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lowder alar rum to their courages. Spite, rage, diſdain, ſhame, re-venge, came weighting vpon Hatred: of the other ſide came with loue-longing Deſire, both invincible Hope, and feareleſſe Deſpair, with riuallike Jealousie, which (although brought vp within doores in the ſchoole of Cupid) woulde ſhewe themſelues no leſſe forwarde, then the other dustie bande of Mars, to make themſelues
them selues notable in the notablenes of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, unacquainted with Losse, but assurred trust to overcome, and good experience howe to overcome: nowe seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now unlooked-for parting one from the other, to win advantage by an advantageous retoure. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preventing came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and sufferung wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the sufferung. But as the fire, the more fuel is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to deuoure more: so the more they strake, the more unsatysfied they were with stricking. Their verie armour by piece-meale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places stayning the blacke, as if it would giue a more liuely coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partial of either side: which so tormented the vnquiet hart of Amphialus, that he resolued to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise upon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hande; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And Amphialus vsed the fa-
The Countesse of Pembroke

Oour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came vnto himselfe: But then who could haue seene him, might weel haue discerned shame in his chekes, and reuenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth togethier with rage, he came running vpon Amphialus, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued Amphialus in two. But Amphialus seeing the blow coming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse a side; wherwith the forsaken Knight ouer-strake himselfe so, as almost he came downe with his owne strengthe. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistence, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon Amphialus, that his horse with the force of the shocke rote vp before, almost overtorn. which Amphialus perceauing, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vpon his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

But the curteous Amphialus excused himselfe, for hauing (against his will) kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and vse this poore advantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (laid Amphialus) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse.
horse, because he would not have fortune come to claire any part of the victory. Which curtceous act would have mollified the knight of the forfaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the lay of his mistress: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmest bond of good nature; and therefore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, re-entering into as cruel a fight, as eye did ever see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morse to keep their stomakcs in appetitc, in comparison of that, which now (being themselves) they did. Nor ever glutton by the change of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might have bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would have thought they had had their fill alredy. Amphialus being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before, his shield at the utmost length of his armes, his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whè he strake, which came so thick, as if euery blow would strive to be foremost, his armes seemed still a postillion of death. The forfaken Knight shewed with like skil, unlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweene the to anything that Amphialus attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not strive with nature: shunning rather the warding his blowes, like a cunning mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horse, and strength of the Bulfs fights low to get his proper advantage; answering
answerimg mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times
imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was se-
conde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge,
the thrusts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the
forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being co-
quered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a
blow, that he made Amphialus put knee to the ground,
without any humblenes. But when he felt himselfe
 striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his
ruvall, then shame seemed one arme, and disdain ano-
other, fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his hart; skill and
force gaue place, and they tooke the place of skil & force:
with so vnweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight
was also driuen to leaue the streame of cunning, and
give himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fu-
ry: there being in both (because hate would not suffer
admiration) extreme disdain to finde themselues so
matched.

What (said Amphialus to himselfe) am I Amphialus,
before whom so many monsters & Gyants haue faile
dead, when I onely fought causelesse adventures; and
can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of
Philoclea, and fighting for Philoclea: or since I lost my li-
iberty, haue I lost my courage: haue I gotten the hart of
a slav, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against
me in the fight of Philoclea, could it resist me? O beast,
one man resistes thee, thy riuall resists thee: or am I in-
deed Amphialus? haue not passions killed him, and wret-
ched I (I know not how) succeeded into his place: Of
the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fel
out with himself, Hast thou brokè (said he to himselfe)
the còmàdemèèt of thy only Princesse to come now in-
to her
her preface, & in her preface to prove thy self a coward? Doth Asia and Egypt set vp Trophes vnto thee, to be matched here by a traiitor? O noble Barfanes, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that flew thee, should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable Pyrocles, more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends shame, the with thine owne imprisonement, when thou shalt know how little I have bene able to doo for the deliverie of thee, and insta the heauenlie Princesse! Am I worthie to be friend to the most valourous Prince that euer was entituled valourous, and shewe my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed Musidorus, worthie for nothing, but to keepe thee, get thee a sheephooke again, since thou canst vse a sward no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their ouer-sharpe humors; like the Lion, that beateth himselfe with his owne taile, to make himselfe the more angrie. These thoughtes indeede not staying, but whetting their angrie swordes, which now had put on the apparaile of Crueltie: they bleeding so abundantly, that every bodie that sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted not in them-selves: their smarts being more sensible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage baring the common sense from bringing any message of their case to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make knowne their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of so violent furie: which filling the veins with rage, in stead of bloud, and making the minde minister spirits to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte vpward by the force of the bowe, though by his owne
owne nature he would goe downward. The forlaken Knight had the more wounds, but Amphialus had the soarer; which the other (watchinge time and place) had coningly geen vnto him. Who euer saw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make vnto himselfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not bragge of. Amphialus seemed to excell in strength, the forlaken Knight in nimblenes;and yet did the ones strength excel in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in strength: but now, strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excelle of courage only mainayned the fight. Three times had Amphialus with his mightie blowes driuen the forlaken Knight to go staggering backwarde, but euer one of those times he requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse. And now, whether he had cause, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward scholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cause, he bega to persuade himself he had the aduantage of the combat, though the aduantage he toke himselfe to haue, was onely that he should be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as vnsecrete as Love) could not conceale, but drawing himself a little back fro him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah Amphialus (said the forlaken knight) this third time thou shalt not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy injury, & my malice; and pay for the cruelty thou shewed in killing the noble Argalus, & the fair Parthenia. In troth (said Amphialus) thou art the best knight that euer I fought withal, which would make me willing to grant thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most
most against my will was committed. But whether my
death be in thy power, or no, let this tell thee; And vpon
the worde wayteth a blow, which parted his shield into
two peces ; & despising the weak ressistance of his alre-
die breakèd armor, made a great breach into his hartside,
as if he would make a passage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to wea-
ken life in those champions. For, the forfaken Knight
comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the
force of the blow, strake Amphialus vpon the bellie, so
horrible a woud, that his guts came out withall. Which
Amphialus perceauing (fearing death, onely because it
should come with overthrow) he seemed to conuoure all
his strength for one moments servuce, and so, lifting vp
his sword with both hands, hit the forfaken knight vpo
the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if
it would do a notable servuce before it died) it preuay-
led so, even in the instant of breaking, that the forfaken
Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forget-
ting both loue and hatred: and Amphialus (finding him
self also in such weaknes, as he loked for speedy death)
glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enjoy it,
puld vp his visar, meaning with his dagger to giue him
death, but in stead of death, he gave him life: for, the
aire so renewed his spirits, that comming to himself, and
seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death,
he tooke Amphialus by the thigh, & together rose him-
selxe, and overturned him. But Amphialus scrambled vp
againe, both now so weake indeede, as their motions
rather seemed the afterdrops to a storme, then any mat-
ter of great furie.

But Amphialus might repent himselfe of his wilfull
breaking
The Countesse of Pembroke's

breaking his good sword: for, the forfaken Knight, having with the extremitie of swiftly-conceiued hate, and the vnpitifullnes of his owne neere-threatening death, blotted out all complements of courtesie) let flie at him so cruellly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknesses upon a weakned subject, preued such strength, that Amphialus having attempted its vaine, once or twice to close with him, receauing wound vp0 wound, sent his whole burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in standing: giv- ing no other tokens of himself, then as of a man eu'n ready to take his oath to be Deaths true servant.

Which when the hardie brothers of Anaxius perceived, nor recking law of armes, nor vse of chivalrie, they flew in to defende their friends, or reuenge their losse of him. But they were sourethwith encountered with the two braue companions of the forfaken Knight, whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasaunt garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruite, cunningly beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feed- ing in a pleasaunt field, with this word, Without fear, or emte. And therfore was called the Knight of the sheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attir- ing els, all cutte in starrs, which made of cloath of siluer, and siluer spangles, each way seem'd to cast many aspects. His deuice was the very Pole it selfe, about which many sterres stirring, but the place it selfe lefte void. The word was, The best place yet reserved. But these four Knighes, inheriting the hate of their friends, be- gan a fierce combat: the forfaken Knight himselfe not able
able to helpe his side, but was driven to sit him downe, with the extreme faintness of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety upon ruine, gave new appetites, to the almost glutted eyes of the beholders: and now blood began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsides, no advantage being yet to be seen; onely the Knight of the Sheepe seeming most deliver, and affecting most all that viewed him, when a company of soldiers sent by Cecropia, came out in boats to the Ilande: and all came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was utterly vnable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelity. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forfaken Knight (who had fainted so long till he had lost the feeling of faintness) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; till Philanax (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) lent likewise over, both by boate and swimming, so choyse a number as did put most of the other to the sward. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the brauest of them, carrying away the body of Amphialus, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So was the forfaken Knight (layed vpou clokes) carried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be known, coverening him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: Basilius himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with fear to displease him, who had fought
so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour upon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barren of prayles to the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteemed Knight in the world: every bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themselves. But he him selfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to him selfe, whome the impudentest backbiter would not so haue wroged. For his courage (ved to use victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised him selfe, not only the conquest of him, but the scaling of the walles, and deliuerie of Pamela, though he had done beyond all others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne; that he hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought him selfe vnworthy; that he besought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a castle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and never be knowne till he made successive excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing Basilius and all the campe very forrie for the parting of these three unnowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had repos'd greatest fruit of victory.
Vt they being gone, Basilius and Philanax gaued good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying themselves, so as they feared no more any such sudden onset, as that of Anaxius. And they within (by reason of Anaxius hurt, but especially of Amphialus his) gave themselves only to diligent watch & ward, making no fallies out, but committing the principal trust to Zoilus and Lycurgus. For Anaxius was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for Amphialus, his body had such wounds, and gave such wounds to his mind, as easily it could be determined, whether death or he made the greater hast one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the possession of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted seruants) came waiting of it, persuading nothing but the giving over of it selfe to destruction. They laide before his eyes his present case, painting every piece of it in moste ougly colours: they shewed him his loue wrapped in despair, his fame blotted by overthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his
The Countesse of Pembroke

desiring, he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant Amphialus, (would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy selfe the Louer of Philoclea, that haft neither shewed thy selfe a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law ça quite, nor grace haue pitie of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou dost me, to give me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercice of ruine? I would sweete Philoclea, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes: & then perchaunce with some sigh thou wouldest haue confessed, thou hadst lost a worthy seruaunt. But now, caitife that I am, what euer I haue done, serues but to build evp my riuals glory. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offering to teare vp his wounds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsel of phisitions, that his perplexed mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence vpon him self, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitions: his melancholy detesting all company, so as not the very surgeons nor seruants durst speak vnto him in doing him service: only he had prai ed his mother, as she tendered his life, she would procure him grace, and that without that, she would neuer come at him more.

His mother, who had confined all her loue only vnto him, set only such about him, as were absolutely at her commandement, whom she forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cu red,
red, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she (for her selfe) being resolved, now she had the government of all things in her owne hands, to satisfie her sonnes ioue, by their yeelding, or satisfie her owne revenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer from outward force, she sent a messenger to the camp, to denounce vnto Basilius, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut off before his eies. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters & Zelmane to be led vnto the wals, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be scene by Basilius: and there caused the to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, til answere came from Basilius. A sight full of pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherwith Nature can beautifie any body: Pamela giuing sweetnes to maiesty, Philoclea enriching noblenes with humblenes, Zelmane setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subiected to the basest injury of vniust Fortune. One might see in Pamela a willingnesse to die, rather then to haue life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely disdain would sparkle out of her Princely eies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In Philoclea a pretie feare came vp, to endamaske her rose cheakes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dissmaiendes: or if she were dissmaied, it was more for Zelmane, then for her selfe; or if more for her selfe, it was because Zelmane should loose her. As for Zelmane, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not aduenture on her well knowne valour, especially amog people
people which perchāçe might be moued by such a spe-
cūtacle to some reuolte) she was the true image of over-
maistred courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For
her breast swelled withal, the bloud burst out at her
nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her
cīes cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were
talen out with the heavens, for suffering such an ini-
view. The lookers on were so moued withal, as they misli-
ked what themselves did, and yet still did what them-
selves misliked. For some, glad to rid themselves of the
dangerous annoyance of this siege, some willing to
shorten the way to Amphialus-his sucession (whereon
they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, do-
ing because others did, and suffering because none durst
begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this
(in their owne conscience) wicked enterprize.

But whē this message was brought to Basilius, & that
this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit
for him to beleue it, he called vnto him his chief cou-
celors:amōg which, those he chiefly trusted were Phi-
lanax and Kalander (lately come to the campe at Basilius
cōmandement, & in him selē wery of his solitarie life,
wanting his sons presence, & neuer hauing heard him
his beloved guestos since they parted from him). Now
in this doubt what he should do, he willed Kalander to
giuie him his adviue: who speake much to this purpose.
You cōmaund me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because
you will keepe your wonted graue, & noble manner, to
do nothing of importaçe without coucell, then that in
this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind
needs to haue any counsell: so as my speech shall rather
be to cōfirme what you haue alreddy determined, the to
argue
argue against any possibility of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will have your incomparable daughters live, or dye? whether since you be here to cause their deliverance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more unsensible, then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do threfore as I am sure you mean to doe, remove the siege, and after seeke by practise, or other gentle meanes, to recover that which by force you cannot: & therof is indeed (whē it please you) more counsel to be taken. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchase of life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths can befall unto you. A man might use more words, if it were to any purpose to gild gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said no more, for he durst not attempt to persuade the marrying of his daughter to Amphialas, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But Basilius made signe to Philanax, who standing a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus delivered his opinion.

If euer I could wish my faith vntried, & my counsell vntrusted, it should be at this time, whē in truth I must confess I would be content to purchase silence with discredit. But since you comand, I obey: onely let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whō I giue counsel. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the grave and (I well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord Kalandere had come in good time when you first tooke armes, before all your subiects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spēt, & before they were drove to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you
away, why did you take armes: since you might be sure when ever they were in extremitie they would have recourse to this threatning: and for a wise man to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word over throw, hath in my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in reason wil do. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promised you if you removed your siege, they would honorably send home your daughters: would you be angled by their promises: truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promise binds faith more then threatning. But indeed a Prince of judgement ought not to consider what his enimies promise, or threaten, but what the promisers and threatners in reason wil do: & the nearest conjecture therunto, is what is best for their own behoove to do. They threaten if you remove not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remove, what surety haue you, but that they will kil the, since if the purpose be to cut off all impediments of Amphialus his ambitiō, the same cause wil continue when you are away: & so much the more encouraged, as the reuenging power is absent, & they haue the more oportunitie to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their security onely, the same cause wil bring forth the same effect: & for their security they wil preserue the. But it may be said, no man knows what desperate folkes will do: it is true, and as true that no reason nor policie can preuent what desperate folkes wil do: & therefore they are among those dangers, which wisdome is not to recke. Only let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past: so as the Ladies may be freely deliered.
And let them that are your subiects, trust you that are their Prince: doe not you subiect your selfe to trust them, who are so vntrusty as to be manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their threatning to remoue your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, still by the same threatning? since then if Loue stir them, Loue will keep them from murthering what they loue; and if Ambition provoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shews and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to move a worthy mans conceit, which must still consider what in reason they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do weel to preuent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man fals into it, while, so good a way as you may offer, is open vnto thee. In su, you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought with the eye of wisdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of justice to set downe all private conceits, in compar-ison of what for the publike is profitable.

He would have proceeded on, whе Cynecia came ru-
ing in amazed for her daughter Pamela, but mad for Zelmane; & falling at Basilius feet, besought him to make no delay: v sing such gestures of copassio instead of stopped words, that Basilius, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more careful for Zelmane, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: to astorid him of the famine of his minde, he went in speed away, discharging his sou-
diers: only leauing the authority, as before, in Philus his
The Countesse of Pembrokes

his hands, he himself went with Gyneca to a strong Castle of his, where he took counsel how first to deliuert Zelmane, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitality mowed him; and for that purpose sent divers messengers to traffieke with Cecropia.

CHAP. 20.

be sweete resistance of the true sisters; to the sover assaults of their false Aunt. The whipping of Philoclea, and Pamela. The patience of both and passions for their lovers.

Cecropia by this means rid of the present danger of the siege (desiring Zoilus and Lycurgus to take the care, till their brother recovered, of revictualling, and furnishing the Citie, both with men and what else was wanted, against any new occasion should urge them, she her selfe disdaining to harken to Basilius, without he would grant his daughter in marriage to her son, which by no means he would be brought vnto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable grant to her sonne; whereupon she well found no lesse than his life depended. Therefore for a while she attempted all means of eloquent praying, and flattering perfwasion, mungling sometimes gifts, somtimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or undermining, would best winne the castle of their Resolution. And ever as much as she did to Philoclea, so much did she to Pamela, though in manner sometimes diffe-

ring
ring, as she found fit to k.euell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowliness. For though she knew her sonnes harte had wholly given it selfe to *Philoclea*, yet seeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, she hoped, a faire grant would recover the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly enteding the present impoisoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchase.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. *Pamelaes* determination was built vp so braue a Rock, that no shout of hers could reach vnto it: and *Philoclea* (though humbly seated) was so invironed with sweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor vndermined: her witty persuasions had wise answers; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes; her threatnings repelled with disdain in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as Cecropia in nature violent; cruel, because anibitious; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not preuail with girles, as she counted them; lastly, drawne on by her loue to her son, & held vp by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fel to confirm some of her threatened effects: first withdrawing all comfort, both of seruants, & service from the. But that those excellët Ladies had bene vfed vnto, cué at home, & the sovd in the clues how much good he hardnes of educatió doth to the resistace of misery. Then dishonorably vling them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeielding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al ornamëts, so now the same consideratió made
made the attendal diseasetulnes. Then ful, as she found those not preuaile, would she go forward with giving them terrors, sometimes with noices of horror, sometimes with suddaine frightings in the night, when the solitary darkness thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to all Vertue, and Loue resifted, strengthned one by the other, when each found it selfe ouer-vehemently assaulted. Cecropia still sweetning her fiercenesse with faire promises, if they would promise faire; that feeling euill, and seing a way far better, their minds might the sooner be mollified. But they that could not taste her behaviour, when it was pleasing, indeed could worse now, when they had lost all taste by her injuries.

She resoluing all extremities, rather then faile of cou-quest, pursued on her rugged way: letting no day passe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and still swellying, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried her to absolute tyranies, so that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for en-uite-fake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countenace impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweet Philo sclera, as if so many Kites should come about a white Doue, & matching violent gestures with mischievous threatnings, she hauing a rod in her had (like a fury that should carry wood to the burning of Dianas temple) fel to scourge that most beautifull body: Loue in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face from so pitiful a sight & the very stone wals did yeeld drops of sweate for
foragonie of such a mischiefe: each senseless thing had sense of pittie; onely they that had sense, were senseles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping Cupid told his weeping mother, that he was sore he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might neuer know so lamentable a worke. Philoclea, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as soon as her wearsines rather then compassion, gaue her respite) kneeled dowe to Cecropia, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witnesse she knew not) she would at once take away her life, and not please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common course of humanitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remembrance (how miserable so ever now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loye (you haue often tolde me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought inough for me; I haue not liued so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene so many, but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemie, when but death is desired. I craue but that, and as for the graviting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being every day furtherof-minded from becoming his wife, who vieth me like a slaue. But that in stead of getting grace reruued againe Cecropia, fury: so that (excellent creature) she was newly again tormented by those hellish monsters: Cecropia vling no other words, but that
The Countess of Pembroke's

she was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her selfe she would not conceaue it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour,hammered vpon by an ilfavoured Smith ) she abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather referring her for more, then meaning to end, they left her to an uncomfortable leysure, to consider with her selfe her fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and hopeles, since Zelmane was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of miserie, that she knew not how unworthilie her Angell, by these deuils was abused: but wanted(God wot)no stings of grieue, when those words did but strike vpon her hart, that Philoclea was a captiue, and she not able to succour her. For well she knew the confidence Philoclea had in her, and well she knew, Philoclea had cause to haue confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of senselesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliver knowledge to another, without bodilie organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with other, though themselves perceaued it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of their owne louing fancies. And that was the onely worldlie thing, whereon Philoclea rested her minde, that she knew she should die beloued of Zelmane, and shoulde die, rather then be false to Zelmane. And fo this most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of anothers paine; and almost forgetting the paine of her bodie,through the paine of her minde, she wasted, even longing for the conclusion of her tedious tra-
gedie.

But for a while she was vnuisit, *Cecropia* employing her time in vsing the like crueltie vpon *Pamela*, her harte growing not onely to desire the fruite of punishing them, but euens to delight in the punishing them. But if euery beames of perfection shined through the cloudes of affliction, if euery Vertue tooke a bo-
die to shewe his (els vnconceauable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reason taught her there was no resistance, (for to just resistance first her harte was en-
clined) then with so heauenly a quietnes, and so grace-
full a calmenes, did she suffer the diuers kindes of tor-
ments they vsed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and asked whether her harte would yeeld: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no loue, and yet could not but be louelie. And then, Beaut-
ly woman (saide she) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canst vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maist well wracke this fille bodie, but me thou canst neuer ouerthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame vpon thy detesta-
ble tyranny.

And so, in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, while *Cecropia* tried as many sorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sonne) *Pamela* remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could
could doo, as grieued with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew to Musidorus. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how grieuously Musidorus would take this her miserie; and shee, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet Musidorus-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Love did earliyer yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her selfe, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenesse of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sory for his sorrow: & she that long had prayed for the vertuous joyning themselves together, now thinking to die herself, harteily prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Lieve long my Musidorus (would she say) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Lieve long, that thou mayst loue long the chaste loue of thy dead Pamela. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might euer possesse his harte: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniiust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worste, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

CHAP. 21.

1 Cecropias indurate tyrannies. 2 Her devise with the death of one to threaten another. 3 Philoclea threatened, persifteth. 4 The execution done in sight of Philoclea & Zelmane. 5 Philoclea's sorrow for her sister.
O these diamonds of the worlde whom Nature had made to be preciously set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanfhip, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the uttermost distresses that an enemies hart could wish, or a womanes spite inuent: Cecropia dayly in one or other sorte punishing the still with her euill torments giuing them feare of worfe, making the feare it selfe the forreft torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her appointmet. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enabled to doo; strength growing vpó the worke, so as what at first would haue seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Prin- cesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by the selues, with the use of suffering their minds get the habit of suffering so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before had they would be victorious, & which in the suffering was painfull, being suffered, was a trophæ to it selfe: whereby Cecropia found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance haue perswaded them to haue visited her sonne, and haue giuen him some comforte in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the cofines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would neuer otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most vnust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could ever make them know.

Vv

This
This made the poison swell in her cankred breast, perceiving that (as in water) the more she grasped the leafe she held: but yet now hauing run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger, making their teder harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therefore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doe most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeeme threatening wordes to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death, should perceiue, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leave so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, Cecropia went to Philoclea; and tolde her, that now she was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part, though she found her hard hatted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of louing meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could preuaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity; she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that
that her sonne might be with time satisfied with the
love of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more
then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their
deathes should serue for an example to the other, that
desiping worthy folks was more hurtfull to the despi-
ser, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especi-
ally affected her, & that in her owne felte she was more
inclinable to pittie her, the she had deferred, she would
begin with her sister, who that afternoone should have
her head cut of before her face, if in the mean time one
of them, did not pull out their un-wrought stiches of vn-
kindnes, she had her looke for no other, nor lôger time
the she told her. There was no assault giue to the sweet
Philocleas mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to
all paines and daungers of her selfe, foresight with (his
Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence; now
with the love she bare her sister, she was driven to a
stay, before she determined: but long she staied not,
before this reason did shine vnto her, that since in her
selfe she preferred death—before such a base seruitude,
love did teach her to will the same to her sister. There-
fore crossing her armes, & looking sideward vpon the
ground, Do what you wil(laid she) with vs: for my part,
heauen shall melt before I be remoued. But if you will
follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for prai-
ers for my sake I haue felt how little they preuaile) let
my death first serue for example to win her, who per-
chaunce is not so resolued against Amphialus, and so
shall you not onely iustly punish me (who indeede
do hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may
moue you, you shall doo more vertuously in pre-
seruing one most worthy of life, and killing another
most
most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in need of a peevish unhappie creature, that I am, you shall blesse your sonne with the most excellent woman in all praiſe-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But Cecropia, (who had already set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termeſ, & countenance, told her, that she should not neede to woo death ouer-eagerly: for if her sister going before her did not teach her witt, herselſe should quickly follow. For since they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatening might preuayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe houres in the hall of that castle.

A place indeed overfit for so vnfit a matter: for being so stately made that the bottome of it being euene with the grounde, the roofe reached as hie as any part of the castle, at either ende it had conuenient lodgings. In the one end was (one storie from the ground) Philoclea abode, in the other of euene height, Pamelas, and Zelmanes in a chamber aboue her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built stone, as one could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a little win-dowe to looke into the hall; but because the sistres should not haue so much comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outſides) curτaynes drawne, which they could not reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their light. But when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the curτaynes were withdrawn from before the windowes of Zel-mane, and of Philoclea: a sufficient challenge to call their eyes
eyes to defende themselves in such an encounter. And by and by came in at one end of the hall, with about a dozen armed soldiery a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her; from about her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimsin velvet. But neither Zelma, nor Philoclea needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparell she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable Pamela. Whereunto the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gaue sufficient testimonie to their astonniished senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and so lette by her vnkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to speake somewhat (whereunto Philoclea, poore soule, earnestly listened, according to her speach euin minded to frame her minde, her harte never till then almost wauerings to saue her sisters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones spech, and the others attention, with making his sworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pitty-leffe sworde had such pittie of so pretious an object, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little auailed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonniished withall, the cruell villayne forced the sworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did ouer-run Philoclea's sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her senses)
The Countesse of Pembrokes

lenses, but first onely opprest her with a storme of a-
mazement:) but when her cies saw that they did see, as
condemning themselfes to haue scene it, they became
weary of their owne power of seeing: & her foule then
drinking vp woe with great draughts, she fell downe to
deadly trauces: but her waiting taylors with cruell pitty
brought loathed life vnto her; which yet many times
tooke his leave as though he would indeed depart: but
when he was staied by force, he kept with him deadly
Sorrow, which thus exerciset her mourning speeche.
Pamela my sister, my sister Pamela; woe is me for thee, I
would I had died for thee. Pamela neuer more shall I
see thee: neuer more shall I enjoy thy sweet companie,
and wise counsel. Alas, thou art gone to beautifie
heauen, and haue thou left me here, who haue no-
thing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and
euer will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all
vertuous folkes for most vnfortunate: let it neuer be
mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that
did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes
that behelde it. Sweete Pamela, that head is striken of,
where onely wisedome might be spoked withall; that
bodie is destroied, which was the liuing booke of ver-
tue. Deare Pamela, how haaste thou lefte me to all
wretchednesse, and miserie? Yet while thou liuedst,
in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O Pamela, how
much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then
my mother, and loue thee more then my selfe? Ne-
uer more shall I lie with thee: neuer more shall we
bathe in the pleasant riuer together: neuer more shall
I see thee in thy shepheardes apparell. But thou art
gone, and where am I? Pamela is dead; and liue I? My
God
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

God, And with that she fell againe in a foute, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to her selfe againe: but being come to her selfe, Alas (said she) vnilkind women, since you have giuen me so many deaths, torment me not now with life: for Gods sake let me goe, and excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my Pamela, whom euery I sought to follow. Alas Pamela, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promise, I shall trudge thine owne steppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be moost vnhappy in my selfe, and yet more vn-happie in others? But o that a thousand more miseries had happened vnto me, so thou haddest not dyed: Pamela, my fister Pamela. And so, like lamentable Philomela, complained she the horrible wrong done to her fister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorrow, yet brede it a wearnesse of her sorrow: so as onely leaving one to prevent any harme she should doo her selfe, the rest went away, consulting againe with Cecropia, how to make profile of this their late bloodie act.

CHAP. 22.

Cecropias pollicie to use Zelmanes intercession. * Zelmanes selfe-conflict. 1 Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye. * Philocleas resolution rather to dye then dissemble. 1 At sight of Philocleas head Zelmanes ex-tasies, 1 desperate deesignes, 1 and comfortlesse complaints.
N the ende, that woman that vsed most to keep company with Zelmane, told Cecropia, that she founde by many most sensibl proeses in Zelmane, that there was never woman so loued another, as she loued Philoclea: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of Cecropia) had caused Zelmanes curtaines to be also drawne: because having the same spectacles that Philoclea had, she might stand in the greater feare for her, whom she loued so well: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that deuise: for never saw she creature so astonished as Zelmane exceedingly sorry for Pamela, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnes in feare for Philoclea. Therefore her aduice was, she should cause Zelmane to come and speake with Philoclea. For there being such vehementie of friendship between them, it was both likely to mooue Zelmane to perswade, and Philoclea to be perswaded. Cecropia liked well of the counsell, and gaue order to the same woman to go deale therein with Zelmane, and to assure her with othe, that Cecropia was determined Philoclea should passe the same way that Pamela had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremitie of her soules affection: which the woman did, adding therto many (as she thought) good reasons to make Zelmane thinke Amphialius a fit match for Philoclea.

But Zelmane (who had from time to time understood the cruell dealing they had vsed to the sisters, & now had her owne eyes wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still rebelling against her wit, desiring still with force to doo impossible
possible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her coceit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Louc, & invincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not be, Philoclea should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne li-

mits. But now Philocleas death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with small delay to be suffred, or by the giuing her selfe to another to be prevented, she was driue to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the wo-
man granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe so blace, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musling thoughts. At last, he that would faine haue desperately lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should lose any life for her owne sake; and he that despited his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in respect of Philoclea death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to Philoclea death for any bargaining. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being posleff by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that Philoclea should pretend a yeelding vnto Cecropias request; & so by spea-
kling with Amphialus, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for Zelmane; who onely wifht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliuer Philoclea: so little did both the me, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe vp-
on them from the hye toppe of affections tower.
With that minde therefore (but first wel bound) she was brought to *Philoclea*, having already plotted out in her conceit, how she would deale with her: & so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Love upon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of *Philoclea:* *Philoclea*, who alredie the extreme sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therein, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine vnouerthrowne by such enimies. But whé Zelmane was set downe by her, & the womé gone away (because she might be the better perfwaded whé no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be perfwaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without vsing their tongues to be his interpreters. At last Zelmane brake silence, but spake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas vnfortunat wretch that I am, that I liue to see this day. And I take heauen and earth to wittesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and griefe, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet *Philoclea* that had alredie dyed in *Pamela*, and of the other side had the heauines of her hart somthing quickned in the most beloved sight of Zelmane, ghesled somewhat at Zelmanes minde; and therefore spake vnto her in this fort. My *Pyrocles* (laid she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought vnto me for any good
good-will that is owed unto me: but (as I suppose) to
make you persuade me to save my life with the ran-
some of mine honour: although no bodie should be so
visit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance
you would have me live. Your honour? God forbid
(said Zelmae) that ever, for any cause, I should yeeld to
any touch of it. But while to pretend some affection,
till time, or my libertie might worke somthing for your
service: this, if my astonished senses would give me
leave, I would faine have persuaded you.

To what purpose my Pyrocles? (said Philoclea) of a 4
miserable time what gaine is there? hath Pamelaes ex-
ample wrought no more in me? is a captive life so
much worth? can ever it goe out of these lips, that I loue
any other but Pyrocles? shall my tongue be so false a tra-
tor to my hart, as to say I loue any other but Pyrocles?
And why should I do all this? to live? O Pamela, sister
Pamela, why should I live? onely for thy sake Pyrocles I
would live: but to thee I know too well I shal not live;
and if not to thee, hath thy loue so base allay, my Pyro-
cles, as to wish me to live? for dissimulation, my Pyro-
cles, my simplicitie is such, that I haue hardly bene able to
keepe a straight way: what shal I doo in a crooked?
But in this case there is no meane of dissimula-
tion, not for the cunningest: present answere is re-
quired, and present performance vpon the answere.
Art thou so terrible, Ô Death? No my Pyrocles; and for
that I doo thanke thee, and in my soule thanke
thee; for I confesse the loue of thee is heerein my
chiefest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare Pyro-
cles, nor double not my death by tormenting my reso-
lution: since I cannot live with thee, I wil dye for thee.

Onely
The Countesse of Pembrokes

Only remember me deare Pyrocles; and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue so much of thee, let me be thy last loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature living) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But Pyrocles was so overcome with sorrow (which wisdome & vertue made just in so excellent a Ladies case, ful of so excellent kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to expresse his mind, & her merit: and thence so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of Zelmanes labour: & then Zelmane warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what, but in sum, desirous of delayes. But Philoclea sweetly continuing constant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, Zelmane was saine to ende. Yet craving an other times conference, she obtained it, & divers others; till at the last Cecropia found it was to no purpose, and therefore determined to follow her owne way. Zelmane yet stil desirous to win (by any meanes) respit, euen wafted with sorrow, & uncertaine, whether in worse case in her presence, or absence, being able to do nothing for Philocles succour, but by submitting the greatest corage of the earth to fall at the feete of Cecropia, and craue stay of their sentence till the uttermost was scene, what her persuasions might doo.

Cecropia seemed much to be moued by her importunitie, so as divers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent Philoclea: while Zelmane sufferd some hope to cherrish her mind, especially trusting vpon the helpe of Musidorus, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter:
matter, till one morning a noise awaked Zelmane, from whose over-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolen a little sleep: and straight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being lett open ever since the last execution) seven or eight persons in a cluster upon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselues, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull Philoclea. The horriblenes of the mischiefe was such, as Pyrocles could not at first beleue his own senses, but bent his wofule eyes to diserne it better: where too well he might see it was Philocleas selfe, hauing no veile, but beautie, over the face, which still appeared to be alieue: so did those eyes shine, euen as they were wont, and they were wont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder think, that death therin had borrowed their beautie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearling a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow which then laid holde on Pyrocles, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyrant heauen, traytor earth, blinde prouidence, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a governement? If it haue, let it poure out all his mischiefes upon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abominable hande that did it; detestable deuil that commaunded it; cursed light
light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that have seen it? And have I seen Philoclea dead, and do I live? and have I liued, not to help her, but to talk of her? and stand I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguish, not hauing a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as euer he could, with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himself: but the haste to doe it made the doing the flower. For, as he came to giue the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible enougeb to strike him downe, and withall, to deprive him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felt not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Reuenge, Reuenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which vsed that voice to stay him from unnaturall murdering of him selfe; or that his wandering spirites lighted vp on that conceite, and by their weakenes (subject to apprehensions) suppos'd they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant seruant Anger, stopp'd him from present destroying himselfe: yeelding, in reason and manhood, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltie; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die upon her tomb. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prifon: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloued head with
with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold,
all couered over with scarlet, and nothing but solitarie
silence, to mourn this mischief. But then, Sorrow ha-
ing disperst it selffe from his harte, in all his noble
partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares,
and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could pour out his
inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so
soone from mine eyes: What, mine eyes, perhaps
they enuie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeeede,
there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all ma-
kind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any exceede me in
wofulnes. I do conjure you all, my sensess, to accept no
obied, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke
of comfort. Unhappy eyes, you haue seen too much,
that euer the light shoulbe welcome to you: Unhap-
pie care, you shall never heare the musicke of Musick
in her voice; unhappy harte, that haft liued to feel these
pangues. Thou haft done thy worsf, World, & cursed
be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selffe
thou haft done the worsf thou couldest doo. Exiled
Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces.
Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be roorings, and
lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and
flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for
thee. Why liued I, alas: Alas why loued I: to die wret-
ched, and to be the example of the heauens hate: And
hate, & spare not, for your worsf blow is striken. Sweet
Philoclea, thou art gone, and haft caried with thee my
loste; & haft thy loue in me, & I wretched ma do liue, I
liue, to die continually, till thy revenge do giue me leaue
to dy: & then dy I will, my Philoclea, my heart willinglie
makes
The Countesse of Pembroke makes this promise to itself. Surely he did not looke
upon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye could haue abidden to see such beautie ouerthrown by such mischiefe. Alas, why should they diuide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of
that head; no other head is woorthie of that bod-
y: O yet, if I had taken my last leaue, if I might haue
taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art
thou Hope which promisest neuer to leaue a ma while
he liueth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tel
me, what is there which I would willingly hope after?
Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what
now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her
all my hope, all my wishing. Loue, be ashamed to be
called Loue: cruell Hate, unspeakable Hate is victori-
ous ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can justifie
thy tyrannie, and giue reason to thy passion? O cruell
diurce of the sweetest mariage that euer was in Na-
ture: Philoclea is dead, and dead is with her all good-
nesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. Philoclea is dead,
and yet Life is not ashamed to continue vpon the earth.
Philoclea is dead: O deadly word, which containeth in
it selue the uttermost of all misfortunes. But happy
worde when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall
not be, before it be said.

CHAP. 17.

* A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse unkind-
nesse.  * His hardly knowing her.  * Her unmasking of
Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie.  * Their medley of s-
lace and sorowe.
Hen stopping his wordes with sighes, drowning his sighes in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himselfe sometimess vpon the floore, and sometimess vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was wearisome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering food, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weeppe Philoclea, sigh Philoclea, and cry out Philoclea: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) toward the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garmets; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life vnto you. And I soone death to you (laid he) for the horrible curse you haue giuen me. Certainely (laid she) an vnkinde answer, and far vnworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not vnfitable to the rest of your behauiour. For most parte of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiuing it, so was your minde estranged from your senses) and haue hearde nothing of Zelmane, in Zelmane, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out Pyrocles) that thou wert a man that vsest these wordes vnto me. I tell thee I am forie: I tell thee I will be forie in despite of thee, and all them that would haue me joyfull. And yet (replied she) perchaunce Philoclea is not dead,
dead, whom you so much beloved. I would we were both dead of that condition, said Pyrocles. See the folly of your passion (said she) as though you should be nearer to her, you being dead, and she alive; then she being dead, & you alive; & if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do you cry out for: not for her, who must have died one time or other; but for some few yeares: so as it is time, & this world that were so louely things, and not Philoclea unto you. O noble Sisters (cried Pyrocles) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but babling, and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I pray you do (said Pyrocles) for I wishe for nothing in my shorte life, but mischieves, and combers: and I am content you shall be one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke your selfe a greatly priviledged person, if since the strongest buildings, and lastingeft monarchies are subject to end, onely your Philoclea (because she is yours) should be exempted. But indeede you bemone your selfe, who haue lost a friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserued her honour, and lefte the miseries of this worlde. O womans philosophie, childish folly (said Pyrocles) as though if I do bemone my selfe, I haue not reason to doo so, having lost more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be woorth unto me. Alas (said she) comforte your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when she had made them: you shall find many their superiours, and perchaunce such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe, will like better.

But that speech put all good maners out of the conceit
cit of Pyrocles, in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to have striken her; but comming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkenesse) he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of Philoclea; the same sweetenesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which carried into a divinie astonishment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell (said he) well hast thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy selfe to mortall sense; for a more Angelicall forme could not have bene created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, so beloved of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause, that she, that heavenly creature, whose forme you have taken, should by the heauens be destined to so vnripe an ende? Why should vnjustice so preuaile? Why was the scene to the world, so soon to be rauished from vs? Why was she not suffered to liue, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceive thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am Philoclea, the same Philoclea, so truely louing you, so truly beloved of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeede the soule of Philoclea, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heauen could have giuen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the paines to leau your blisfull seat to come to this place most wretched, to me, who am wretchednes itselfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to loue your beauties? you know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I only stay, to be iustly requenged of your vnjust murtherers. Deare Pyrocles (said she) I am thy Philoclea, and as yet liuing: not murdred, as you supposed,
That Count of Vemhrok's and therefore to be comforted. And with that gave him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hand, seemed to his affraied powers so heavenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former belief: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeeld to this height of al comfort, that Philoclea liued: which witnessing with the teares of joy, Alas (said he) how shall I beleue mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent Pamela beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) standing in a dish of golde, too meane a shrine (God wote) for such a relik. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not so, how can I beleue mine owne senses? and if I cannot beleue the, why should I now beleue these bleisfed tidings they bring me?

The truth is (said she) my Pyrocles, that nether I (as you finde) nor yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischieuously buttle Cecropia vsed flightes to make either of vs thinke so of other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked eloquence, to make eithor of vs yeeld to her sonne, and seeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any grounde of vs, nor yet the violent way she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could preuayle with vs; at last, she made either of vs thinke the other dead, and so hoped to haue wrested our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and first she gaue to mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as
I thought) death: but indeede not my fister: it was onely Artesia, she who so cunningly brought vs to this misery. Truly I am sorry for the poore Gentlewoman, though iustly she be punished for her double falsehood: but Artesia muffled so, as you could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparell (which they had taken from her under colour of giving her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy sake especially deare Pyrocles) could by no force, nor feare be won, they aylayed the like with my fister, by bringing me downe vnder the scaffold, and(making me thrust my head vp through a hole they had made therein) they did put about my poore necke a diſhe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, so as hauing feit bloud in it, you sawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes eu'n willing to haue done it in earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, so as scarcely I could breathe, much lesſe speake: And truely if they had kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangeld me, in stead of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and seeking to see their issue of this practife, they found my noble fister (for the deare loue she vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieved withall, that she willed them to doo their vtermost crueltie vnto her: for she vowed, neuer to receive sustenaunce of them, that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of vs, eu'n giuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my fister Pamela, rather worse then my felse, (the strength of her harte worse bearing those indignities) the good woman Cecropia (with the same pitie as folkes kepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for
The Countesse of Pembrokes

their eating) made vs know her deceit, & let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; sauing that we only thought our felues referred to miseries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to haue a more feeling fense of the tormentes she prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleue, that this proceeds of my gentle cousin Amphialus: who hauing hearde some inckling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he neuer rose since his last combat, and befought, & charged her upon all the loue she bare him, to vfe vs with all kindnesse: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he vn
derstood for his fake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not liue an heoure longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealte with; but that Cecropis keepes him from vnderstanding things how they passe, onely hauing heard a whispering, and my felfe named, he had (of aboundaunce,forlouth, of honorable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleue any worde they say, but (my deare Pyrocles) euens looke for the worfte, and prepare my felfe for the fame. Yet I must confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and moste sweete conforte of thee my Pyrocles. And so hauing leaue,
leauę, I came stealıng into your chamber: where
(Ô Lord) what a ioy it was vnsto me, to heare you so-
lemnise the funeralls of the poore Philoclea? That I
my selfe might liue to heare my death bewailed: and
by whom? by my deere Pyrocles. That I saw death
was not strong enough to divide thy love from me:
O my Pyrocles, I am too well paide for my paines I
have suffred: ioyfull is my woe for so noble a cause;
and welcome be all miseries, since to thee I am so
welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me;
and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to in-
terrupt thee, but often had euен pleasure to weep:
with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations,
that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had
beene a looker on, to see poore Philoclea dye. Til at last I
spake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee frō
sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled
with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a
mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like whē
a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle Zephyrus a-
mong fine coloured flowers. But Pyrocles, who had felt
(with so smal distance of time) in himself the overthrow
both of hope and despaire, knew not to what key he
should tune his mind, either of ioy, or sorrow. But fin-
ding perfect reason in neither, suffred himselfe to be ca-
rried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations
to be raised euен by the sway, which hearing or feing,
might giue vnsto thē: he saw her alıue, he was glad to see
her alıue: he saw her weep, he was sory to see her weep:
he heard her comfortable speeches, nothing more glad-
some: he hard her prognosticating her own destructiō,
The Countesse of Pembroke's

nothing more dolesfull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present estate, both comforting her, that certainly the worst of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done the worst, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to have killed her, they would have now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, and inhabling his counsels with vehement prayers, that she would so far second the hopes of Amphialus, as that she might but procure him liberty, promising then as much to her, as the liberalitie of loving corage durft promise to himselfe.

CHAP. 24.

'*Amphialus exouseth. ' The Princesses accuse. ' Cecropia seeking their death. ' findeth her owne. ' Amphialus—his death-panges and selfe-killing. ' The wofull knowledge of it.

But who would linely describe the manner of these speeches, should paint out the lughtome coulours of affection, shaded with the deepest shadowes of sorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a kind of sweetenes in teares: til Philocles content to receaue a kysse, and but a kysse of Pyrocles, sealed vp with moving lippes, and closed them vp in comfort: and her selfe (for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her litter: with
with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while Philoclea tempered Pamela's just dif-
daine, and Pamela ennobled Philoclea's sweet humble-
NESSe) when Amphialus came unto them: who never-
since he had heard Philoclea named, could be quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him (fea-
ring more his mothers violence the his power) would
discouer what had passed: and many messages he sent
to know her estate, which brought answers backe, ac-
cording as it pleased CECROPIA to indite them, till his
hart full of vnfortunate affliction, more and more mis-
giving him, having impatiently borne the delay of the
nights vnfitnesse, this morning he got vp, and though
full of wounds (which not without danger could suf-
ter such exercise) he apparelled himselfe, and with a
countenance, that shewed strength in nothing but in
grieze, he came where the sisters were; and weakely
kneeling downe, he besought them to pardon him, if
they had not bene vsed in that castle according to their
worthines, and his dutie; beginning to excuse small
matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort
they had bene handled.

But Pamelaes hye hart (hauing conceiued mortall
hate for the inuriue offered to her and her sister) could
scarely abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excu-
es; but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said
she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of
so much loue as thou hast vowed, doo not desfile our
eares with thy excuses, but pursue on thy crueltie, that
thou and thy godly mother haue vted towards vs: for
my part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister
(whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne
safeue
Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye full of humble sorrowfulness, to Philoctetes. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, late weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had ever favoured him, & loved his love, though she could not be in love with his person; and now partly unkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his case, made her sweete minde yeeld some teares, before she could answere; and her answere was no other, but that she had the same cause as her sister had. He replied no further, but deliuering from his hart two or three (vntaught) sighes, rose, and with most low reuerence went out of their chamber: and streight by threatening torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had benevled. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe vpon his hart) he needed no judge to goe vpon him: for no man could ever thinke any otherworthy of greater punishmet, the he thought himselfe.

Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, understanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his servuants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went vp, carried by surie, in stead of strength; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resoluing to make much of her Necce in shew, and secretly to imposion them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue woulde no otherwize be mitiga-
mitigated.

But when she sawe him come in with a sworde drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sworde, she freight was strikes with the guiltines of her own conscience: yet the well known humblenes of her son somewhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of unhappines as I am; she fearing he would have stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she overthrew her selfe from ouer the Leades; to receaue her deathes kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonses mischiefe (whom she loued so well) before her end; when she confess (with most desperate, but not repeting mind) the purpose she had to imposon the princesses, & would then have had them murthred. But euerie bodie seing, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of Amphialius, who when he saw her fall, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddennes of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked so euer, yet I would she had receaued her punishmet by some other. O Amphialius, wretched Amphialius; thou hast liued to be the death of thy most deere companion & friend Philoxenus, and of his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou hast liued to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire Parthenia was.
was: thou hast liued to see thy faithfull Imenus flaine
in succouring thee, and thou not able to defende him:
thou hast liued to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that
one vnknowne Knight could overcome thee in thy
Ladies presence: thou hast liued to beare armes against
thy rightfull Prince, thine owne vnkle: Thou hast
liued to be accounted, and iustly accounted, a traitor,
by the most excellent persons, that this world hol-
deth: Thou hast liued to bee the death of her, that
gave thee life. But ah wretched Amphialus, thou hast
liued for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to haue Phi-
lolec a tormented: O heauen, in Amphialus caste,
where Amphialus commaunded, tormented, torren-
ted: torment of my soule, Philolec a tormented: and
thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to live all
this while. Perchance this hande (vedd onely to mis-
chieuous actes) thinkes it were too good a deede to
kill me; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill
women, thou art atraide to strike a man. Feare not
cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly trai-
tor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him,
whome Philolec a hateth. With that, furiously he tare
open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the
sword to the grounde, and the point to his brest,
hee fell vpon it. But the sworde more mercifull
then hee to himselfe, with the flipping of the pomm-
rell, the point swarued, and razed him but vpon
the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds open-
ed so, as hee bledde in such extremitie, that Cha-
rons boate might verie well be carried in that flood:
which yet he fought to haften by this meanes. As
he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell out Phi-
lolec a
loclea's kniues, which Cecropia at the first had taken from her, and delivered to her sonne; and he had euer wore them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sword being so, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and yntendnes, melting in teares, O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to revenge the wrong I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing you without your mistresse leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you haue layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought forth, for so high an excellency; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my desire often haue giuen me: but other euent it hath pleased her to lay vpon me. Ah philoclea (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would frithe to overflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I loue thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappie I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she condemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her service, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble mistresses commandement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into divers places of his breaste, and throte, vntill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the senselesse gate of Death.

By which time, his seruants hauing (with scare of his
his furie) abstained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetisfull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, there giuing a pittifull spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerors overthow, and selfruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to see the beloued body; every body thinking, their safe-tie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction.

CHAP. 25.

1 Anaxius his rages for the death, Queen Helens comming for the cure of Amphialus. 2 Her complaints over him. 4 Her passport and safeconduct, to carry him to her Chirur-gion, 5 The peoples sorow, 6 set downe in a song.

Bt when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his proude friende Anaxius, (who by that time was growe well of his woud, but neuer had come abroad, dis-dayning to abase himselfe to the companie of any other but of Amphialus) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with disdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the frend of Anaxius, should come to such an un-expected ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddles ray-
rayed vp, and eyes leuellling from toppe to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth shake vnder him, with his hande vpon his sword; short speeches, and disdainfull answers, gi-
ing streight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the feouldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to sweare them to reuenge the death of Amphialus, vpon Basilius. He him-
selt went to see him, calling for all the surgeons & phy-
sicians there, spending some time in vewing the body, and threatening them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling down at Anaxius feete) assured him, that they were mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him aboue two dayes alive: and he stood partly in doubt, to kil, or faue them, betweene his own furie, and their humble-
nes. But vowsing, with his owne hands, to kill the two sisters, as caufers of his friends death: when his bro-
thers came to him, & told him they had done his com-
maundement, in haung receaued the oath of allege-
ance, with no great difficultie: the most part terrified by their value, & force of their servants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come vnder the subiection of Basilius againe; and such fewe as durst gainsay, being cut of by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told Anaxius, that the faire Queen Helen was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: hübliie deiring leave to see Amphialus, who she had fought in many places of the world; & lastly, being returned into her owne countrie, she heard together of the late siege and
and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him. Wherupon, full of loving care (which she was content even to publish to the world, how ungratefully soever he dealt with her) she had gotten leave of Basilius, to come by his frontiers, to carry away Amphialus with her, to the excellentest surgeon then known, whom she had in her Countrey, but so old, as not able to travaile: but had given her soueraigne annointments to preferue his body withal, till he might be brought vnto him: and that Basilius had graunted leave: either natural kindness prevailing over all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This discourse Lycurgus understanding of Helene, delivered to his brother, with her vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. Anaxius, though he were fallen out with all womankind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom he accounted murtherers of Amphialus) yet at his brothers request, graunted her leave. And she (poore Lady) with grievous expectation, and languishing desire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, either not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

In which pitifull plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her minde the pitifulllest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went beyonde all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight ranne from her seruice, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a souene vpon him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be closed vp
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

vp in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie ( with his seruaunt senfes) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath concuye these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) Amphialius, what strange diseases be these, that hauing fought thee so long, I shoule be now forie to finde thee? that these eyes shoule looke vpon Amphialius, and be grieued withall? that I shoule have thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort. How often haue I blest the means that might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often haft thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare Amphialius, receiue them: these eies can serue for nothing else, but wepe for thee; since thou wouldest neuer vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorowe. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadst thou lued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee couer my other defeets, who only fought to make my Crowne thy foote-stoole, my selfe thy seruaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serue them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (of Philocele) wheresoener you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deserued suitte of marrying you, and that I had bene your seruing-maide, to haue made my estate the foile of your felicite, so he had lued. How many
The Countesse of Pembrokes

many weary steps have I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte vnkind: Alas I would now thou werte, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not command my service, in persuading Philocles to love thee? who could, or (if every one could) who would have recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could have stirred pittie for thee as I? who should have delivered not onely the words but the.teares I had of thee? and so shouldst thou have exercised thy disdain in me, and yet vsed my service for thee.

With that the body mowing somewhat, and giving a grone full of deaths musick, she fell upon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that have onely fauour by miserie: and then, would she have returned to a fresch careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisedome, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had receiv'd of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in fruictles lamentations. She was straigt warned with the obedience of an overthrown mind, and therefore leaing some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to Anaximus, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had utterly given him ouer, that he would let her carry him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could haue should be to die, and to die in her armes that loved him above all things; & where he should haue such monu-
monuments erected over him, as were fit for her love, & his worthiness, beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to Anaxius' valour, then Basilius' promise) that he would convey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moved him, but nothing thoroughly persuaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he spight promised, warranting all suretie, as long as that sword had his master alive. She as happy therein as unhappines could be (having received as small comfort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conveyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roar and cry, as though never till then they had lost their Lord. And if the terror of Anaxius had not kept them under, they would have mutinied, rather then suffered his body to be carried away.

But Anaxius himselfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were affraid even to cry, though they were readie to cry for seare: but (because that they might doo) euerie bodie forced (even with harming themselves) to doo honour to him: some throwing themselves vpon the grounde, some tearing their clothes, and casting duste vpon their heads, and some even wounding themselves, and sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered vp in this forme.
Since that to death is gone the shepherd die,
Whom most the sily shepheard pipe did prysse,
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And you d trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barks receaue
The straunge resounde of these my causefull cries:
And let my breath upon your branches leau,
My breath distinguishing'd into wordes of woe,
That so I may signes of my sorowe leau.
But if among your selues some one tree growe,
That aptest is to figure miserie,
Let it embassage beare your grievances to shoue.
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helpe to this, this inshest cause of plaint.
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Sainet,
Upon thy face let coaly Rauens swarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let golde now rust, let Diamonds were in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare:
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo never see.
And you, st flowers, which sometimes Princes were,
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes loste your feluces for tokens reare.
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Ehō
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
    And do not only make the accents last,
    But all for all reach out my wail full will:
One Echo to another Echo cast
    Sounde of my griefes, and let it never ende,
    Till that it hath all woods and waters past.
Nay to the heauens your just complaining sende,
    And say the stars inconstant constant race,
    Till that they doo vnto our dolours bend:
And ask the reason of that special grace,
    That they, which have no lives, should live so long,
    And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?
Aske, if in great men good men doe so thronge,
    That he for want of elbowe roome must die?
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
    In one true cheft to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And is that any counsell you to measure
Your dolesfull tunes, to them still playning say,
    To well felte griefe, plainte is the onely pleasure.
O light of Sune, which is entitled day,
    O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;
    For mourning light her blacke weeds may display.
O Phoebus with good cause thy face thou bidest,
    Rather then have thy all beholding eye.
    Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
    A stately tombe to cover him deceased.
Your dolesfull tunes sweet Muses now applie.
The Countesse of Pembroke

O Philomela with thy brest oppressed
   By shame and grieues, helpes, helpes me to lament
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
   Then give a quiet eare unto my playning:
   For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy cloudes, which well employ your playning
   This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
   Witnesse your mostfull teares with daily rayning.
And if, o Sunne, thou ever didst appeare,
   In shape, which by mans eye might be perceived;
   Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.
Now set thy triumph in this world, becaused
   Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
   And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaus.
O notes of mine your selues together tie:
   With too much grieues me thinkes you are dissolved.
   Your dolesfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Time euer old, and yonge is still resolued
   Within it selfe, and never tasteth ende:
   But mankind is for aye to nought resolued.
The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,
   And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:
   But unto Man, age euer death doth sende.
The very trees with grafting we can cherish,
   So that we can long time produce their time:
   But Man which helpeth them, helpless must perish.
Thus, thus the minde, which ouer all doo clime,
   When they by yeares experience get best grases;
   Must finish then by deathes detestèd crime.
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

We last short while, and build long lasting places:
  Ah let us all against soule Nature criye:
  We Natures worke doo help, she vs defaces.
For how can Nature unto this reply?
  That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sucte Muses now apply.

Alas, me thinkes, my weake ned voice but silleth,
  The vehement course of this iust lamentation:
  Me thinkes, my found no place with sorrow silleth.
I know not I, but once in detestation
  I have my selfe, and all what life containeth,
  Since Death on Vertues fort hath made invation.
One word of vvoe another after traineth:
  Ne doo I care how rude be my invention,
  So it be scence what sorrow in me raigeth.

O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
  Our bodies be in living power maintained,
  Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention?

O Phisickes powres, which (some say) hath restrained
  Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,
  When once one is for Atropos disstained.
Great be Physiitons brags, but aid is beggerly,
  When rooted moisture failes, or groweth drie,
  They leave off all, and say, death comes too elderlie.
They are but words therefore that men do bay,
  Of any since God AEsculapius ceased.
Your dolefull tunes sucte Muses now apply.

Justice: justice is now (alas) oppressed:
  Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion:
  Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.
The Countesse of Pembroke's Shepheards bewail your uttermost confusion;
And see by this picture to you presented,
Death is our home, life is but a delusion.
For see alas, who is from you absent?
Absent? na, I say for ever banished
From such as were to dye for him contented?
Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished,
Shepherd of shepherds, whose well setted order
Private with welth, publike with quiet garnished.
While he did live, farre, farre was all disorder;
Example more prevailing then direction,
Far was homestiffe, and far was foe from border.
His life a law, his looke a full correction:
As in his health we healthfull were preferred,
So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.
His death our death. But ah, my Muse hath swarued,
From such deepe plaint as should such woes desiere,
Which be of us for ever hath desuered.
The stile of beanie hart can neuer sit
So high, as should make such a paine notorious:
Cease Muse therefore: thy dart o Death apply,
And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.
The publick grieve amplified. 1 Anaxius death-threatening to the Princesses. 3 Their resolutenes in it. 4 His returne, and stop. 5 Zelmanes braue challenge unto him 6 scorned by him. 7 His love to Pamela scorned by her. 8 His brothers braue loves have as meane success.

He general confort of all such numbers mourning, perfourmed so the naturall times of sorrow; that euen to them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief taught them grieue; hauing before their compassionate sense so passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honored by great value, made of inestimable value, by the noble vsing of it, to lye there languishing, vnder the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the discomfortabienes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (fauing such as were appointed) not suffred to goe further, then was such an vniversal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all receaued but one blow.

Which so mowed Anaxius to consider the losse of his friend, that (his minde after to reuenge, then tendernesse) he presently giuing order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and vnuisited, till his returne from Coucying Helen, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this curteous message: that at his returne, with
with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and lend them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought vnto the sisters, as they sate at that time together with Zelmae, conferring how to carrie themselves, having heard of the death of Amphialus. And as no expectation of death is so painfull, as where the resolution is hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remove, yet move somewhat the constancy of their minds, which were so unconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent Pamela had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most deereely she loued) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearie of vexing vs: but what? A shipp is not counted strong for byding one storme: It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the last sounde: and let vs make that proffite of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely said Philoclea, deare sister, I was so beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse bredde that strength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But euen in the darkenesse of that horroure, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amisse, that see Pamela's steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my Schoole-Mistres might like, to see me say my lesson truely. Were that a life, my Philoclea! said Pamela. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worste face: for at the worste it is but
but a bug-bearer. Ioy is it to me to see you so well resolv'd, and since the world will not have vs, let it lose vs. Onely (with that she stay'd a little, and said) onely my Philoclea, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her ear) onely Musidorus, my shepheard, comes betwene me and death, and makes me think I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that Philoclea sigh'd also, saying no more, but looking upon Zelma:ne: who was walking vp & downe the chamber, haung heard this message from Anaxius, and haung in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her a-gaine into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with herself of the manner how to preuent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremity, where peremptorily death was threatned: and so stay'd they; haung yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togither. Pamela nobly, Philoclea sweetly, and Zelma:ne: sadly, and desperately none of them entertainig sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, neuer to awake.

But Anaxius came home, haung safely conducted 4 Helen: and safely he might wel do it: For though many of Basilius Knights would haue attempted something upon Anaxius, by that means to deliver the Ladies, yet Philanax, haung receiued his masters commadement, & knowing his word was giue, would not consent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by the was able to carie abroad his wouuds) did not know thereof, but was bringing forces, by force to deliver his Lady. So as Anaxius, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making cven
The Countesse of Pembroke

euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three together; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) dissuaded him: but his reverence stayed their persuasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatning climbing vp his throte, his eies first lighted vpon Pamela; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne maiestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a countersuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly loue, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

Which while it bred a pause in him, Zelme (who had ready in her mind both what and how to say) stept out vnto him, & with a resolute stayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, disdain, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. Araxius (said she) if Fame haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee euen before that vertue, and will make it the judge betwenee vs. And now I doo affirm, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou haft done, thou dost weakly, in seeking without daunger to renenge his death, whose life with daunger thou mightst perhaps haue preferued: thou doost cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to preuent the iust punishment, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father
ther, or any other could make, might lay upon thee; and dost most basely, in once presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office upon men, and in a just cause: beyond the degree of any vile word, in so unjust a cause, and upon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art unworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the company of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alledge other reasons, of wisdom, or justice, to proove my speech, because I know thou dost disdain to be tied to their rules: but even in thine owne virtue (whereof thou so much gloriest) I will make my trial: and therefore desire thee, by the death of one of vs two, to proove, or disprove these reproaches. Choose thee what arms thou likest, I onely demand, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty see the combat.

When Zelmane began her speech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had read in Pamela, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered into brauerie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor posseth her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat, he stood leaning back with his bodie and head, sometimes with bent brows looking upon the one side of her, sometimes of the other, beyonde maruell maruailing, that he, who had never heard such speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that maruell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother Zoilus, and said nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, smiled. But Zelmane finding his minde, Anaxius (said
(said she) perchance thou disdainedst to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bene trayned vp in martial matters, with so good successe, that I haue many times overcome better Knightes then thy selfe: and am well known to be equall in settes of armes, to the famous Pyrocles, who, slewe thy valiaunt Uncle, the Giant Euardes. The remembrance of his Uncle's death something netled him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Uncle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Fierc thousand such could not haue overcome Euardes, but by fallhood. But I fought him all ouer Asia, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, coming into this Countrie, I heard of my friends being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But whereas-uer the miserable boy fleue, heauen, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyest in thy throate (saide Zelnare) that boye, where euer he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dar's not thinke of, much lesse perfomme. But to pleae thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we love, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not devise to revenge thy selfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doo manfullie, doo it; other- wise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or
my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heauen, and earth, (that will reveale thy shame) that thou art the beggerliest daftardly villain, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me over-lieue them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not moue Antiochus, but that he onely said, Euill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolde with thee.

But (said he) for the death of these same (pointing to the Princesses) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to Pamela, and offering to take her by the chitt, And as for you, Minion (said he) ycelde but gently to my will, and you shall not only lieue, but liue so happily He would haue said further, who Pamela, displeased both with words, matter, and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said she) yet thou plaiesst worse thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy selfe, since my destiny is such, that at each moment my life & death stand in equall balance, I had rather haue thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride & anger, would faile haue cruelly revenged so bitter an answer, but alredy Cupid had begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that, vnused to a way of courtesie, and put out of his byas of pride, he hastily went away, grumbling to himselfe, betwene threatning & wishing; leaving his brothers with the: the elder of whom, Lycurgus, liked Philocele, & Zoilus would nedes loue Zelmame; or at least, entertain themselues with making the beleue so. Lycurgus more bragiard, & nere his brothers humor, began with setting foorth their bloud, their deeds, how many

they
The Countesse of Pembroke's

they had despised of most excellent women, how much they were bound to them, that would seek that of them? In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see, with what a witty ignorance she would not understand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be inuriions to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still vewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To which, Philocles shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller, and disdain. For though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be overcome: and that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But Zelmane had eye to his behavioyr, and set in her memorie, upon the score of Reveng[e, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by Zoilus; who leste full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.

CHAP. 27.

* Zelmanes persuasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius. * Anaxius his embassage to treate the marriage. * Basilius recourse to a none Oracle, and his negative thereon. * The flattering relation of his Mercurie. * The brothers course to resist force without, and use force within.

But
Vt when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceaued desires, and disdain, to be disdained) Zelmane (who with most assured quietnesse of judgement looked into their present estate) earnestly persuaded the two sisters, that to auoide the mischiefes of powde outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behauiour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worste case then they were, so it might bring forth unexpected relief. And why (said Pamela) shal we any longer flatter aduersity? Why should we delight to make our selues any longer balls to injurious Fortune, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse vs? Certainly, in mishap it may be some comforte to vs, that we are lighted in these fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie Zelmane (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) shoulde receaue onely hurte by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while vnder colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie
Ladie (said Zelma) what you say is true; and that truth may well make vp a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, do not barre your selfe thereof; for then would be the time to die nobly, when you can not liue nobly. Then so earnestly she persuaded with them both, to referre themselues to their fathers consent (in obtayning whereof they knewe some while would be spent) and by that meanes to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende Pamela yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and Philoclea yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicitcd in that little pleasing petition, Pamela forced her selfe to make answere to Anaxius, that if her father gaue his consent she would make her selfe believe, that such was the heauenly determination, since she had no meanes to awoide it. Anaxius (who was the most franke promiser to him selfe of successe) nothing doubted of Basiliius consent, but rather assured him selfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious seruaunt (whome he esteemed very wise, because he never found him but just of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to Basiliius, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to have his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selfe to have such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he list to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receaue Anaxius, who never before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not,
not, he would make him know, that the power of Anaxius was in every thing beyond his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His servant with smiling and caste-up looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speach: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the divine-ness thereof, and that being gratiously granted, he then doubted not by carrying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith Anaxius spake it, to persuade rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win Basilius to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heavens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. Anaxius grauelly allowed the probability of his conjecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should haue the bringing vp of his second sonne by Pamela.

The messenger with speede perfoumed his Lords commanndement to Basilius, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherin already he had found so floue success: though Philanax vehemently urged him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage injuries. But Basilius betwixt the feare of Anaxius might, the passió of his loue, & jealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the common course of me, to flie only the to deuo-tiô, whè they want resolutio: so detaining the messegier with delaiies, he deferred the directing of his course to the coußell of Apollo, which because himself at that time could
could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted Philanax: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason vnto him) wente with diligence to Delphos, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and havung performed the sacrifices usuall, the spirite that possesst the prophesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demand, but as it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainly to be understood, what he came for, and that he should return to Basilius, and will him to deny his daughters to Anaxius and his brothers, for that they were referued for such as were better beloved of the gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne vnto him lately and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe Philanax and Basilius fully agreed in the understanding of the former prophecie: withall, commaundung Philanax from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane-wisedome.

4. Philanax then finding that reason cannot shewe it selfe more reasonable, then to leaue reasoning in things above reason, returns to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence foorth dursite any more dissuade him, from that which he founde by the celestiall prouidence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the government as much as in so broken an estate by civill dissention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made vnaprochable, he lefte Basilius.
Arcadia. Lib. 3.

Basilius to bewail the absence of his daughters, and to bewail the imprisonment of Zelmane: yet wholly given holy to obey the Oracle, he gave a resolute negative unto the messenger of Anaxius, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good terms desiring him to shew him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seek the way of force, to deliver in noble force those Ladies unto him, and so should the injury have bene in Amphialus, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answer, yet having ever used to sugre any thing which his Master was to receaue, he tolde him, that when Basilius first understood his desires, he did overreach so farre all his most hopeful expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whom the heavens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principal counsellour to Delphos, who although he kepte the matter neuer so secreete, yet his diligence, inspired by Anaxius his privilidge over all worldly things, had founde out the secreete, which was, that he should not presume to marry his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demi-Gods, and yet much less he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde another wisedome to be aboue, that judged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his servauntes waiting for Basilius resolution, he and his brothers had courted
courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to have for their wives, he resolved now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gave spurrees to his running, and, vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselves, nor tendering it in others, they were headlong to make that euill conforte of loue and force, when Anaxius had worde, that from the Tower there were decribed some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gaue presente order to his seruauntes, and soildiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leaving none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that Mars-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely have awaked him.

CHAP. 28.

Zoilus the messenger, * and first offerer of force, * is forc'd to fly, and die. * Lycurgus pointed to kill, * is fought withal, * foiled, * & killed. * Anaxius the Revenger, with Pyrocles, the Punisher brave, and bravely combatted.

Vt while he was directing what he would have done, his yongest brother Zoilus, glad that he had the commisssion, went in the name of Anaxius, to tel the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and
and his brother Licurges, should have them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now grant them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perfwaded. Pamela made him answer, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had ever answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messenger underflad somthing from theselues, & not have her beleef bound to the report of their pardall servants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had ever a simple & true resolution, so against their unjuift force, God, they hoped, would either arme their lives, or take away their lives.

Wel Ladies (said he) I wil leave my brothers, who by & by wil come vnto you, to be their own embassadors, for my parte, I must now do my self service. And with that turning vp his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a paucen, he went toward Zelmana. But Zelmame (having had all this while of the messengers being with Basilius, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the passport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselves subjicet) still hoping that Musidorus would finde some means to deliver them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, perfwaded the to overpasse many insolent indignities of their proud futers, who thought it was a sufficient favour not to doo the vttermost injurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them; either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, she had beene beyonde herfelfe amazed: but that
yet held vp her wit, to attend the vtermost occasion, which euë then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for Zoilus smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something aduancing himselfe, Darling (fai'd he) let thy hart be full of joy, and let thy faye eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt haue Zoilus, who many haue lóged for; but none shall haue him, but Zelmane. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too litlle for them. And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (fai'd she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dillemble with you, my natuuite being cast by one that neuer failed in any of his prognostications, I haue bene assured, that I should neuer be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so his favor, I must onely desire that I may perfoime a vow which I made among my countriwomen, the famous Amazons, that I would neuer marrie none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therefore, before I make mine own desire serviceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selfe perjured to my selfe. But Zoilus (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knighthood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in Zelmane then Disdaine became wisdome, & Anger gaue occasion. For abiding no longer aboad in the
the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised Pyrocles, being farre fuller of strong nimbleness, tripped up his feete, so that he fell down at hers. And with all (meaning to pursue what she had begun) pulled out his sword, which he wore about him: but before she could strike him withall, he got vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethren, preparing themselves to come downe to their mistresses. But the followed at his hecles, & eue as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow vp the waist, that she almost cut him a sunder: once, she sundred his foule from his body, feeding it to Proserpina, an angry Goddess against rauishers.

But Anaxius, being before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite the wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorrow, looking with a wofull eye upon his brother Lycurgus, Brother said he, chastise this vile creature, while I go down, & take order lest further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise the yet he conceived. But finding the only strong in patience, he went & lockt a great iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceal the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other annoyance, and the went vp to receive some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of Zelmane.

But Zelmane no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reaso assured her she was to expect renouge, but that she kept to a target, as one that well knew the first marke of value to be defence. And the accepting the opportune of Anaxius going away, she waited not the pleasure of
of Lycurgus, but without any words (which she even thought vaine, where resolution tooke the place of perswa-
dion) gaue her owne harte the contentment to be the af-
failer. Lycurgus, who was in the dispositio of his nature
hazardouse, & by the luckie passing through many dan-
gers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her,
rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from seare, that
his assurednesse disdain'd to hope. But whiche her sword
made demonstrations above all flattery of arguments, &
that he found she prest so vpon him, as shew'd that her
courage sprang not from blind despair, but was garded
both with cunning & strength; self-loue the firft in him
divided it selfe from vaine-glory, & made him find that the
world of worthiness had not his whole globe compriz'd
in his brest, but that it was necessary to haue strong resis-
tance against so strong a faining. And so betweene the, for
a few blowes, Mars himselfe might haue bin delighted to
looke on. But Zelmahe, who knew that in her case, slow-
nesse of victory was little better the ruine, with the bel-
lowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a
maigne blow at her head, she warded it with the shield,
but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces,
while it protected her, & withall she ran in to him, and
thrusting at his brest, which he put by with his target, as
he was lifting vp his sword to strike again, she let fall the
piece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his
sword of the inside of the pomel, with nimble & strong
fleight, she had gotte his sword out of his hand before
his fench could couey to his imaginatió, what was to be
doubted. And having now two swords against one
shield, meaning not foolishly to be vngratefull to good
fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being
vnweapned, then with the suddainnes therof, she gaue
him
him such a wound vpó his head, in despite of the shield's over-weak resistâce, that withal he fel to the ground, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But seing Zel-mane ready to conclude her victory in his death, bowing vp his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten al pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours: Whereof you shall want the best witnes, if you kil me. As you haue také fró men the glory of māhood, returne so now againe to your owne sex, for mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no small services, for I will undertake to make my brother obey all your com-mâdements: Grant life I beseech you, for your own ho-nor, and for the persons fake that you loue best.

Zelmane reprefa while her great hart, either disdaining to be cruell, or pitiful, & therfore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, begâ to be an Orator vnto her of compaßió, whè she saw, as he lifted vp his armes with a suppliant grace, about one of the, unhappily, tied a garter with a Jewell, which giue to Pyrocles by his aunt of Theffalia, & greatly esteemed by him) he had prefetèd to Philocles, & with inward rage promising extream hâr-tred, had seene Lycurgus with a proud force, & not with out some hurt vnto her, pull away fró Philocles, because at entreatie she would not giue it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the injurys which Philocles had of him suffred, & that remembrance feeding vpó wrath, trod down al cóceits of mercy. And therfore saying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is Philocles that feds thee this toke for thy loue. With that she made her sword drink the blood of his hart, though he wresting his body, & with a countenance prepared to excuse, wold fain haue delayed the receining of deaths embassadors. But neither that staied Zelmanes hand, nor yet Anaxius criè
cry unto her, who having made fast the Iron gate, even then came to the top of the stairs, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at Zelmanes mercy. Therefore crying, promising, and threatening to her to hold her hand: the last groan of his brother was the onely answere he could get to his unrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine haue drawne tears, which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine haue spoken, but that Difdaine sealed vp his lippes; but in his hart he blasphemed heauen, that it could haue such a power ouer him; no leffe ashamed of the victorie he should haue of her, then of his brothers overthrow: and no more spited, that it was yet vn-reuenged, then that the reuenge should be no greater, then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speech, but such a groaning cry, as often is the language of sorrowfull anger, he came running at Zelmane, vfe of fighting then serving in steed of patient consideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing upon Zelmane in such a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that euer she had fought, she had no more need of quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature then liuing, as he did fully answere that stature in greatness of might, so did he exceed both in greatness of courage, which with a countenance formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible fiercenes, was able to haue carried feare to any mind, that was not priuie to it selfe of a true & constant worthines. But Pyrocles, whose soule might well be separated from his body, but neuer alienated from the remembraing what was comely, if at the first he
he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his ad
erarie, whom once before he had something tried, &
now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie:
yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, ra
ther strengthening, then weakening his vertue by that
wrestling, like wine, growing the stronger by being mo
uced. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in
hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat,
as might have demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole
armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there,
where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did
whette, as much as glorie. There was strength against
nimbleness; rage, against resolution; fury, against vertue;
confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse:
love, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of reju
ging the injurie of his brothers slaughter, to Anaxius,
being like Philocles captivity to Pyrocles. Who had seen
the one, would have thought nothing could have resi
sted; who had marked the other, would have mar
veiled that the other had so long resisted. But like
two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry
worldes of shippes, and men upon them, with such
swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them:
yet meeting one another, with mingling their warric
forces, and strugling together, it is long to say whether
streame gets the victorie: So betwene then, if Pallas
had bene there, she could scarcely have tolde, whether
she had nurced better in the scates of armes. The Irish
greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish,
against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elephat,
might be models, & but models of this cobat. Anaxius
was better armed defensuely: for (beside a strong caske
braue-
bruely couered, wherwith he couerd his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as Achilles shewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that body was couered. But Pyrocles, utterly unarm'd for defence, to offend had the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diversely furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For Anaxius most by warding, and Pyrocles oftnest by auoyding, resiisted the adueraries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motio custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene fellow Counsellers, and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to preuent it. So as their strengt fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complains of any losse of bloud.

CHAP. 29.

*The Combattants first breathing, thenencounter, and
then in the beginning of dagcr. What is it (said the) *Anaxius, that thou so deeply mulest on? Dooth thy brothers example make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy coming punishment? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, enjoying my glory, hath brought me to such a wayarde case, that neither thy death can be a revenge, nor thy overthrow a victorie. Thou dost well indeede (saide Zehmone) to impute thy case to the heauenly prouidence, which will haue thy pride find it selfe (euen in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake se, which thou most contemnest.

But then, hauing sufficiently rested themselves, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the first and second leape, doo but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and aerie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellencie exercise. For in this pausing, each had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the aduantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselves; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the v sing of it. *Anaxius ofteu v sed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him vnto it. Pyrocles, of a more fine, and deliuer strength, watching his time when to give fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he shunned any harme *Anaxius could do to him: so would he soon haue made an end of *Anaxius, if he had not fou’d him a ma of wor...
The Countesse of Pembroke's

wonderful, & almost matchlesse excellency in matters of
annes. Pyrocles vled diuers saynings, to bring Anaxius
on, into some inconuenience. But Anaxius keeping a
sound maner of fighting, neuer offered, but seeing faire
cause, & then followed it with wel-gouerned violence.
Thus spent they a great tyme, striving to doo, and with
striving to doo, wearying themselves, more then with
the very doing. Anaxius finding Zelmane so neere vnto
him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitt-
ing all his strenght together, at that time mainly toy-
ned at her face. But Zelmane strongly putting it by with
her right handes sword, comming in with her left foote,
and hand would haue giuen him a sharpe visitation
to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away.
Whereat ashamed, (as haueing neuer done so much be-
fore in his life)